ANCESTRY OF SARAH JANE AVERILL

by

Norma J. Hansen Zaniewski

THIS LITTLE BOOKLET IS LOVINGLY

DEDICATED TO THE MEMORY

OF

WILLIAM WESLEY WHITE

(January 1, 1869 - December 23, 1963)

Beloved Son of

SARAH JANE R. AVERILL

AVERILL FAMILY

by Norma Hansen Zaniewski

Averill
Family

Year, ship, Place arrived

52 Philo AVERILL
20 Mar 1768
New Preston-Kent, Litchfield CT
16 Apr 1808 (?Greenfield)
Saratoga Co, NY
22 Oct 1844

104 (Capt.)(Deac)Moses AVERILL
(Rep CT State Legis.-Rev.War)
6 Mar 1722/3
Preston, New London Co, CT
ca 1748/9 New Milford CT
22 Jan 1784
Washington, Litchfield Co.,CT

208 Isaac AVERILL
10 Apr 1660
Topsfield, Essex, MA
16 May 1709 Rehoboth (now
East Providence) Bristol MA
after 1744
New Preston -Kent, Litchfield,CT

209 Esther WALKER
21 Dec 1688
Rehoboth, Bristol, MA
after 1749
New Preston-Kent, Litchfield, CT

416 William AVERILL, Jr.
ca 1631
England
31 Jul 1661
Ipswich-Chebacco MA Bay Col.
23 Apr 1691
Topsfield, Essex, MA

417 Hannah JACKSON
ca 1640
Ipswich-Chebacco MA Bay Col.
30 Jun 1706
Topsfield, Essex MA (at home
of son John)

418 Philip WALKER, Jr.
Mar 1661
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony
31 Dec 1687
Rehoboth, Bristol Co., MA
17 Feb 1739/40
Rehoboth, Bristol, MA
(now East Providence)

419 Mary BOWEN
3 Oct 1666
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony
8 May 1694 (age 28-epidemic)
Rehoboth, Bristol MA
(now East Providence)

832 William AVERILL, Sr. bef.1637* Ipswich
ca 1595?
26 Nov 1617 Chipping Norton, Oxford
bef 29 Mar 1653
Ipswich Chebacco Parish, MA Bay

833 Abigail HYNTON (Hinton)
ca 1600
Oxfordshire, England?
Feb? 1655
Ipswich Chebacco Parish, MA Bay

834 John JACKSON ? 1635* "Abigail" Ipswich
ca 1610
??St. Mary's Whitechapel, London?
ca 163 London, England?
1648
Ipswich MA Bay Colony

835 Catherine ________
ca 1612
2 Jan 1671 (remarried)
Ipswich 1648 Wm White

836 (Deacon) Philip WALKER, Sr.
b 1625
? London, England
ca 1654 Dedham, Norfolk, MA Bay Col
bur-21 Aug 1679
"Seekonk" (Rehoboth) Plymouth Col.

837 Jane (or Joanne) METCALFE
24 Mar 1632
St. Edmondsbury, Norfolk, England
"Seekonk" (Rehoboth) Plymouth Col.

838 Richard BOWEN
b 16-- (False tradition)
(Swansea, Glamorganshire, Wales ??)
4 Mar 1656 Rehoboth
after 1675
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony
(Now E Providence RI)

839 Esther SUTTON
ca 1626
Norfolk, England
1675
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

840 William COGSWELL, Sr.
Mar 1619

1664 AVERILL
England

1665

1666 HINTON

1667

1668 JACKSON

1669

1670

1671

1672 WALKER
b 15--
prob.England,poss Scotland
ca 1617
England
ca 1630?
England

1673 "Widow Walker" ca 1643* Rehoboth
(possibly Molly Browne)
b ca 159-
England?
ca 1617
England?
ca 1650?
"Seekonk" Plymouth Colony

1674 Michael METCALFE 1637* "John & Dorothy" Dedham
~~17 Jun 1586~~ 1590
Tatterford, Norfolk, England
13 Oct 1616
Waynham (near Norwich) Norfolk
24 Dec 1664
Dedham, Mass. Bay Colony

1675 Sarah ELLWYN
17 Jun 1598
Heigham, Norfolk, England
30 Nov 1644
Dedham, Mass. Bay Colony

1676 Richard BOWEN 1640* Rehoboth
b 1600
Wales
before 1622
Wales
1 Feb 1674/5
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

1677 Ann (?BORN)
ca 1600
before 1674
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

1678 John SUTTON 1638* "Diligent" Hingham
ca 1595
Attleborough, Norfolk, England
before 1621
Norfolk, England
1672
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

1679 Julian ________
ca 1600?
Norfolk, England
4 June 1678
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

1680 John COGSWELL 1635* "Angel Gabriel" shipwrecked-Maine
Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire, Eng

3328 AVERILL
b 15-
d
3329

3330

3331

3332 HINTON

3333

3334

3335

3336 JACKSON

3337

3338

3339 NOTE →
means line
has been traced
back several more
generations in
England

3340

3341

3342

3343

3344 WALKER

3345

3346 ?BROWNE?

3347

3348 (Rev.) Leonard METCALF →
b ~~1545~~ Apperside,No.Riding,Yorksh::
1547 (in Wensleydale)
d 22 Sep 1616 Tatterford (estate
in West Barsham, Norfolk

3349 Amy________
b 15--
d 22 Dec 1602 Tatterford, Nfk.Eng.

3350 Thomas ELLWYN →
b 1566
m 1591
d 1648 Heigham, Norfolk, England

3351 Elizabeth BENSLYE
b 15--
d 1605 Heigham, Norfolk, England

3352 ~~Thomas~~ BOWEN
NOT

3353 ~~Eleanor GRIFFITH~~
as once claimed

3354 ?BORN

3355

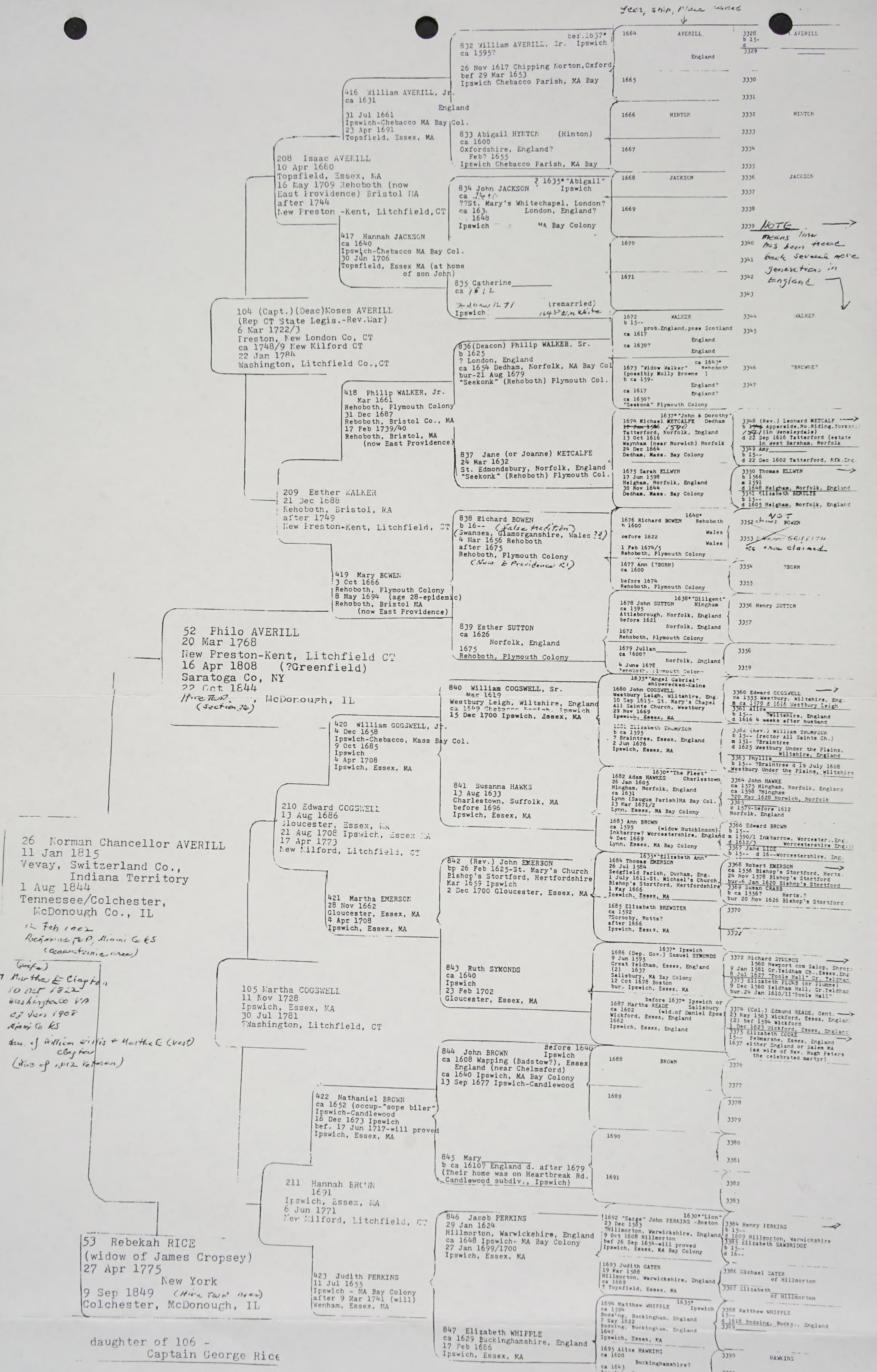
3356 Henry SUTTON

3357

3358

3359

3360 Edward COGSWELL →



Year, ship, Place arrived

26 Norman Chancellor AVERILL
11 Jan 1815
Vevay, Switzerland Co.,
Indiana Territory
1 Aug 1844
Tennessee/Colchester,
McDonough Co., IL
12 Feb 1902
Richmond TWP, Miami Co KS
(Osawatomie area)

(wife)
27 Martha E Clayton
10 Oct 1822
Washington Co VA
03 Jan 1908
Miami Co KS
dau. of William Willis + Martha E (Vest) Clayton
(dau of 1812 veteran)

52 Philo AVERILL
20 Mar 1768
New Preston-Kent, Litchfield CT
16 Apr 1808 (?Greenfield)
Saratoga Co, NY
22 Oct 1844
Hire TWP, McDonough, IL
(section 32)

53 Rebekah RICE
(widow of James Cropsey)
27 Apr 1775
New York
9 Sep 1849 (Hire TWP area)
Colchester, McDonough, IL

daughter of 106 -
Captain George Rice

104 (Capt.)(Deac)Moses AVERILL
(Rep CT State Legis.-Rev.War)
6 Mar 1722/3
Preston, New London Co, CT
ca 1748/9 New Milford CT
22 Jan 1784
Washington, Litchfield Co.,CT

105 Martha COGSWELL
11 Nov 1728
Ipswich, Essex, MA
30 Jul 1781
?Washington, Litchfield, CT

208 Isaac AVERILL
10 Apr 1660
Topsfield, Essex, MA
16 May 1709 Rehoboth (now East Providence) Bristol MA
after 1744
New Preston -Kent, Litchfield,CT

209 Esther WALKER
21 Dec 1688
Rehoboth, Bristol, MA
after 1749
New Preston-Kent, Litchfield, CT

210 Edward COGSWELL
13 Aug 1686
Gloucester, Essex, MA
21 Aug 1708 Ipswich, Essex MA
17 Apr 1773
New Milford, Litchfield, CT

211 Hannah BROWN
1691
Ipswich, Essex, MA
6 Jun 1771
New Milford, Litchfield, CT

416 William AVERILL, Jr.
ca 1631
England
31 Jul 1661
Ipswich-Chebacco MA Bay Col.
23 Apr 1691
Topsfield, Essex, MA

417 Hannah JACKSON
ca 1640
Ipswich-Chebacco MA Bay Col.
30 Jun 1706
Topsfield, Essex MA (at home of son John)

418 Philip WALKER, Jr.
Mar 1661
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony
31 Dec 1687
Reboboth, Bristol Co., MA
17 Feb 1739/40
Rehoboth, Bristol, MA
(now East Providence)

419 Mary BOWEN
3 Oct 1666
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony
8 May 1694 (age 28-epidemic)
Rehoboth, Bristol MA
(now East Providence)

420 William COGSWELL, Jr.
4 Dec 1658
Ipswich-Chebacco, Mass Bay Col.
9 Oct 1685
Ipswich
4 Apr 1708
Ipswich, Essex, MA

421 Martha EMERSON
28 Nov 1662
Gloucester, Essex, MA
4 Apr 1708
Ipswich, Essex, MA

422 Nathaniel BROWN
ca 1652 (occup-"sope biler")
Ipswich-Candlewood
16 Dec 1673 Ipswich
bef. 17 Jun 1717-will proved
Ipswich, Essex, MA

423 Judith PERKINS
11 Jul 1655
Ipswich - MA Bay Colony
after 9 Mar 1741 (will)
Wenham, Essex, MA

bef.1637*
832 William AVERILL, Sr. Ipswich
ca 1595?
26 Nov 1617 Chipping Norton,Oxford
bef 29 Mar 1653
Ipswich Chebacco Parish, MA Bay

833 Abigail HYNTON (Hinton)
ca 1600
Oxfordshire, England?
Feb? 1655
Ipswich Chebacco Parish, MA Bay

? 1635* "Abigail"
834 John JACKSON Ipswich
ca 1610
??St. Mary's Whitechapel, London?
ca 163 London, England?
1648
Ipswich MA Bay Colony

835 Catherine_________
ca 1612
2 Jun 1671 (remarried) 1648 Wm. White
Ipswich

836(Deacon) Philip WALKER, Sr.
b 1625
? London, England
ca 1654 Dedham, Norfolk, MA Bay Col
bur-21 Aug 1679
"Seekonk" (Rehoboth) Plymouth Col.

837 Jane (or Joanne) METCALFE
24 Mar 1632
St. Edmondsbury, Norfolk, England
"Seekonk" (Rehoboth) Plymouth Col.

838 Richard BOWEN
b 16-- (False tradition)
(Swansea, Glamorganshire, Wales ??)
4 Mar 1656 Rehoboth
after 1675
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony
(Now E Providence RI)

839 Esther SUTTON
ca 1626
Norfolk, England
1675
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

840 William COGSWELL, Sr.
Mar 1619
Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire, England
ca 1649 Chebacco Parish, Ipswich
15 Dec 1700 Ipswich, Essex, MA

841 Susanna HAWKS
13 Aug 1633
Charlestown, Suffolk, MA
before 1696
Ipswich, Essex, MA

842 (Rev.) John EMERSON
bp 26 Feb 1625-St. Mary's Church
Bishop's Stortford, Hertfordshire
Mar 1659 Ipswich
2 Dec 1700 Gloucester, Essex, MA

843 Ruth SYMONDS
ca 1640
Ipswich
23 Feb 1702
Gloucester, Essex, MA

Before 1640
844 John BROWN Ipswich
ca 1608 Wapping (Badstow?), Essex
England (near Chelmsford)
ca 1640 Ipswich, MA Bay Colony
13 Sep 1677 Ipswich-Candlewood

845 Mary_________
b ca 1610? England d. after 1679
(Their home was on Heartbreak Rd. Candlewood subdiv., Ipswich)

846 Jacob PERKINS
29 Jan 1624
Hillmorton, Warwickshire, England
ca 1648 Ipswich- MA Bay Colony
27 Jan 1699/1700
Ipswich, Essex, MA

847 Elizabeth WHIPPLE
ca 1629 Buckinghamshire, England
17 Feb 1686
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1664 AVERILL
England

1665

1666 HINTON

1667

1668 JACKSON

1669

1670

1671

1672 WALKER
b 15--
prob.England,poss Scotland
ca 1617
England
ca 1630?
England

ca 1643*
1673 "Widow Walker" Rehoboth
(possibly Molly Browne)
b ca 159-
England?
ca 1617
England?
ca 1650?
"Seekonk" Plymouth Colony

1637* "John & Dorothy"
1674 Michael METCALFE Dedham
~~17 Jun 1586~~ 1590
Tatterford, Norfolk, England
13 Oct 1616
Waynham (near Norwich) Norfolk
24 Dec 1664
Dedham, Mass. Bay Colony

1675 Sarah ELLWYN
17 Jun 1598
Heigham, Norfolk, England
30 Nov 1644
Dedham, Mass. Bay Colony

1640*
1676 Richard BOWEN Rehoboth
b 1600
Wales
before 1622
Wales
1 Feb 1674/5
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

1677 Ann (?BORN)
ca 1600
before 1674
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

1638* "Diligent"
1678 John SUTTON Hingham
ca 1595
Attleborough, Norfolk, England
before 1621
Norfolk, England
1672
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

1679 Julian_________
ca 1600?
Norfolk, England
4 June 1678
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

1635* "Angel Gabriel"
shipwrecked-Maine
1680 John COGSWELL
Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire, Eng.
10 Sep 1615- St. Mary's Chapel
All Saints Church, Westbury
29 Nov 1669
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1681 Elizabeth THOMPSON
b ca 1595
? Braintree, Essex, England
2 Jun 1676
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1630* "The Fleet"
1682 Adam HAWKES Charlestown
26 Jan 1605
Hingham, Norfolk, England
ca 1631
Lynn (Saugus Parish)MA Bay Col.
13 Mar 1671/2
Lynn, Essex, MA Bay Colony

1683 Ann BROWN
ca 1595 (widow Hutchinson)
Inkbarrow? Worcestershire, England
4 Dec 1669
Lynn, Essex, MA Bay Colony

1635* "Elizabeth Ann"
1684 Thomas EMERSON
26 Jul 1584
Sedgfield Parish, Durham, Eng.
1 July 1611-St. Michael's Church
Bishop's Stortford, Hertfordshire
1 May 1666
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1685 Elizabeth BREWSTER
ca 1592
?Scrooby, Notts?
after 1666
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1637* Ipswich
1686 (Dep. Gov.) Samuel SYMONDS
9 Jun 1595
Great Yeldham, Essex, England
(2) 1637
Salisbury, MA Bay Colony
12 Oct 1678 Boston
bur. Ipswich, Essex, MA

before 1637* Ipswich or Salisbury
1687 Martha READE
ca 1602 (wid.of Daniel Epos)
Wickford, Essex, England
1662
Ipswich, Essex, England

1688 BROWN

1689

1690

1691

1630* "Lion"
1692 "Sarge" John PERKINS -Boston
23 Dec 1583
?Hillmorton, Warwickshire, England
9 Oct 1608 Hillmorton
bef 26 Sep 1654-will proved
Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Colony

1693 Judith GATER
19 Mar 1588
Hillmorton, Warwickshire, England
ca 1669
? Topsfield, Essex, MA

1635*
1694 Matthew WHIPPLE Ipswich
ca 1594
Bodsing, Buckingham, England
7 May 1622
Bodsing, Buckingham, England
1647
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1695 Alice HAWKINS
ca 1600
Buckinghamshire?
ca 1643
Ipswich, Essex, MA

3328 AVERILL
b 15-
d
3329

3330

3331

3332 HINTON

3333

3334

3335

3336 JACKSON

3337

3338

3339 NOTE →
means line has been traced back several more generations in England

3340

3341

3342

3343

3344 WALKER

3345

3346 ?BROWNE?

3347

3348 (Rev.) Leonard METCALF →
b ~~1545~~ Apperside,No.Riding,Yorksh
1571 (in Wensleydale)
d 22 Sep 1616 Tatterford (estate in West Barsham, Norfolk

3349 Amy_________
b 15--
d 22 Dec 1602 Tatterford, Nfk.Eng.

3350 Thomas ELLWYN →
b 1566
m 1591
d 1648 Heigham, Norfolk, England

3351 Elizabeth BENSLYE
b 15--
d 1605 Heigham, Norfolk, England

3352 NOT [illegible] BOWEN

3353 ~~Ellen GRIFFITH~~ as once claimed

3354 ?BORN

3355

3356 Henry SUTTON

3357

3358

3359

3360 Edward COGSWELL →
ca 1555 Westbury, Wiltshire, Eng.
m ca 1579 d 1616 Westbury Leigh

3361 Alice_________
b 15-- ?Wiltshire, England
d 1616 4 weeks after husband

3362 (Rev.) William THOMPSON
b 15-- (rector All Saints Ch.)
m 151- ?Braintree
d 1625 Westbury Under the Plains, Wiltshire, England

3363 Phyllis_________
b 15-- ?Braintree d 19 July 1608
Westbury Under the Plains, Wiltshire

3364 John HAWKE
ca 1575 Hingham, Norfolk, England
ca 1598 ?Hingham
?20 May 1628 Norwich, Norfolk

3365
c 1579-before 1612
Norfolk, England

3366 Edward BROWN
b 15--
m 1590/1 Inkbarrow, Worcester., Eng.
d 1612/3 Worcestershire Eng.

3367 Jane LIDE
b 15-- d 16--Worcestershire, Eng.

3368 Robert EMERSON →
ca 1556 Bishop's Stortford, Herts.
24 Nov 1578 Bishop's Stortford
bur-6 Jan 1620 Bishop's Stortford

3369 Susan CRABB
b ca 1556? Herts.?
bur 20 Nov 1626 Bishop's Stortford

3370

3371

3372 Richard SYMONDS →
1560 Newport com Salop, Shrop
9 Jan 1581 Gr.Yeldham Ch.,Essex,Eng
8 Jul 1627 "Poole Hall" Gr. Yeldham

3373 Elizabeth PLUKE (or Plumme)
9 Dec 1560 Yeldham Hall, Gr.Yeldham
bur.24 Jan 1610/11 "Poole Hall"

3374 (Col.) Edmund READE, Gent. →
23 May 1563 Wickford, Essex, England
(2) bef 1594 Wickford
1 Dec 1623 Wickford, Essex, England

3375 Elizabeth COOKE →
15-- Pebmarshe, Essex, England
1637 either England or Salem MA
(as wife of Rev. Hugh Peters the celebrated martyr)

3376

3377

3378

3379

3380

3381

3382

3383

3384 Henry PERKINS →
b 15--
d 1609 Hillmorton, Warwickshire

3385 Elizabeth SAWBRIDGE
b 15--
d 16--

3386 Michael GATER
of Hillmorton

3387 Elizabeth_________
of Hillmorton

3388 Matthew WHIPPLE
15--
d 1618 Bodsing, Bucks., England

3389_________

3390 HAWKINS

3391

[illegible] , McDonough, IL
(Section 34)

26 Norman Chancellor AVERILL
11 Jan 1815
Vevay, Switzerland Co.,
Indiana Territory
1 Aug 1844
Tennessee/Colchester,
McDonough Co., IL
12 Feb 1902
Richmond Twp, Miami Co KS
(Osawatomie area)

(wife)
27 Martha E Clayton
10 Oct 1822
Washington Co VA
03 Jan 1908
Miami Co KS
dau. of William Willis + Martha E (Vest) Clayton
(Niece of 1812 Veteran)

105 Martha COGSWELL
11 Nov 1728
Ipswich, Essex, MA
30 Jul 1781
?Washington, Litchfield, CT

210 Edward COGSWELL
13 Aug 1686
Gloucester, Essex, MA
21 Aug 1708 Ipswich, Essex MA
17 Apr 1773
New Milford, Litchfield, CT

211 Hannah BROWN
1691
Ipswich, Essex, MA
6 Jun 1771
New Milford, Litchfield, CT

420 William COGSWELL, Jr.
4 Dec 1658
Ipswich-Chebacco, Mass Bay Col.
9 Oct 1685
Ipswich
4 Apr 1708
Ipswich, Essex, MA

421 Martha EMERSON
28 Nov 1662
Gloucester, Essex, MA
4 Apr 1708
Ipswich, Essex, MA

422 Nathaniel BROWN
ca 1652 (occup-"sope biler")
Ipswich-Candlewood
16 Dec 1673 Ipswich
bef. 17 Jun 1717-will proved
Ipswich, Essex, MA

Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire, England
ca 1649 Chebacco Parish, Ipswich
15 Dec 1700 Ipswich, Essex, MA

841 Susanna HAWKS
13 Aug 1633
Charlestown, Suffolk, MA
before 1696
Ipswich, Essex, MA

842 (Rev.) John EMERSON
bp 26 Feb 1625-St. Mary's Church
Bishop's Stortford, Hertfordshire
Mar 1659 Ipswich
2 Dec 1700 Gloucester, Essex, MA

843 Ruth SYMONDS
ca 1640
Ipswich
23 Feb 1702
Gloucester, Essex, MA

844 John BROWN Before 1640 Ipswich
ca 1608 Wapping (Badstow?), Essex
England (near Chelmsford)
ca 1640 Ipswich, MA Bay Colony
13 Sep 1677 Ipswich-Candlewood

845 Mary
b ca 1610? England d. after 1679
(Their home was on Heartbreak Rd.
Candlewood subdiv., Ipswich)

846 Jacob PERKINS
29 Jan 1624
Hillmorton, Warwickshire, England
ca 1648 Ipswich- MA Bay Colony

10 Sep 1615- St. Mary's Chapel
All Saints Church, Westbury
29 Nov 1669
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1681 Elizabeth THOMPSON
b ca 1595
? Braintree, Essex, England
2 Jun 1676
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1630* "The Fleet"
1682 Adam HAWKES Charlestown
26 Jan 1605
Hingham, Norfolk, England
ca 1631
Lynn (Saugus Parish)MA Bay Col.
13 Mar 1671/2
Lynn, Essex, MA Bay Colony

1683 Ann BROWN
ca 1595 (widow Hutchinson)
Inkbarrow? Worcestershire, England
4 Dec 1669
Lynn, Essex, MA Bay Colony

1635* "Elizabeth Ann"
1684 Thomas EMERSON
26 Jul 1584
Sedgfield Parish, Durham, Eng.
1 July 1611-St. Michael's Church
Bishop's Stortford, Hertfordshire
1 May 1666
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1685 Elizabeth BREWSTER
ca 1592
?Scrooby, Notts?
after 1666
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1637* Ipswich
1686 (Dep. Gov.) Samuel SYMONDS
9 Jun 1595
Great Yeldham, Essex, England
(2) 1637
Salisbury, MA Bay Colony
12 Oct 1678 Boston
bur. Ipswich, Essex, MA

before 1637* Ipswich or Salisbury
1687 Martha READE
ca 1602 (wid.of Daniel Epes)
Wickford, Essex, England
1662
Ipswich, Essex, England

1688 BROWN

1689

1690

1691

1630* "Lion"
1692 "Sarge" John PERKINS -Boston
23 Dec 1583
?Hillmorton, Warwickshire, England
9 Oct 1608 Hillmorton
bef 26 Sep 1654-will proved
Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Colony

m ca 1579 d 1616 Westbury Leigh

3361 Alice
b 15-- ?Wiltshire, England
d 1616 4 weeks after husband

3362 (Rev.) William THOMPSON
b 15-- (rector All Saints Ch.)
m 151- ?Braintree
d 1625 Westbury Under the Plains,
Wiltshire, England

3363 Phyllis
b 15-- ?Braintree d 19 July 1608
Westbury Under the Plains, Wiltshire

3364 John HAWKE
ca 1575 Hingham, Norfolk, England
ca 1598 ?Hingham
?20 May 1628 Norwich, Norfolk

3365
c 1579-before 1612
Norfolk, England

3366 Edward BROWN
b 15--
m 1590/1 Inkbarrow, Worcester., Eng.
d 1612/3 Worcestershire Eng.

3367 Jane LIDE
b 15-- d 16--Worcestershire, Eng.

3368 Robert EMERSON →
ca 1556 Bishop's Stortford, Herts.
24 Nov 1578 Bishop's Stortford
bur-6 Jan 1620 Bishop's Stortford

3369 Susan CRABB
b ca 1556? Herts.?
bur 20 Nov 1626 Bishop's Stortford

3370

3371

3372 Richard SYMONDS →
1560 Newport com Salop, Shrop.
9 Jan 1581 Gr.Yeldham Ch., Essex, Eng
8 Jul 1627 "Poole Hall" Gr. Yeldham

3373 Elizabeth PLUMB (or Plumme)
9 Dec 1560 Yeldham Hall, Gr.Yeldham
bur.24 Jan 1610/11 "Poole Hall"

3374 (Col.) Edmund READE, Gent. →
23 May 1563 Wickford, Essex, England
(2) bef 1594 Wickford
1 Dec 1623 Wickford, Essex, England

3375 Elizabeth COOKE →
15-- Pebmarshe, Essex, England
1637 either England or Salem MA
(as wife of Rev. Hugh Peters
the celebrated martyr)

3376

3377

3378

3379

3380

3381

3382

3383

3384 Henry PERKINS →
b 15--
d 1609 Hillmorton, Warwickshire

3385 Elizabeth SAWBRIDGE
b 15--
d 16--

Supplement

for insertion in the

"Averell-Averill-Avery Family"

The compiler of this genealogy is glad to announce the discovery of the marriage record of William Averell, or "Avery" (of Ipswich, Mass., in March, 1637) and Abigail "Hynton" (Hinton), at Chipping Norton, Oxfordshire, England, Nov. 26, 1618; also of the baptismal records in the same place of their six children. In 1634 William Averell was Bailiff of Chipping Norton, a position of some importance at that time, which was shortly before his migration to America. This gratifying information was sent from London, Eng., Dec. 30, 1921, and received in this country Jan., 1922. The results of the search which brought this to light are given herewith to the family.

As the previous search—made by a well known antiquarian of America—had failed to give the marriage record of William Averell and his wife Abigail (though it had yielded extensive Averell-Averill-Avery data), the compiler being in London the fall of 1913, when our genealogy was in press, decided to have some experienced English antiquarians and record agents look further for the marriage record of the said William and Abigail. This quest was then put in the hands of Phillimore & Co., Ltd., of London, Eng.; and their representative, Mr. Thomas M. Blagg, made the search with gratifying success—though interrupted for a long time by the Great War.

It will be noticed that the conclusion of our previous—though long experienced—American genealogist was at fault in thinking our William was the son of Nicholas and Dorcas Averell of Ashe, Kent (see pp. 51–52). Also the one clue which would have led him to the discovery of William's lineage, was by some chance not used—the nuncupative will of Phillipp Averell of Chipping Norton, Oxfordshire (see p. 28), in which mention is made of our William, and which he gave with other data. There were not only many Averells, or "Averys," in Oxfordshire at this time, but the adjoining county of Worcestershire had at Broadway many Averells or Averills who were also called Avery (see p. 32). That line has traditions (?) of a William Averill 1505, and other Averills in 1545 and 1566, preceding the earliest date of record in our now established line, which is 1577. Those may prove a clue for further research.

Clara A. Avery

46 Cedar St., Chicago, Ill.
December, 1922.

OXFORDSHIRE RECORDS

Averell (Averie) Wills and Administrations in the Consistory and Archdeaconry Courts of Oxford.

Averell (Averie) John, Chipping Norton, A. 10 Mar. 1577,
Ser. I; Vol. 8, p. 524.
" " Richard, Chipping Norton, A. 16 May 1584,
Ser. I; Vol. 10, p. 193.
" " James, Chipping Norton, C. 12 April 1602,
Ser. I; Vol. 14, p. 191.
" " Edward, Chipping Norton, C. 25 Sept. 1617,
Ser. II; Vol. 2, p. 371.
" " Judith, wid. Chipping Norton, C. 20 Feb. 1618,
Ser. II; Vol. 2, p. 417.
" " Phillip, bach. Chipping Norton, C. W. 1627,
" Inv. 15 Dec. 1627.
" 19 Jan. 1627. A.B. A 156.
" Inv. 7 Oct. 1628,
" conwayner, 16 Ap. 1629, A.B.A. p. 166.
" " Thomas, Chipping Norton, A. W. Inv. 5 Aug. 1639,
Ser. II, Vol. 8, p. 269

[No further entries after 1639.]

Extracts of the name Avery or Averell from the Chipping Norton (Oxon) Registers; Parish Church of St. Mary.

Baptisms

1619, Oct. 17, Abigall Averell dau. of William Averell
1621, Oct. 14, Mary Averell dau. of William Averell
1623, Sep. 28, Hanna Averell dau. of William Averell
1625, June 26, William Averill son of William Avoril
1630, Jan. 7, Thomas Averill, son of William Averill
1632, (-?) 11, John the son of William & Abigail Avoroll

Marriages

1602, May 6, Kellam Averye & Ales Prettie
1618, Nov. 26, William Averell & Abigall Hynton.

Burials

1618, Dec. 10, Edith Averill

Visitations of Oxford 1634. Harl Soc'y Vol. 5.

Among the Bailiffs of Chipping Norton is given the name of William Averell, 1634.

1577.

Abstract of the Will of John Averie of Chipping Norton, co. Oxford, dated 25 April 1577.

to be buried in the church of Chipping Norton. To the church Xs. To the poor of the town XXs.
to son Walter Averye (household utensils etc.) [See p. 31.]
to John Trevis a feather bed etc.
to Mathew Trevis Xiijs iiijd
William Trevis, Mathewe Trevis' son Xijd and all his children Xijd a piece.
to every one of John Trevis' children Xijd a piece
to William Trevis Xjs Xijd
To Philip Avery, Richard Averye and Edward Avery my brother William's sons XXs a piece
to Katherine Newman XXs
to my brother William Averie Vjs
to my sister Annes Crosley 40s
to Katherine Trevace my wife's black fryes(?)
Residue to George Averye my son (executor)
Overseers: Michael Chadwell, Edward Walford, William Avery, & Thomas Newman & William Trevis
Witnesses: Michael Chadwell, Edward Walford & Thomas Newman.

Proved 10 March 1577–8 Archd. Oxford. Ser. I; Vol. 8, p. 514.

1584.

Abstract of the Will of Richard Averell of Chipping Norton, co. Oxford, dated 28 February 26 Eliz. (1583).

to be buried in the church yard of Chipping Norton.
my goods to my wife to bring up my children.
Wife, executrix.
Witnesses John Lancaster, clerk. John Lewes & ors.

Proved 15 May 1584 by executrix, and commission issued to John Shaw.
Archd. Oxford, Series I, Vol. 10, f. 193.

1617.

Abstract of the Will of Edward Averie of Chipping Norton, co. Oxford, dated 28 April 1617.

In the name of God, Amen, the eight and twentith day of Aprill 1617. I Edward Averie of Chippingnorton in the Countie of Oxon weake in bodie but stronge in minde and of good and p(er)fect memorie thankes be to god doe—make this my last will and testament—I doe willinglie and with a free hart render and give againe into the handes of my Lord god and creator my spiritt w(hi)ch he of his fatherlie goodnesse gave unto me making me a lyvinge and reasonable creature nothinge doubtinge but that for his infinite mercies sett forth in the p(re)cious bloude of his derely beloved sonne—our onlie saviour and redeemer he will receave my soule

into his glorie and place it in the companie of the heavenlie Angells and blessed Saints—I give to John Averie my sonne one platter, to Willia(m) Averie my sonne one platter. To Thomas my sonne one platter. To Samuell my sonne one platter, to Edward my sonne one platter. And to Margarett my daughter one platter. All the rest of my goods & chattels moveables and unmoveables my dettes paid, my funerall discharged and my legacies herein bequeathed satisfied I give to Judith my wyffe whome I make my executor and I appoint my lovinge brothers-in-lawe Richard Berrie and Thomas Hiat my overseers.
Witnesses: Richard Berrie, Thomas Hiat, Richard Heidon.

Proved XXV September 1617.

Consistory of Oxford, Series II, Vol. II, f. 371–2.

1618.

Abstract of the Will of Judith Averell of Chipping Norton co. Oxford, widow, dated 20 October 1618.

to be buried in the churchyard of Chipping Norton
to my eldest (son) John Averell V £i
to Thomas Averell my son V £i
to Samuel Averell my son 10 £i
Which sums of money I appoint my son Edward Averell to pay to them their portions and for consideration hereof I do give him my house with appurtenances that John Coxe late dwelt in to him his heirs and assigns for ever, their portions to be paid within a year if my son be then 20 years of age or else when my son Edward is XX if I be not then alive. I give my son John more "the bedsteed w(hi)ch is in the house—w(i)th a Flocke bed and a Flock boulster, a fether boulster & paire of hempen sheets, a cov(er)let, a litle brasse potte, a posnet of potte brasse, a platter, and a pottenger." I give to Thomas my son "more a platter, a pottenger, two silver spoones, a litle kettell & a posnet" I give more to Samuel my son "the bedsteed in the shope chamber and the second best bee bedsteed standinge in the chamber over the p(ar)lour and the worst fether bed, a fether boulster, a flocke boulster, the best cov(er)let, two paire of sheetes, my second best brasse potte, my second best kettle, a posnet of pott brasse 2 silv(er) spoones 2 platters the table board I bought of Will(ia)m Higgons, a little kettle, three of the biggest coffers in the chamber ov(er) the p(ar)lor, a pewter candle sticke, the licor panne that his father used, three table napkines 2 joined stooles, the best cubboarde in the hall." To Edward my son "two bedsteeds in the chamber ov(er) the p(ar)lor, the best and third chest in the p(ar)lor and the coffer that was his father(s), the best Flockebed, a Flock bolster, a fether bolster, 2 paire of sheets, the second best coverlet, the third brasse pot, the thirde brass kettell, a posnet of potte brasse, a litle ketle and a litle candle stick, 2 platters, 2 silver spoones, the table board in the shoppe chamber, the brasse panne that was Thomas Carrecks, 3 table napkins, 2 joine stooles, the other cubboard in the hall."
to Margaret my daughter "my greene say Curteins w(i)th the frindge that belongeth to them, the vessell that wee call the Corsell, a gallon kettle and one of the best silver spoones and the ware that I leave unfould, my best gowne, my best peticoate, my best ap(er)ne, my best kercheffe, my best smocke, my second best gowne"
to Robert Berry my sisters son Vs.
to Thomas Berry his brother Vs.
to Sara their sister Xs, and "more to Thomas a cracked silver spoon."
to Alce Russell "a platter and a brason candlesticke.
to my sister Crosbee "a gowne, a petticoate" and to every one of her children Xijd
to my brother Phillippe Averell my husbands best doublet.
to the poor of the town Xs.
The residue of my goods to my son William whom I make executor.
Thomas Hiatt, Richard Berrye overseers & give them iijs iiijd a piece.
Samuel my son and Edward my son shall have 8 quarters of malt that is at Wm. Slatters to be divided equally.
to Samuel my son his fathers best cloak and to Edd. his other coat or jacket.
I give to each of them a "Dowghe Kever"
to Edward Averell my son a "Hobbert"
Judith Averell [her mark.]
Witnesses, Richard Berry, Thomas Hiat, ——Leidon, John Timson.

Proved 20 February 1618.

Consistory of Oxford, Series II, Vol. II, p. 417.

1602.

Abstract of the Will of James Averell of Chipping Norton co. Oxford shoemaker dated 24 November 1601.

my father Thomas Averell shall have the use of my goods in his possession paying all my debts &c.
father, Thomas (executor) shall beston the remainder amongst his younger children my brothers & sisters.
Witnesses, Thomas Hyat, Henry Baylie.

Proved 12 April 1602.

Consistory of Oxford. Series I, Vol. 14, p. 191

1628.

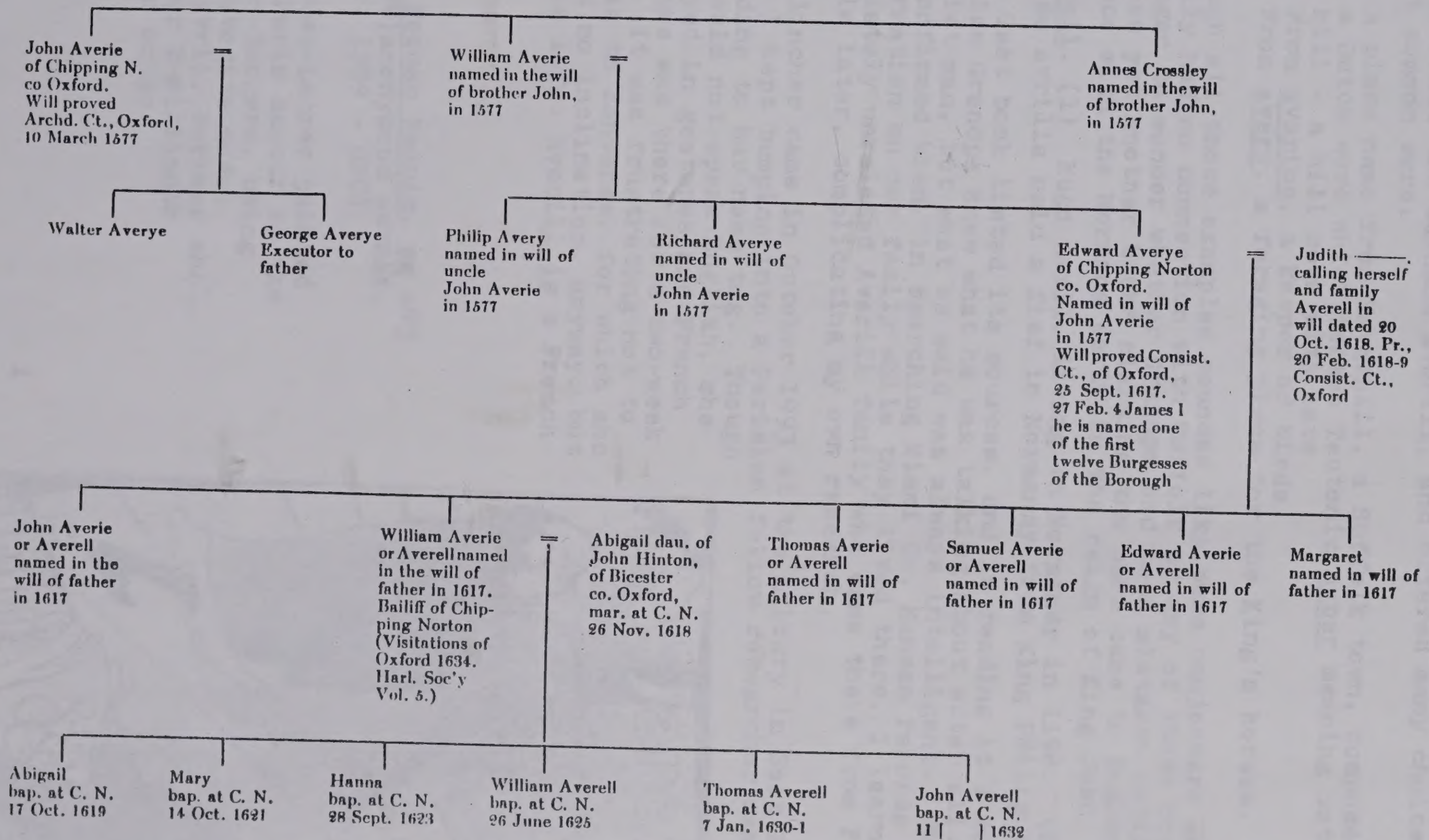
Nuncupative Will of Philip Averell of Chipping Norton co. Oxford.

that in the year 1627 Phillipp Averell of Chippingnorton Oxford being moved to make his last Will & Testament nuncupative . . said his mind and will was that his cousin [nephew] William Averell should have all his goods &c and also that he had given him a special charge to pay the debts of him the said Phillip Averell and to dispose the rest of his goods amongst the kinsfolk of the said William Averell.
Witnesses John Norgrove, Samuel Averell, Isabell Newman, Laurens Ellmes(?)

21 February 1628 Commission to William Averell
"nepote d fratre" of the said deceased.

P.C.C. 10 Ridley.

Pedigree of AVERELL alias AVERY of Chipping Norton co. Oxon.



John Averie
of Chipping N.
co Oxford.
Will proved
Archd. Ct., Oxford,
10 March 1577

=

William Averie
named in the will
of brother John,
in 1577

=

Annes Crossley
named in the will
of brother John,
in 1577

Walter Averye

George Averye
Executor to
father

Philip Avery
named in will of
uncle
John Averie
in 1577

Richard Averye
named in will of
uncle
John Averie
in 1577

Edward Averye
of Chipping Norton
co. Oxford.
Named in will of
John Averie
in 1577
Will proved Consist.
Ct., of Oxford,
25 Sept. 1617.
27 Feb. 4 James I
he is named one
of the first
twelve Burgesses
of the Borough

=

Judith ——.
calling herself
and family
Averell in
will dated 20
Oct. 1618. Pr.,
20 Feb. 1618-9
Consist. Ct.,
Oxford

John Averie
or Averell
named in the
will of father
in 1617

William Averie
or Averell named
in the will of
father in 1617.
Bailiff of Chipping Norton
(Visitations of
Oxford 1634.
Harl. Soc'y
Vol. 5.)

=

Abigail dau. of
John Hinton,
of Bicester
co. Oxford,
mar. at C. N.
26 Nov. 1618

Thomas Averie
or Averell
named in will of
father in 1617

Samuel Averie
or Averell
named in will of
father in 1617

Edward Averie
or Averell
named in will of
father in 1617

Margaret
named in will of
father in 1617

Abigail
bap. at C. N.
17 Oct. 1619

Mary
bap. at C. N.
14 Oct. 1621

Hanna
bap. at C. N.
28 Sept. 1623

William Averell
bap. at C. N.
26 June 1625

Thomas Averell
bap. at C. N.
7 Jan. 1630-1

John Averell
bap. at C. N.
11 [ ] 1632

THE AVERILL NAME

When I was little I asked Grandpa what kind of a name Averill was. He said he thought it was French. As a grownup I found some books about derivations and meanings of English surnames. They did not agree about the surname Averill, and offered many choices. The most common were:

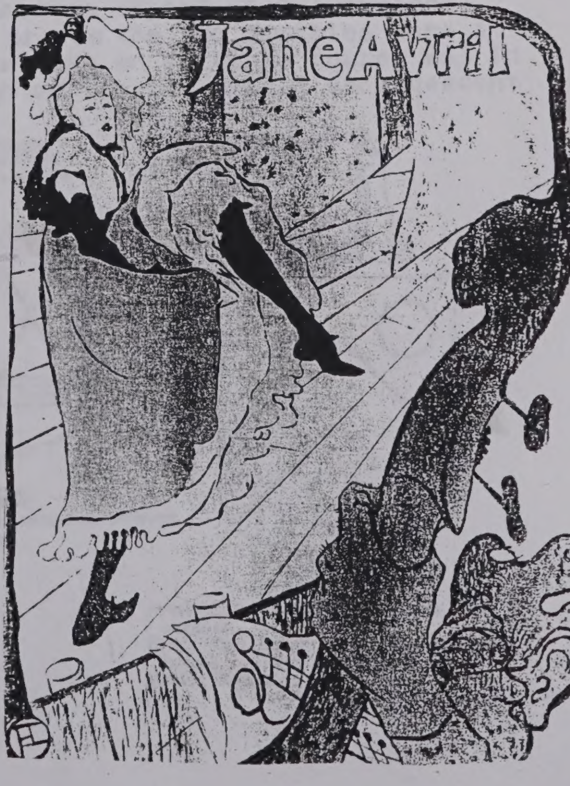
1. A place name from Haverhill, a Suffolk town, composed of hyver a Dutch word which became Teutonic huber meaning oats plus hill - a hill sown with oats
2. From avarius, a keeper of birds.
3. From avery, a foraging place for the King's horses.

Though all those examples sounded like pure conjecture and the family had no connection with Suffolk or any of those occupations, I began to wonder whether Grandpa had been mistaken until running across yet another book* claiming the name came to England from France with the Normans early in the reign of King John. It says:

Averell. (1) Hugo Avril, living in Normandy in 1198. (2) Guido de Avrilla held a fief in Normandy from King Philip Augustus.

This last book listed its sources, and in reading it I began to realize Grandpa knew what he was talking about after all. He was a quiet man, but what he said was always intelligent. This was sort of confirmed when, in searching Miami Co. Kansas records looking for information on our family while they lived there, I learned of a completely unrelated Averill family who came there from France a little later, complicating my own research.

The clincher came in October 1993 at the Library in Salt Lake City where I kept bumping into a Parisian fellow researcher named Averill. according to her name tag. Though she could not speak English, she conveyed in gestures and French that she was there for a two-week stay. It was frustrating not to be able to converse, for which she showed no inclination, anyway, but such is life. Averill is a French name.



Toulouse-Latrec painted this Paris dancer at the Folies-Bergere, using his favorite model, Jane Avril. Perhaps she was our 2-millionth cousin or so.

---

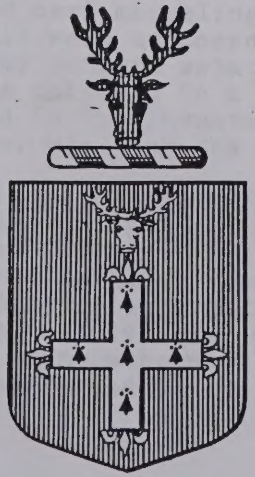
*The Norman People, pg 145 (1874)anonymous author, repr. 1989 - GPC)

THE AVERILL ARMS

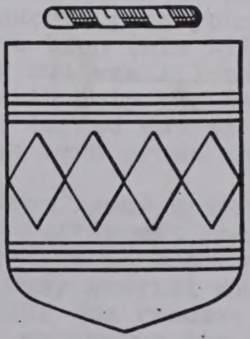
It was once customary to commence family histories with big spiels about some knight or ancient royal person supposed to have been ancestor of all of the name. In our case no such fancy progenitor has been identified, though coats of arms suggest he must have been a Norman who went to the Holy Land on one of the Crusades. Though well respected back in England, our William the Immigrant was not an elder son of a gentle family, and never used a coat of arms in America. The bulk of his modest estate had been disposed of before his death in 1653, probably to his seven children; yet in 1634, shortly before the family emigrated, visiting heralds had taken enough interest to report that he was a bailiff of the market town of Chipping Norton, Oxfordshire.

The office of bailiff back then was rather prestigious and of considerable responsibility, concerned with administering estates and other fiscal matters requiring knowledge of law and finance. Earlier visitations by the heralds had identified his grandfather William as one of the twelve chief burgesses of the town, a title inherited by William's father, Edward. Whether or not those men had arms, they were at least somehow related to nearby men in Broadway, Worcestershire, who did. Well-to-do Averill families were living there as early as the reign of King Edward I (1274-1307 AD) followed by a two-century gap in the records until 1505 when an earlier William Averill was living in Broadway--only about 15 miles from our family, and others of the name were there in 1545 and 1566--only eleven years before our proven ancestors show up in Chipping Norton.

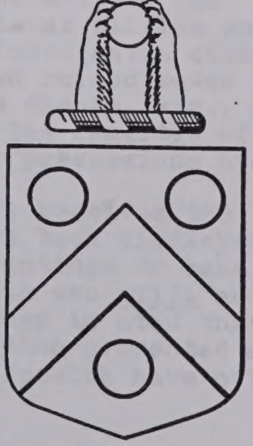
This presents your author with a slight dilemma, for the Worcestershire family used the gules (red) arms depicted below. The cover of this book shows azure arms, continuing an earlier tradition in books about our family--but those were actually used by a Gloucester branch, yet they were so similar that an expert on the subject, which I surely am not, would say it proves the two families were at one time related. Crosses on shields mean an original bearer was in the Crusades; and fleur-des-lis shown on the red shield show descent from French nobility.



AVERILL
Arms: Gules, a cross fleury ermine, in chief a buck's head of the field.
Crest: A buck's head cabossed as in the field.



AVERELL
Arms: Argent, four lozenges in fess between two bars jumelles gules.



AVERY
Arms: Gules, a chevron between three bezants or.
Crest: Two lions' gambs or, supporting a bezant.
Motto: Fidelis.

THE AVERILL FAMILY IN ENGLAND

Once again it must be stressed that this book is meant to supplement, not copy, information in the Averill Genealogy with regard to our particular line. But for reasons which will be stated below, there are certain beginning details which need to be emphasized.

Clara Avery's book about our family is one of the clearest, well-researched, thorough and interesting genealogies in print, even the more so when one considers that she wrote it back in an era when the average genealogy was semi-amateurish and full of speculation. But as she, herself, reported in 1922, there was a serious problem with the beginning. Creating a book of that caliber was very burdensome, causing her to concentrate on the numerous branches of the family on this side of the Atlantic. For the English roots, she hired others reputed to be well qualified, who came to the conclusion that the first William Averill was son of Nicholas and Dorcas Averell of Ashe, Kent, a person about twenty years younger than the real William. Not realizing the truth, she tailored the early part of her story to fit, and thus reached quite a few incorrect conclusions.

Clara's instincts eventually caused her to wonder whether something might have been amiss, especially after George Francis Dow wrote a short sketch for a 1900 issue of Essex Institutes magazine, speculating that perhaps the family came from Worcestershire. She mentioned that in her book. Eventually she decided to consult "experienced English antiquarians" and went to London for that purpose in 1913, when her book was already in press. World War I broke out very soon afterwards, delaying research for many years. By the time she received the report in January 1922, thousands of copies had been sold. She ordered that the results of the new research be inserted at the end of all subsequent copies, showing not only William and Abigail's marriage but the baptisms of six of their children, not in Kent, but in Chipping Norton, Oxfordshire, only about 15 or 20 miles from Broadway, Worcestershire, as Dow had surmised.

But the damage had already been done, for her well-written book had been an immediate success, and copied by many other writers who quoted her, marveling that such a poor young couple as William and Abigail were supposed to have been (his will mentioned seven children and "my outward estate being but small") could have raised seven little children in a house with only two beds, few dishes, etc., mentioned in the inventory, and turned out so well. The reality, of course, was that the children were grown and fewer possessions needed.

The corrected newer information seems never to have received the circulation it should have. Perhaps it should have been displayed at the front rather than at the back of subsequent printings to make it more noticeable. There are many Averill descendants who still accept the outdated information. You, the reader, must keep in mind that you are likely, even now, to encounter the old version presented as fact. Many otherwise excellent books about early Ipswich have not been corrected.

AVERILL FAMILY

As the years pass, ink slowly fades away and pages crumble and, sad to say, even pilfering goes on. Historians write in frustration about the disappearance of records which were examined several years before. An example was cited by a fine writer descended from William and Abigail's daughter Sarah (Averill) Wildes.* Determined to trace the family back further, in 1950 he visited the church in Chipping Norton and was courteously treated by the local parson, who showed him the ancient register. He saw for himself that the 16th century ink was so completely faded that the entries were illegible. Perhaps ancient court or manor rolls or bishops' transcripts still exist, but presumably he would have known about that.

Many pages in Clara's book mention early Averills in Europe (spelt variously). Page 31 lists death dates of several Broadway, Worcester, men: William 1506, Henry 1545, William 1545, William 1566, Henry 1584, Walter 1590, Thomas 1595, Henry 1611 and William 1613. To understand that those men were living close enough to Chipping Norton that they easily could have been part of the same family, one needs only to glance at the map shown here, taken from a modern atlas, showing that they lived about the same distance away as did our William's wife Abigail, who lived at Bicester before their marriage. It is dangerous to speculate, but in comparing those names to the short descendancy chart below, one might almost assume that the William who died in 1506 was probably grandfather of William (b) below, who was in turn grandfather of William the Emigrant, and that one of the other men was the missing number (a) in our chart.

Chipping Norton, a fair-sized English town, is about 20 miles NW of Oxford. St. Mary's Church there is a large, handsome, medieval structure. Our family worshipped at St. Mary's for many years before some of them came to America. In those days spelling was so flexible that one individual's name was often spelt several ways in the same document. Chipping Norton records show Averie, Averye, and Averell. (But heck, I have seen it written in seven different ways in Illinois records of the early 1800's.)

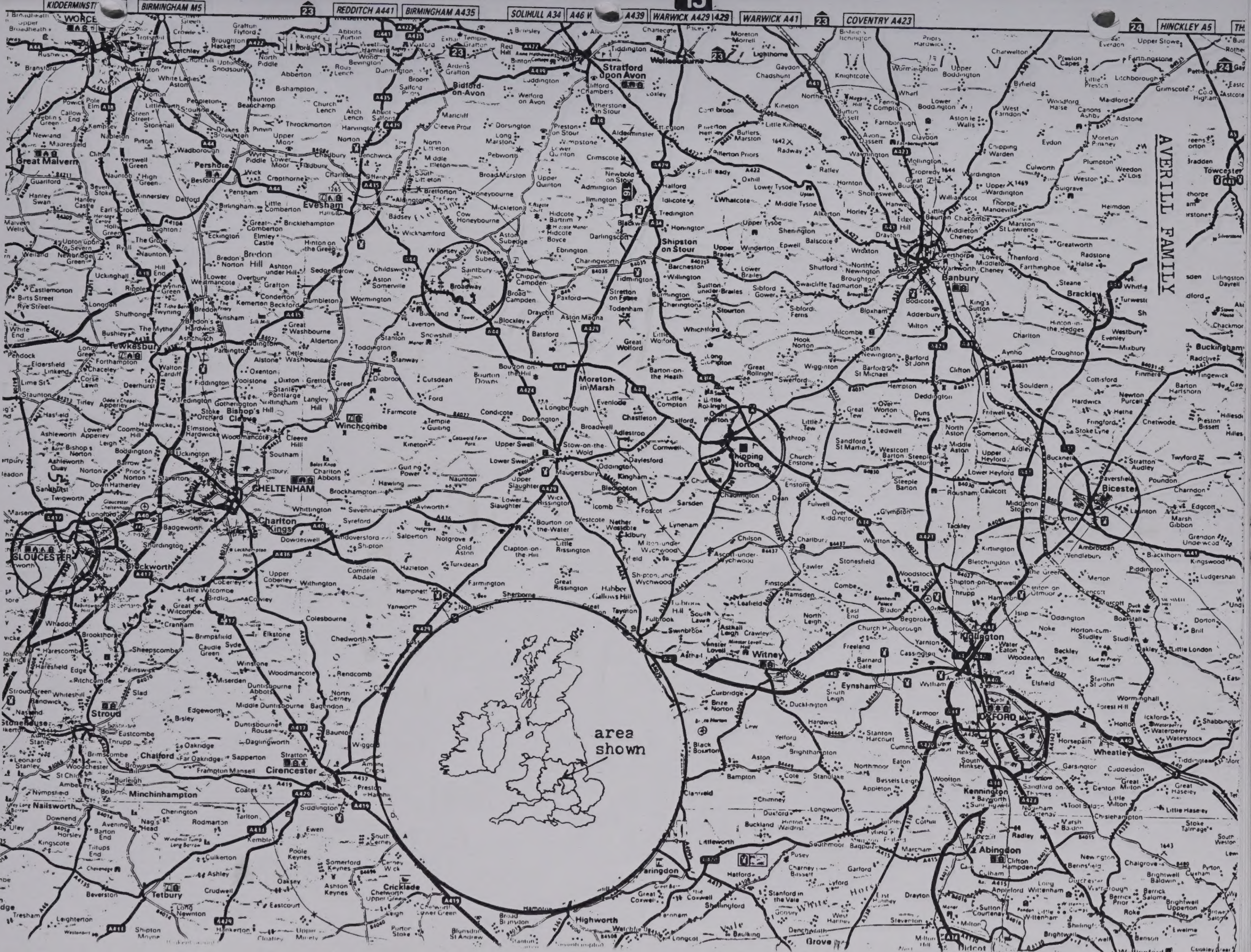
St. Mary's records do not show the name of ancestor _______(a) Averill. Perhaps he lived somewhere else, like Broadway, but three of his children were there before 1577. Will records show they were:
John, buried 27 July 1577
+William, see below
Annes, married to a Mr. Crosley or Crosby

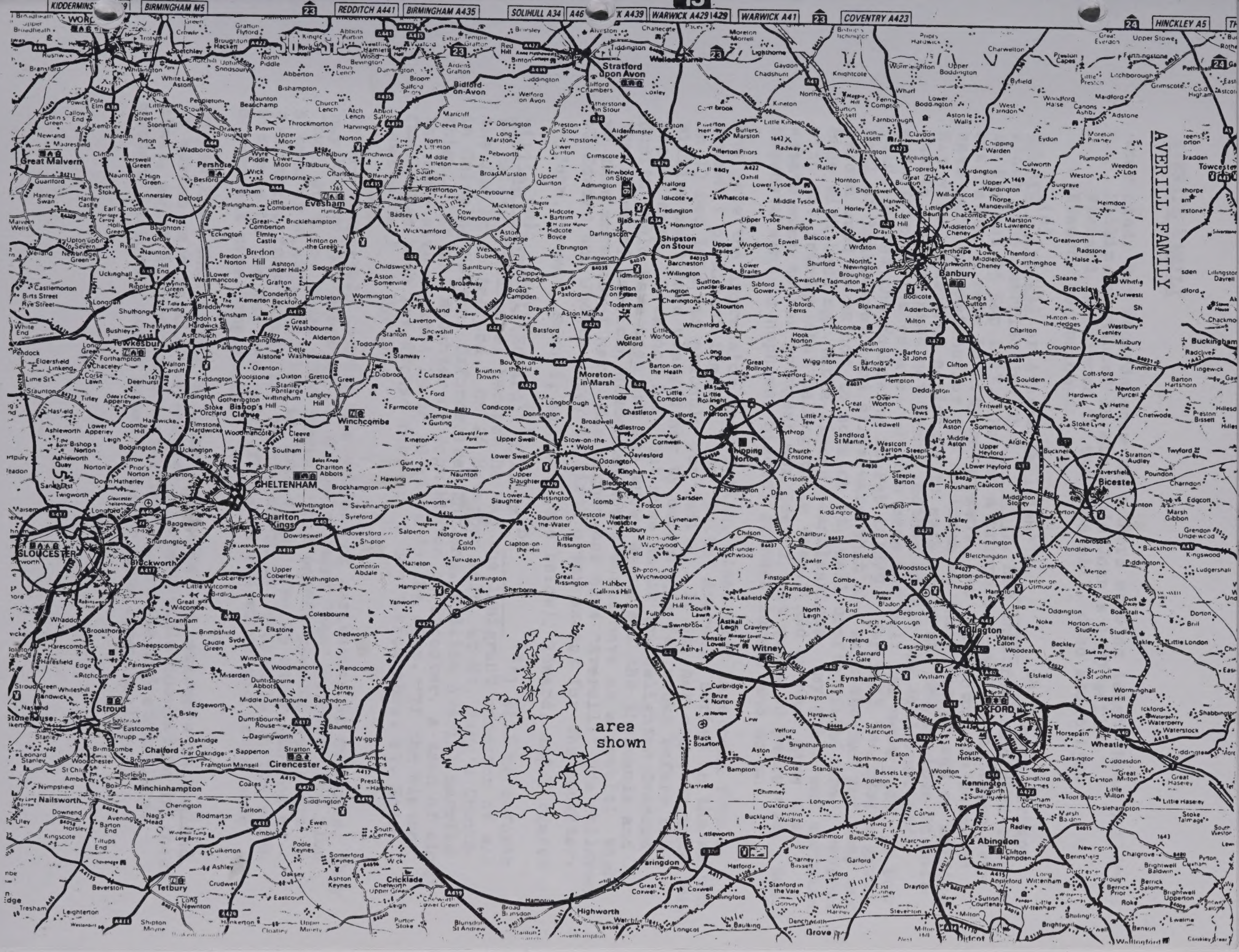
William$^{(b)}$Averill (_____$^{(a)}$) born perhaps about 1525, is believed to have been that William Avery who was one of the principal burgesses of the town when it was incorporated on 27 Feb 1605/6, according to visitation records.** Whether he was an arminger we do not know. No copy of his will has been found, nor his wife's name, nor when

---

*The Ancestry of Dudley Wildes, page 39, by Walter Goodwin Davis (1959)

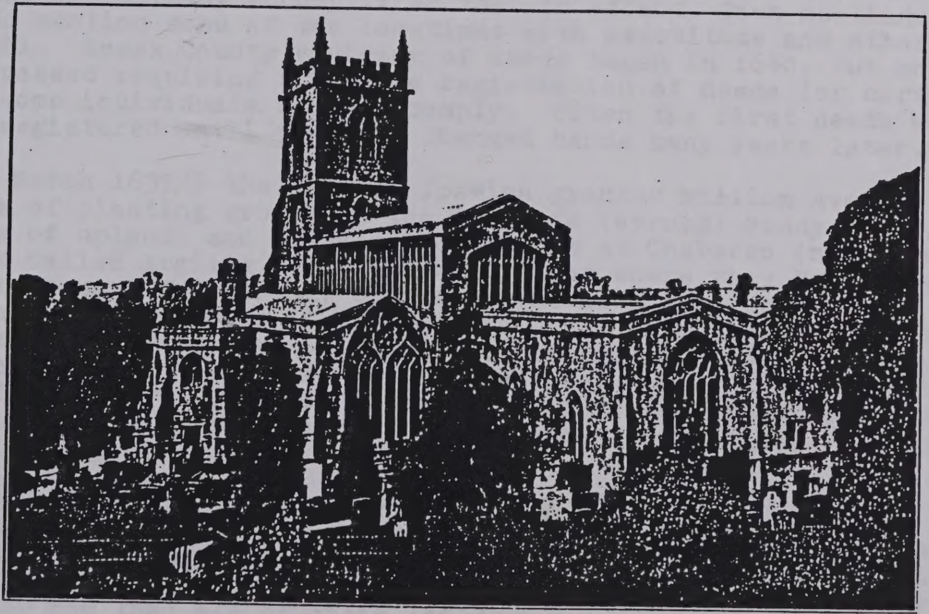
**Visitation of Oxfordshire, Harleian Society V:261, according to Davis


KIDDERMINSTER
BIRMINGHAM M5
23
REDDITCH A441
BIRMINGHAM A435
SOLIHULL A34
A439
WARWICK A429 A429
WARWICK A41
23
COVENTRY A423
24
HINCKLEY A5
AVERILL FAMILY
area shown
Worcester
Great Malvern
Pershore
Evesham
Bidford-on-Avon
Stratford Upon Avon
Wellesbourne
Shipston on Stour
Chipping Campden
Broadway
Tewkesbury
Winchcombe
Moreton-in-Marsh
Stow-on-the-Wold
Chipping Norton
Banbury
Brackley
Bicester
Cheltenham
Charlton Kings
Gloucester
Brockworth
Stroud
Nailsworth
Minchinhampton
Cirencester
Tetbury
Cricklade
Highworth
Faringdon
Witney
Eynsham
Woodstock
Kidlington
Oxford
Abingdon
Wheatley
Didcot


KIDDERMINS
BIRMINGHAM M5
23
REDDITCH A441
BIRMINGHAM A435
SOLIHULL A34
WARWICK A429
WARWICK A41
23
COVENTRY A423
24
HINCKLEY A5
AVERILL FAMILY
area shown
Great Malvern
Pershore
Evesham
Stratford upon Avon
Bidford-on-Avon
Tewkesbury
Moreton-in-Marsh
Stow-on-the-Wold
Chipping Campden
Shipston on Stour
Banbury
Bicester
Chipping Norton
Winchcombe
CHELTENHAM
Charlton Kings
GLOUCESTER
Brockworth
Stroud
Stonehouse
Nailsworth
Minchinhampton
Tetbury
Cirencester
Cricklade
Highworth
Faringdon
Witney
Eynsham
Woodstock
Kidlington
OXFORD
Abingdon
Wheatley
Didcot
Towcester
Buckingham
Bishop's Cleeve
Broadway
Northleach
Burford
Lechlade
Wantage
Brackley

It was probably in that capacity that a Puritan relative, Thomas Hyatt, made his will on 8 Sep 1634 leaving his messuage in the west end of the city in trust to our William "Averie" and to William Diston, who were directed to use income from the property "to provide for a preacher to preach five sermons a year." The will was not proved until 1644, after William had emigrated, so he was not around to perform that duty. However, being designated to carry it out shows that he must have been a Puritan and respected citizen.

Considering that, perhaps religion was a factor in their going to New England. One reason for stressing this is that Clara Avery, at the time she wrote the genealogy, was confused on that subject. Not finding any New England record of the children's baptisms and thinking they were younger (until she learned the truth later on) she wondered whether the family was Quaker. That definitely was not the case.



Parish Church of St. Mary, Chipping Norton, Oxfordshire

WILLIAM I AND FAMILY IN IPSWICH

The exact date of our Averill Family's arrival in the Massachusetts Bay Colony is not known, but the time frame can be narrowed down a bit. Probably they had not yet decided to leave England in September 1634 when Thomas Hyatt's will was drawn up. On 02 March 1637/8 they were granted planting ground in Ipswich.

Settlement of Ipswich was accomplished in such a hurry that the customary initial deliberations were cut short. Considered an outpost against militant French and Indians even at that early date, the area was so far north of other major towns that there were not even any town limits at first, though densely spaced dwelling lots were necessary for safety. In November 1634 the first meeting of proprietors was held and six "lot layers" appointed. Subsequently the lots were laid out, surveyed, and certificates issued but not recorded, the presumption being that everyone knew where they were and encroachment was unlikely in so remote a place. Next year the Bay Colony General Court established a committee for official granting of the land; deliberations took so long that it was not until 1637 that town selectmen were empowered to take over formal admission of town inhabitants and official granting of the lots. Those certificates had already accomplished that in effect. Town meetings afterwards mention some of the locations with exactitude and others not at all. Essex County registry of deeds began in 1640, but no law was passed requiring immediate registration of deeds (or certificates) and some individuals did not comply. Often the first deeds were not registered until the land changed hands many years later.*

On 2 March 1637/8 the town of Ipswich granted William Averill six acres of planting ground on the far side (across) Muddy River, twenty acres of upland, and six acres of meadow at Chebacco (now Essex) later called Argilla. The three-acre lot where they built their little home had obviously been received much earlier, and was located on the northeast side of town at the Great Cove below the falls. (See illustrations) In view of the above information, and because of the choice site of their home lot at the cove, it appears as though the family must have come either as part of the Great Migration in 1635 or the following year. Town records list him as a Commoner in 1639 and again in 1641.

In 1639 the Colony ordered that all towns keep detailed vital records but some of them did not comply. Ipswich may have, but none of them until a great deal later survived. There is nothing in writing to show that William and Abigail ever belonged to the church there, though we know now that all of their children were baptized in Chipping Norton. Puritan tests for becoming members were so stringent that much of the population was excluded. Everyone was forced to attend regularly, member or not, but only members could become freemen, and only freemen could vote.

---

* Landholding in Ipswich, by Edward S. Perzel, an article in Essex Institutes Historical Collections 104:303-328 explains all this in detail, and also reveals reasons why one cannot tell when settlers arrived by reviewing Ipswich Town Records.

It would appear that William's social status there was not what it had been in England, whether due to some unknown misfortune, lack of church membership. or who knows what. He was a commoner not active in town affairs. We will not take room here because they shed no new light, but you may read Miss Avery's lists showing him among the many residents. In 1639 he was among the fifty residents permitted to graze his cattle upon the village green, where the cows and bulls ran freely together.

In 1646 William sued Thomas Newman (-1675) for debt. Occasionally such cases involved relatives. Newman came to Ipswich in March 1634 in the Mary & John, Rev. Thos Parker's group. His wife Alice or Abigail's maiden name is not known. (Back in 1577 a Thomas Newman had overseen William's great-uncle's estate; Kathwrine Newman was Averill kin) & much later Averill & Newman descendants migrated to the same far-apart Connecticut towns. Is this all coincidental?

Inspired by the French, Indian threat was especially bad in 1648. William and his neighbors each suscribed a certain amount to pay Major Dennison's salary to organize and lead the populace in defense. Town records show that in May 1649 two of the sons, William Jr. almost 24 and Thomas 19, were said to have been notified to do sentry duty but failed to respond, and were fined for "defect in watching." Perhaps it was a misunderstanding, but it sounds a little ominous.

William's will, written 3 June 1652, was proved 29 March 1653. He directed that he be buried in the burying place of Ipswich "...and for my outward estate being but small, I doe give unto my children, and each of them being seven in number, the some of five shillings a peece...." (Six was written first but scratched out and seven substituted--perhaps at least one was no longer in the community?) "My wife Abygal I make sole execotrix." The inventory of his property showed one fether bed, one other bed, 1 bedstead, 2 chests, some items of clothing, a warming pan, a corslett (see illustration) and 4 pewter platters. Early writers, assuming the family had seven young children, marveled that they could get by on so little.

Abigail's will or exact date of death has not been found. Will, Jr., swore to the accuracy of her inventory on 27 March 1655. The value had increased in the interim and some additional items were a "hat bruish" and an hourglass.

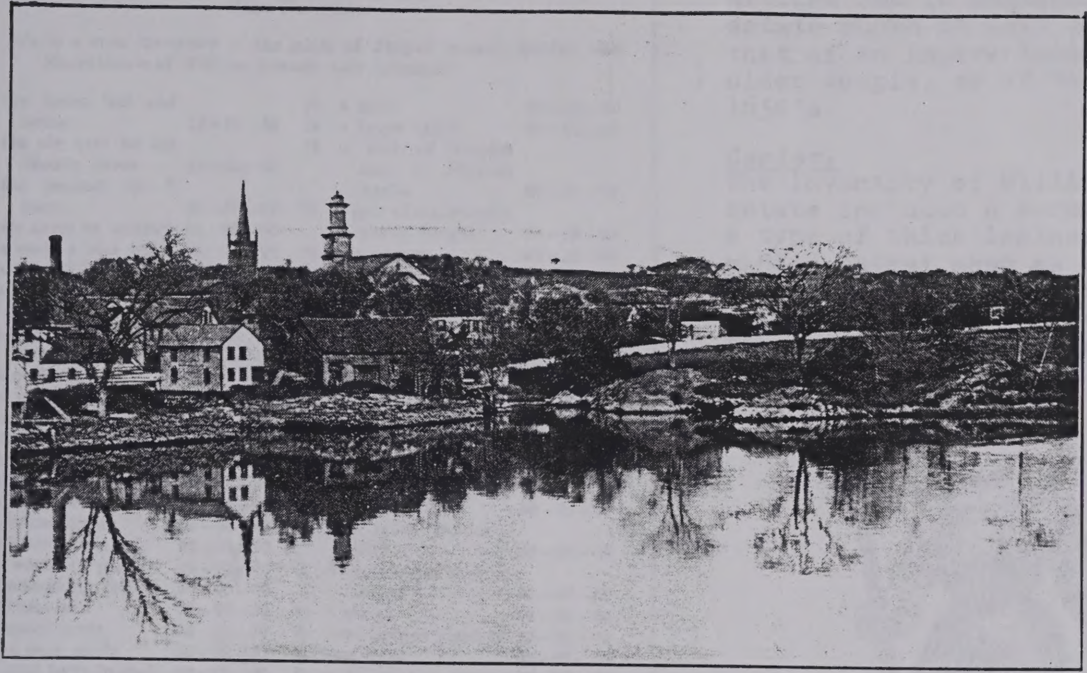
Children of William and Abigail Hinton Averill:

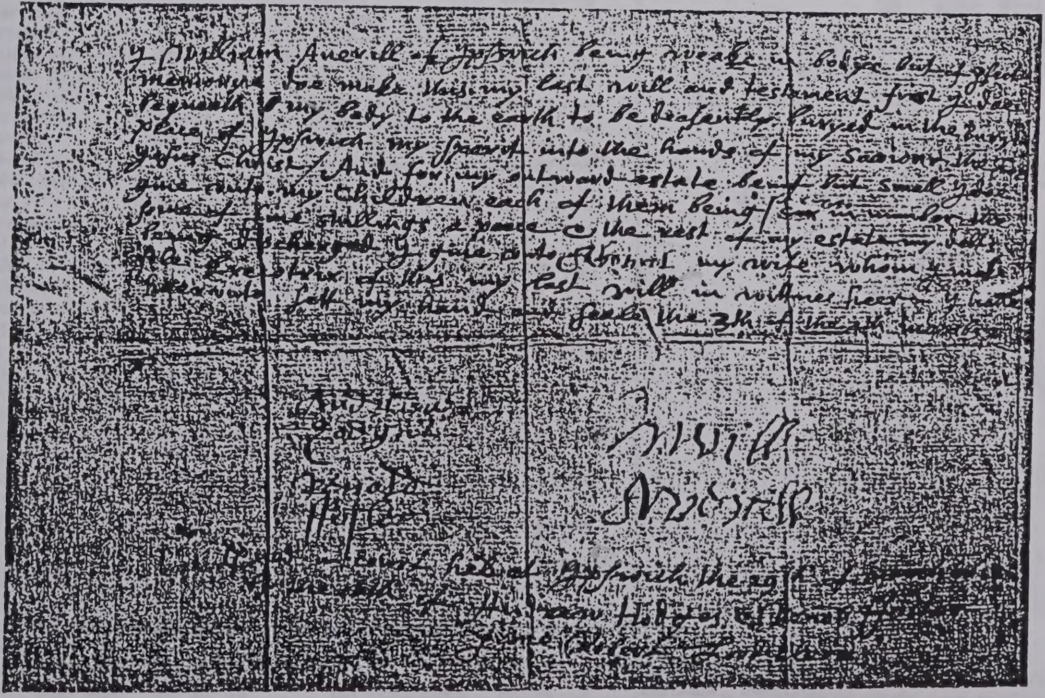
Abigail	17 Oct 1619-			living 1653-no further record
Mary	14 Oct 1621-			"
Hannah	28 Sep 1623-			"
+William	26 Jun 1625-23 Apr 1691	m	31 Jul 1651	Hannah Jackson
Sarah	1627-19 Jul 1692		23 Nov 1663	John Wildes
Thomas	07 Jan 1630-07 Oct 1714	1-	08 Dec 1657	Frances Collings
		2-	by 1672	Hannah ____
John	11 --- 1632-		16	md & lived in Maine??

---

*An Emerson-Benson Saga pp. 414-6, by Edward K. Swigert (1994)

Top: 1900 photograph of the Averill homesite at the Great Cove on Muddy River. Bottom: Photostatic copy of William I Averill's will





I William Averill of Ipswich being weake in bodye but of [illegible]
memorye doe make this my last will and testament first I doe
bequeath my body to the earth to be decently buryed in the bury[illegible]
place of Ipswich my spirit into the hands of my Saviour the [illegible]
Jesus Christ / And for my outward estate being but small I doe
give unto my children each of them being [illegible]
[illegible] of five shillings a peece & the rest of my estate my debts
being discharged I give unto Abigail my wife whom I make
sole Executrix of this my last will in witnes hereof I have
hereunto sett my hand and seale the 3th of the 4th [illegible]

[illegible]

Will Averill

[illegible] court held at Ipswich the 29 [illegible]
[illegible] the oath of [illegible] [illegible]

INVENTORY OF GOODS OF ABIGAIL AVERELL.

(Essex County—Probate Records.)

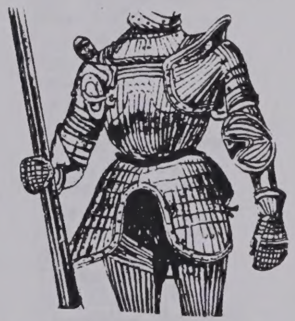
(Case No. 1025)

this is a true Inventory of the goods of Abigail Auerell widdow and Executoresk of William Auerell: now deceased:

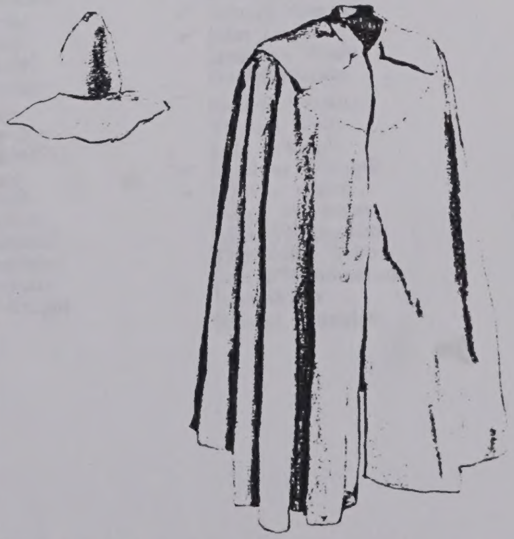
It	the house lott and house	12 – 00 – 00
It	the six acre lot att Muddy River	04 – 00 – 00
It	the pequett lot 7 acers	06 – 00 – 00
It	six acres of meddow	05 – 00 – 00
It	a steer 4 yeer ould	05 – 10 – 00
It	a cow and a haifer	08 – 10 – 00
It	a yeer ould steer an uantage	02 – 00 – 00
It	a yeer ould haifer an uantage	02 – 00 – 00
It	a calfe at	01 – 04 – 00
It	a swine att	01 – 15 – 00
It	eleuen fowles	00 – 08 – 00
It	an Iron pott	01 – 00 – 00
It	an Iron kettle att	00 – 03 – 06
It	a frying pan att	00 – 02 – 00
It	a brass skillitt att	00 – 02 – 06
It	a brase furnes	01 – 00 – 00
It	a brass kettle	00 – 05 – 00
It	a warming pan	00 – 02 – 06
It	a smoothing Iron	00 – 00 – 08
It	a brase pan	00 – 07 – 00
It	a meall trofe	00 – 02 – 00
It	two ould paills	00 – 02 – 00
It	a ould halfe bushell	00 – 00 – 06
It	a bar of iron	00 – 02 – 00
It	a pair of tonges	00 – 01 – 00
It	a drawing shone	00 – 01 – 00
It	a fier slice	00 – 00 – 04
It	a gridiron	00 – 01 – 06
It	a pair of pott hooks	00 – 00 – 03
It	a lampe 2s and two tramilles 2s	00 – 04 – 00
It	a hour glase	00 – 01 – 00
It	a cosslett	00 – 14 – 00
It	a bar of Iron	00 – 01 – 06
it	an oke cheast	00 – 02 – 06
it	a box	00 – 01 – 06
it	a bouster fill^d w^t flockes	03 – 00
it	another bouster	00 – 02 – 00
it	3 pillowes	00 – 12 – 00
it	a fether bouster	00 – 06 – 00
it	the fethers of another	00 – 04 – 00
it	one pair of sheets	00 – 10 – 00
it	one sheet	00 – 05 – 00
it	a fether bed	01 – 10 – 00
it	two blankets	00 – 09 – 00
it	a cotton blanket	00 – 05 – 00
it	a couer lid	00 – 10 – 00
it	two ould pillows	00 – 02 – 00
it	3 curtens and uaulans	01 – 00 – 00
it	2 cuishens	00 – 01 – 06
it	a pair of shooes	00 – 01 – 08
it	a pair of stockings	00 – 01 – 00
it	a table cloth	00 – 02 – 06
it	a Red cote	01 – 00 – 00
it	an ould stufe cote	00 – 04 – 00
it	another cloth cote	00 – 10 – 00
it	a gound	01 – 10 – 00
It	a hough	00 – 01 – 06
It	a spitt	00 – 02 – 00
It	a brase kettle	00 – 02 – 00
It	a pair of nippers and a Ripping hooke	00 – 01 – 00
It	a pair of scales and a pound waight	00 – 02 – 00
it	a wastcote	00 – 10 – 00
it	sum other ould cloths	05 – 00
it	a say (?) apron	00 – 02 – 00
it	a clocke	00 – 08 – 00
it	a whood	00 – 05 – 00
it	a dublit	00 – 09 – 00
it	a caster hatt	01 – 00 – 00
it	an ould hatt	00 – 02 – 00
it	a white apron	00 – 04 – 00
it	two holand handcarchifs	00 – 04 – 00
it	an ould holand hancarchif	00 – 01 – 00
it	two calico handcarchifs	00 – 01 – 06
it	5 croscloths and a mufler	00 – 05 – 00
it	4 coines	00 – 01 – 04
it	four pewter platters	00 – 10 – 00
it	two sines	00 – 01 – 06
it	a flaigon	00 – 02 – 06
it	sum ould pewter	00 – 01 – 06
it	four earthen uessels	00 – 01 – 00
it	a bible	00 – 05 – 00
it	an ould bible and two other books	00 – 05 – 00
it	a linin wheel	00 – 03 – 00
it	a mortising axe	00 – 02 – 00
it	a pair of tow cards	00 – 01 – 00
it	a hatt bruish	00 – 00 – 06
it	a few ould tubbes	00 – 02 – 00
it	a pine cheast	00 – 06 – 00
It	a baig	00 – 01 – 00
It	a cote	00 – 04 – 06
It	a hatt	00 – 02 – 06
It	a pewter pott	00 – 01 – 06
It	a cheafeing dish	00 – 01 – 00
It	an ould tunill with a spindle	
It	and a peece of ould linin	00 – 06
It	eighteen bushells and halfe an halfe a pecke of wheat at 4^{s}6^d the bushell	04 – 03 – 09
It	80 foote of boerd	00 – 04 – 06
It	a hammer	00 – 00 – 06
It	90 foot of ould plainks	00 – 04 – 06
It	22 bush. an halfe of indian corn att 2^{s}8^d the bushell	03 – 00 – 00
It	a hogshead a wedg an a beetk Ring	00 – 04 – 00
It	9 pound of butter	00 – 04 – 06
	the whole summ	77 – 04 – 11
	what shee ougheth	13 – 00 – 00

Though very modest by modern standands and much less than William had in England, the estate shown at left was not that of an impoverished older couple, as of the 1650's.

Center: The inventory of William's estate included a corslett, a type of thick leather padded jacket used as armor in case of conflict occasioned by Indian attack in exposed settlements like early Ipswich.

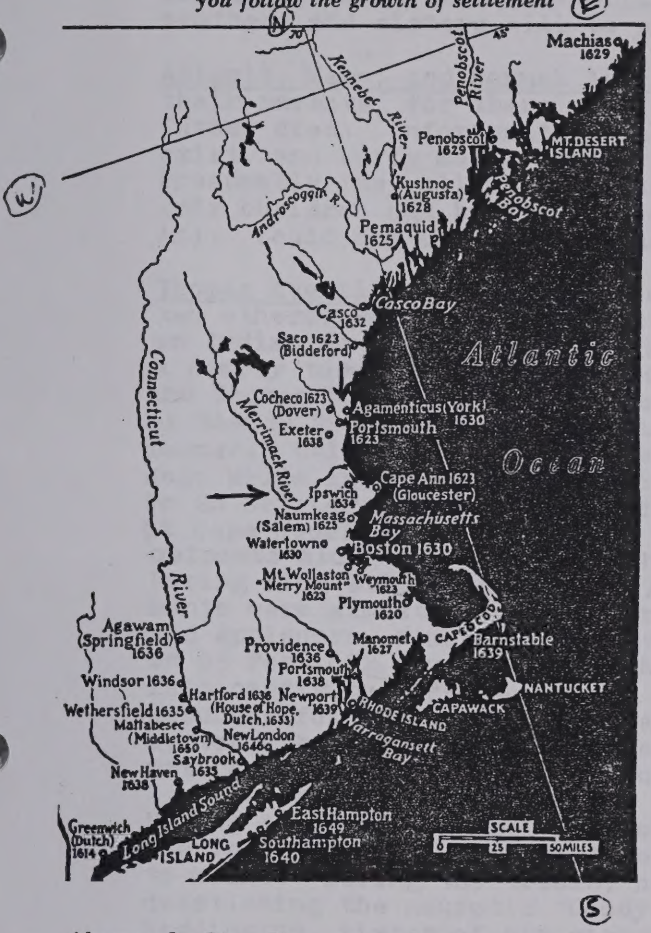


Below: Typical outerwear for both men and women in those days.



Steeple hats and "sadd colors" were typical of Puritan dress ways. Both men and women in New England did actually wear the broad-brimmed steeple hats of legend, historical revisionists notwithstanding.

The New England area, with dates to help you follow the growth of settlement


N
E
W
S
Machias 1629
Penobscot River
Kennebec River
Penobscot 1629
MT. DESERT ISLAND
Kushnoc (Augusta) 1628
Penobscot Bay
Androscoggin R.
Pemaquid 1625
Casco 1632
Casco Bay
Saco 1623 (Biddeford)
Atlantic
Ocean
Connecticut River
Cocheco 1623 (Dover)
Exeter 1638
Merrimack River
Agamenticus (York) 1630
Portsmouth 1623
Cape Ann 1623 (Gloucester)
Ipswich 1634
Naumkeag (Salem) 1623
Massachusetts Bay
Watertowne 1630
Boston 1630
Mt. Wollaston "Merry Mount" 1623
Weymouth 1623
Plymouth 1620
Agawam (Springfield) 1636
Providence 1636
Manomet 1627
CAPE COD
Barnstable 1639
Portsmouth 1638
Windsor 1636
Hartford 1636 (House of Hope, Dutch, 1633)
Newport 1639
Wethersfield 1635
Mattabesec (Middletown) 1650
RHODE ISLAND
CAPAWACK
NANTUCKET
New London 1646
Narragansett Bay
Saybrook 1635
New Haven 1638
Long Island Sound
Greenwich (Dutch) 1614
LONG ISLAND
East Hampton 1649
Southampton 1640
SCALE
0
25
50 MILES

LIST OF COMMONERS, 1641, IPSWICH MASSACHUSETTS*

William Adams
John Annable
Samuel Appleton
✓ William Averill
Henry Bachellor
Robert Beacham
Thomas Beery
Jeremy Belcher
Richard Bisgood
Thomas Bishop
✓ Thomas Boarman, Sr.
Thomas Bracey
Humphrey Bradstreet
Simon Bradstreet
Thomas Brewer
✓ John Brown
Mathias Button
Lionel Chute
John Clark, Jr.
John Clark, Sr.
Thomas Clark
Isaac Comings
John Cowley
Robert Cross
Francis Dane
John Dane, Jr.
John Dane, Sr.
John Davis
Robert Day
Thomas Dorman
William Duglas
✓ Thomas Emerson
William Fellows
Giles Firmin
Thomas Firmin
Reginald Foster
Thomas French
John Gage
Edmund Gardner
George Giddings
William Goodhue
Henry Greene
Thomas Hart
Richard Hatley
Andrew Hodges
James Howe
Thomas Howlett
William Hubbard
✓ John Jackson
Richard Jacob
Francis Jordan
Richard Kimball
Henry Kingsbury
✓ Robert Kinsman
Alexander Knight
William Knight
John Knowlton
Thomas Knowlton
William Knowlton
William Lampson
Roger Lancton
John Lee
Thomas Lee
Edward Lumas
Richard Lumkin
Thomas Manning
Joseph Medcalfe
Joseph Morse
Robert Muzzey
Thomas Newman
John Norton
Christopher Osgood
William Paine
Moses Pengry
✓ John Perkins
John Perkins, Jr.
John Perkins, Sr.
Allen Perley
John Pettis
Henry Pindarr
Samuel Podd
John Proctor
Mark Quilter
Thomas Rawlinsome, Sr.
Joseph Redding
Nathaniel Rogers
Thomas Safford
Richard Saltonstall
Richard Schofield
Thomas Scott
John Shatswell
Theophilus Shatswell
Richard Smith
Thomas Smith
Simon Stace
Mark Symonds
✓ Samuel Symonds
✓ John Tuttle
Jonathan Wade
Daniel Warner
Richard Wattles
Thomas Wells
John Whipple
✓ Matthew Whipple
– William White
Robert Whitman
John Whittingham
Theophilus Wilson
Robert Woodmansee
John Wyatt
Samuel Younglove

Above left The map shows the relative locations of Ipswich and York, where William^{2}'s brothers Thomas & John settled. The places further along the coast were principally fishing villages and Indian trading posts, for fur. Mayflower Pilgrims established Pemaquid.

Above right We are descended from those 1641 Ipswich commoners whose names are checked off. Some of the others were our ancient in-laws. William White was our many-great stepfather.

AVERILL FAMILY

We descend from William Averill, Jr. Short sketches about his brothers and sisters will be presented first.

Abigail, Mary, and Hannah Averill, the oldest children outlived their parents, for there were seven of them remaining when their father died. Unfortunately early Ipswich vital records no longer exist, and early Maine records were gleefully burned by the Indians. Presumably they all married and at least two of them lived nearby (six children had been scratched off of the will and seven written in). Could one of them have married a Newman?? Or a Cummings?

Thomas Averill as a teenager, as well as his older brother Will and two others, was fined for failing to show up for sentry duty during an Indian scare. He later married Frances Collings or Collins from a nearby town. March 1664 records of Topsfield show Thomas Averill and Thomas Hobbs (who was killed eleven years later by the Indians at Bloody Brook during King Philips War) as residents on property formerly belonging to the Bradstreet family. Brother William and John Wilds lived nearby. By 1668 he was in Portsmouth, New Hampshire. On 20 October 1671 he purchased land a little farther up the coast at Cape Neddick, Wells, Maine. Though there had long been British outposts along the seacoast, the French claimed prior ownership. During King William's War (1689-97) most of the scattered settlements were almost totally destroyed. Only four--Wells, York, Kittery and Appledore--remained inhabited. In the "Great Massacre" at York on 05 Feb 1692 many were slaughtered and over 160 persons were taken into captivity, after which MA Royal Governor Phipps attempted an unsuccessful invasion of Canada. In the meantime the witch hysteria broke out back home which he had to put an end to when he returned. Hostilities broke out again in Queen Anne's War (1702-13).

During the worst of the war Thomas, by then an older man, brought his family back to the relative security of Mass. before returning to Maine. During the trials, he attempted to help his sister by questioning the neurotic "Goody Reddinton," her accuser (Mary Gould Reddington, sister of his sister Sarah's husband's first wife, Priscilla Gould Wild). Thomas had six known children. During old age he and his second wife lived with the oldest son Job, who cared for them, though another son and a daughter were still living. Thomas died before 07 April 1716 at York, Maine.

Sarah Averill is presumed to have been born in 1627 at Chipping Norton but her baptism is not recorded there--it is possible she was a little younger. She was in court in November 1649, accused of too great familiarity with Thomas Wardell (or Wardwell) who was not present. He had been listed as an Ipswich proprietor the previous year and had contributed to Major Dennison's salary the next summer, but now he drops completely from all New England records. Such accusations were common and say more about Puritan prudish attitudes than they do about her. In May 1663 she was again presented for the terrible offense of wearing a silk scarf!

On 23 Nov 1663 Sarah married widower John Wildes, a prominent Topsfield man whose first wife had died that year leaving him with

several children. Sarah was a very nice lady who did an admirable job of rearing the Wildes children, including the youngest, her only son, constable Ephraim Wildes. She and her husband witnessed the will of her older brother William Averill, who died in spring 1691.

On 23 April 1692 a marshall from Essex rode up to the Wildes home and, in the presence of her husband and son, Sarah, then about 65 years old, was placed under arrest, charged with the crime of witchcraft.* Despite desperate efforts on her behalf by her husband and son, at one sitting of the court, she and four others were convicted. Quoting one author,

> "The executions of thse five convicted persons occurred on Tuesday 19 July 1692. Again on that day a larger procession proceeded from the jail on St. Peter Street to Essex Street, and thence by Essex and Boston Streets (Salem) to the old highway, into which they turned to the left to the spot where Mrs. Bishop had been executed in June; and there in the same way upon trees their lives were taken." **

John Averill then nearly 22, testified in court in a case concerning a heifer, that he had been staying with Goodman Cummins for the last year. Had that some connection with a sister?--right after his parents died. In April 1656 he was fined for striking Jonas Griggs in the meeting house on Sabbath day--not unusual in those days but nice, either. Also that year he sued Daniel Eppes for not returning a cow entrusted to him for overwintering. In 1659 he sued Sarah Marshall, who came to court to answer charges, but as he did not show up the charges were dropped. It is assumed he had already gone to Wells, Maine, by then, where he was a witness in 1660. (His brother came soon after.) He signed a petition along with other men in 1664 asking the Mass. General Court to restore authority over them. and sued two Portsmouth men in 1665 & 6. The last record of him is found in 1667 when he failed to show up in court for an action he had brought and the defendant was awarded costs. It seems as though John must have been a scrappy individual! In all likelihood he had a wife and family but so many Maine records have not survived that we hope they were not casualties of the French and Indians.

---

*The Ancestry of Dudley Wildes. by Walter Goodwin Davis, pp 6-12&44
**History of Salem by Sidney Perley, Vol 3:22 etc.

Other books about Salem Witchcraft abound. Twenty persons were executed in the spring and summer of 1692 during the hysteria. Seven of them were our ancient relatives, though not all in the Averill line. None were our direct ancestors, though closely related. Other relatives were indicted but managed to escape. Those executed were:

June 10	Bridget Bishop
July 19	Sarah Wildes and Rebecca Nurse
Aug 19	John Willard
Sep 22	Mary Easty, Ann Pudeator and Samuel Wardwell

WILLIAM JUNIOR AND FAMILY

William^2 Averill (William^1) baptized 26 June 1625 in Chipping Norton, England, was about ten when the family crossed the ocean. As a child he was called "Will" (like my grandpa, his descendant). The youngster appears to have been bright, gregarious, with good business sense and a talent for carpentry--a much-needed trade in a new land. (And did you notice that his mother's inventory included a mortising axe, a hammer, "80 foote of board" and "90 foot of ould plainks "?) As part of the business head, in March 1646, three months before he became of age, he bargained with the Town of Ipswich "to keep the herd of goats on the North side of the River, to begin the 29th of this present month, and to have for his pains 5s6d the week, to have 6d a head at their first going out and the rest at the end of his time, of this pay 3d for every head to be paid in butter or wheat, only the last month he is to have but 3s6d the week." He signed the contract "William Averell." If serving as a goat herd does not sound like much, consider that in 1646 wolves were still numerous and capable of destroying a herd of goats in a hurry. A high bounty was paid for their heads.* All domestic animals brought over from England were in short supply and expensive, even goats.

In May 1649 he and his younger brother Thomas plus two others were fined for failing to report for sentry duty. In October 1651 he and Thomas Bishop were summoned as witnesses in the case of Theophilus Salter, accused of lying as well as inciting youths to steal apples. By this time he must have been working actively as a housewright (house builder). On 21 Feb 1653, again spelling his name "William Averell" he witnessed two deeds of sale, of six acres of land from John Wooddam (Woodham)** to Daniel Roffe (Rolfe) then from Rolfe to Joseph Jewett. This was right after his father's death, at which time he had assumed the role of head of theAverill Family. On 27 March 1655 he took an oath in court as to the accuracy of the inventory of his mother's estate. As of 30 August 1655 he possessed a plot of land "the corner of which comes near the milldam"-- on 4 Oct 1658 he sold the same to John Woodham, six acres. During chosing of selectmen at the 18 Feb 1661 annual election meeting, four "surveighers of highways" were appointed. They were Thomas Harte, John Andrews, Renold Foster, and William Averill. Though previous experience made William well qualified, family men were much preferred; he probably had chosen a young lady.

---

*History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, Massachusetts, page 42 by Joseph B. Felt (1834) Reprint 1991 by Heritage Books

**According to Pioneers of Massachusetts by Charles Henry Pope and New England Marriages Prior to 1700 by Clarence Almon Torrey, (see alphabetically) John Woodham (died 1678) an Ipswich bricklayer, married by 1646 Mary__________maiden name not known, who died in 1682, and they had a family. There is absolutely no proof of this, but I wonder if Mary could have been one of the older Averill daughters?? On the other hand, Woodham could have been a building trades acquaintance or associate. Jewett & Rolfe, living in adjoining Rowley, evidently were not relatives.

Perhaps he interited good business sense and industriousness from some of his more prominent English ancestors. At any rate, though it was a bit unusual, he was a very busy bachellor at age 36

On 31 July 1661, William Averill Jr. married Hannah Jackson, daughter of close neighbors John and Katherine ( ) Jackson. There is little in the records concerning her parents, who are also our ancestors, so what little there is will be related here. Half a dozen John Jacksons came early to Massachusetts. The two with whom our ancestor is most often confused had wives named Margaret--a Cambridge man who came in 1635 in the "Defense" and a Salem man who came in 1635 in the"Blessing" but later removed to Connecticut.

The ship our John Jackson came on is presently unknown, but probably he came slightly earlier, and maybe he was already married to Katherine, for they owned a houselot in Ipswich in 1635 (see diagram). He was listed as a commoner in 1641 and subscribed to pay towards Major Dennison's salary in 1648, the year of his death.* He left behind a widow and six children, all under 20 years of age, five little daughters and son John Jr.

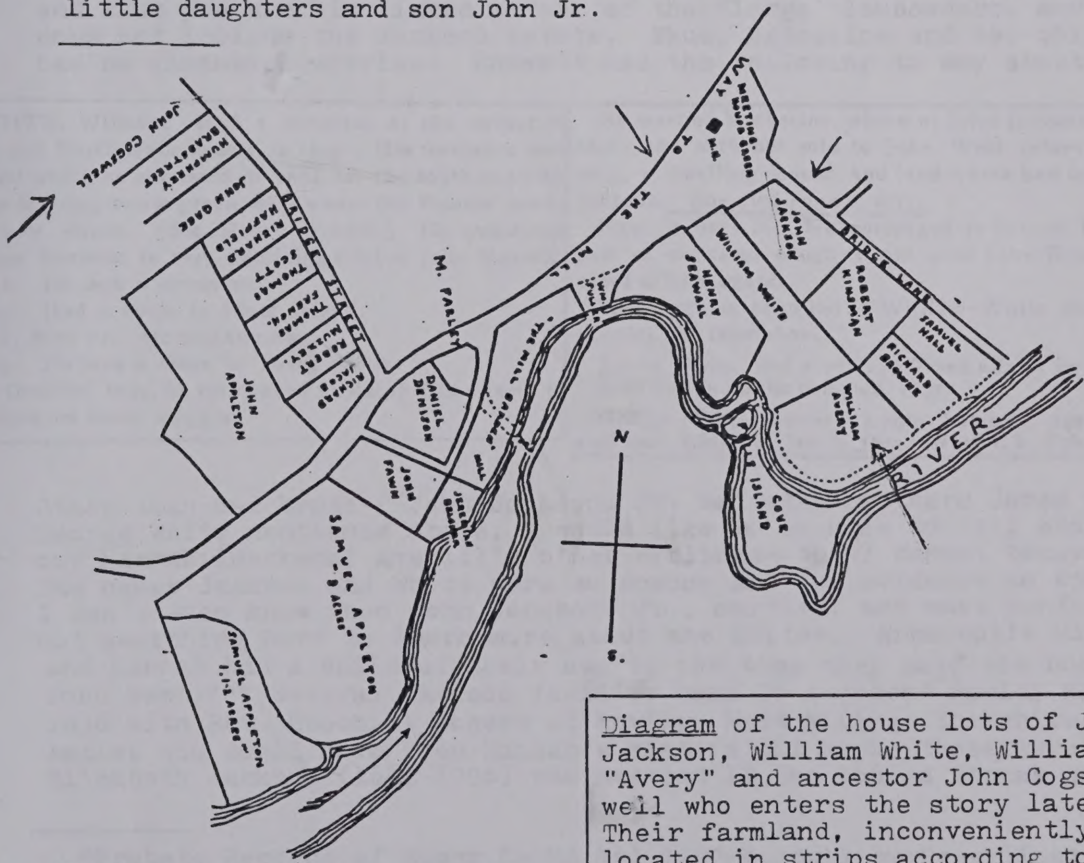

JOHN COGSWELL
HUMPHREY BRADSTREET
JOHN GAGE
RICHARD HAFFIELD
THOMAS SCOTT
THOMAS FARNUM.
ROBERT MUSSEY.
RICHARD JACOB
BRIDGE STREET
JOHN APPLETON
M. PARLEY
DANIEL DENISON
JOHN FAWN
JEREMIAH BELCHER
SAMUEL APPLETON "3 ACRES"
SAMUEL APPLETON 1,1-2 ACRES
THE MILL BANKS
MILL
THE MILL WAY
MEETING HOUSE GREEN
M.H.
JOHN JACKSON
WILLIAM WHITE
HENRY SEAWALL
BRIDGE LANE
ROBERT KINSMAN
SAMUEL HALL
RICHARD BROWNE
WILLIAM AVERY
COVE ISLAND
RIVER
N
S.

Diagram of the house lots of John Jackson, William White, William "Avery" and ancestor John Cogswell who enters the story later. Their farmland, inconveniently located in strips according to ancient English custom, was in scattered plats somewhat distant.

---

*Early Inhabitants of Ipswich by Abraham Hammatt, pg 73

On 26 Sep 1648 an inventory of his estate, taken on the 17th by Theophilus Wilson and John Knowlton, was presented in court by widow "Katheryne" Jackson, administratrix. She was to pay her son, John Jackson, Jr., 14 pounds at age 21, and her daughters 6 pounds each at age 20 or at marriage. The widow was to have the remainder for the education of the children, and "hir husband is to be possessed of the whole estate presently to bring up the children," giving security for the children's payments in corn or cattle.*

There was no such thing as a period of mourning in those days. Katherine, with six little children to care for, had married her next-door neighbor, widower William White, also needing a step-mother for his children, within weeks of her husband's death, before the estate could be probated in court. And from what we can tell, she chose wisely. Women back then were so dependent on and so subject to their husbands that as a rule not much about them appears in the records; but one can learn a little indirectly by finding out about their husbands. Here is a little about William White (1610-1684). He was a prosperous man--not a huge landholder, for 15 men in Ipswich owned 400 or more acres of land--but the average was 50. He owned 240 acres** and thus you see him listed as one of the "large" landowners, and this does not include the Jackson estate. Thus, Katherine and her children had no financial worries. Hammatt had the following to say about him.

> **WHITE**, William. Had a houselot at the corner of High and North Main streets, in 1635. His residence was on a lot which he possessed in 1634, on the south easterly side of Meeting-house green, near where the Female Academy now stands. [See Henry Sewall.] He possessed another houselot in 1635, adjoining a lot of John Hassell.
>
> 1641. He was a commoner.
>
> 1664. Had a share in Plum Island.
>
> 1671, May 21. He was freeman.
>
> 1679. He was a voter in Town affairs.
>
> In October, 1647, he mortgaged to Ralph Dix a farm of two hundred acres, for £60.
>
> He married Katherine, widow of John Jackson who died 1648; and with her sold to John West before June 28, 1649, a dwelling house and land which had belonged to Jackson. She died June 2, 1671.
>
> 1659, January 16. He mortgaged to Samuel Ingalls ye part of my farm which I sold unto John West and purcased of him again.
>
> His death is recorded: "William White died August 25, 1684, or thereabout."
>
> James White, was a voter in Town affairs in 1679. Had horses on the common, 1697.
>
> George White married Lydia Lamson, April 5, 1671, and had: Lidia, b. Jan. 5, 1672; Nath'l, b. Feb. 3, 1673.

Other than her brother John Jackson, Jr. and step-brothers James and George White mentioned above, I would like to be able to tell about our Hannah (Jackson) Averill's other siblings--but I cannot because the names Jackson and White were so common and the evidence so sparse. I don't even know whom John Jackson, Jr., married, and must confess not searching hard to learn more about the Whites, Apparently William and Hannah had a child of their own by the time they sold the home to John West.*** Several Jackson families came to adjacent Rowley MA in 1638 with Rev. Ezechiel Rogers of Rowley, West Riding, Yorkshire. Two ladies who could have been Hannah's sisters (but maybe those) were an Elizabeth Jackson (1642-1706) who married 12 Dec 1661 a Thomas West

---

*Probate Records of Essex Co MA Vol I:97-8, publ by Essex Inst.(1916)

**Essex Inst. Hist. Coll. Vol 104:323 (hereinafter EIHC)

***New England Marriages Prior to 1700, pg 807, Clarence Almon Torrey

of Beverly, possibly related to John West who bought the Jackson homestead then was permitted to sell it back to the Whites. The other lady was Mary Jackson (-1677) who married 05 May 1656 in Ipswich as first of his three wives, Isaac Foster (-1692) a son of Reginald Foster, lifelong friend of Will Averill and his father. Isaac's sister, Mary Foster, was wife of Francis Peabody, the longtime town clerk of Topsfield. Perhaps this Mary Jackson was not Hannah's sister, but if she were it would help explain her husband's later prominent position in Topsfield town affairs.

But even before they married, our ancestor had been extremely busy in his occupation. One account goes

> "On Sept. 27, 1659..'william Auerill of Ipswich carpenter' agreed to build an addition to the house of Richard Jacob in that town. Averill was 'to provide Clabbord and shingle for the forsaid building and to Lay them Allso he is to Lay three flors with Joys and bord and to make 4 windows...pertitions and dors to Close the Roms Compleat..' The contract included a promise also 'to make a table and frame of 12 or 14 foot Long and a joyned forme of 4 foot long and a binch Behind the table,' all of which speaks for itself, showing that Averill did both rough carpentry and finish work and made furniture as well. He did not, however, do all the work himself as a later court reference reveals that Thomas Clark of Noddle's Island cleft out for William Averill about 1200 clapboards and shingles in Richard Jacob's yard.'"* (spellings original)

To which we might add that a sawpit was probably dug out in Sgt. Jacob's yard for cleaving out the clapboards. Like many building contractors even today, however, Averill ran behind schedule for some reason. The job still was not entirely completed early in 1661, when Jacob took him to court over it, and asked that his bond be forfeited. A few months later William took time out to get married....

Little William III came a year after the marriage, and soon Hannah was pregnant again. They started looking around for larger accommodations. As a"surveigher" of highways as well as building contractor, William was becoming familiar with outlying districts. Topsfield, originally the "New Meadows" part of Ipswich, had been set aside 15 years prior to February 1663, when he and Hannah purchased a 100-acre "messuage" there, with outbuildings, orchard, and woodland. (The genealogy tells about this in great detail, including wording of the deed, so that will be omitted here.) Another book is more succinct.

> "In 1663 he purchased of David Clark one hundred acres of land with house and other buildings lying near Mile Brook...His house is said to have stood on the left side of what is now Ridge St. It lay south of the Boardman farm. The road from Ipswich Street was first laid out in 1666 and was the way to the Peabody grist mill. The town gave him and Daniel Boardman liberty to dam Mile Brook in 1667. His house was torn down after his son John built a house nearby."** (but that was much later) The dam created a nice pond.

---

*EIHC Vol 93:152

**History of Topsfield by George Francis Dow (1940)

Let it be a lesson to all his descendants that Will and his ways are still a part of us. People's ideation and attitudes gradually modify over the years; but genes don't. Even the earth holds keys to the past. The depression marking the cellar of that house was still slightly visible three centuries later. William and Hannah's children, especially the older sons, settled in nearby and were so bright the area acquired the nickname, "the colleges," because of their intellectual pursuits. His sister Sarah and her Wildes family were also close neighbors. (He died the year before she was charged with witchcraft and thus missed that mental anguish.)

On 03 June 1670, a highway was laid out "one yard and a halfe from the Vpper End of William Aueriell orchard," and even today it is a nice road. By then he was a constable, considered an honor back in those days, though it was carried out as a public service. After his term he served on many juries, often registering his "contrari dissent" to verdicts. Though as a matter of principle he never joined the Topsfield church, he was made a tithing-man, collecting ministers' rates and other taxes.

In 1684, he was elected Representative to the Massachusetts General Court (held periodically in Boston--the equivalent to a modern state legislator in a unicameral government). After that he was a long-time Selectman.In those days there were usually seven men incharge of running townships, and he was one of them. All of this is very perplexing, considering that Puritans were in those days in power. and brooked no dissention. Clara Avery was as amazed as anyone over this, and wondered whether he might have had Quaker beliefs. My own opinion, for what it is worth, is that he was no Quaker; such a strongminded individual would have said so even it got him in trouble, and it would have! The "friendly persuasion" Quakers came a little later--in his day those in Massachusetts were militant and disruptive despite frequent whippings at the post. But it is obvious that he thought extra-zealous Puritans were over-reacting, and had a rather charismatic character that allowed him to get away with it.

Though not a church member, during a period when all residents were forced to attend, member or not, he was nevertheless put in charge of selecting new ministers! To show that it was no easy task, one might review the situation even before the Averills moved to that township. Topsfield had never been lucky with its ministers. First there had been Rev. William Perkins (not related to the local family of that surname) who had proved so unsatisfactory that various townsmen withheld their support and he was forever suing them in court for back pay. Some of the flock retaliated and brought him into court for drunkenness. According to court records, it appears he stopped at the ordinary at Malden MA and called for a cup of sack, but the proprietress Goody Hill told him he had had too much already, "and Master Perkins replied, 'If you think I am drunk let me see if I can not goe' and he went tottering about the kitchen and said the house was so full of pots and kettles that he could hardly go."

Perkins was supplanted in 1663 by Rev. Thomas Gilbert, a Scotchman, who also loved wine. As the years wore on, he "was not as composed as he used to be." In 1670 Perkins, perhaps seeking to get even, lodged a complaint. Gilbert was then presented in court on suspicion of being overtaken with drink on a sacrament Sunday, on which occasion he had entertained overnight a number of elderly people who lived distant from the meeting-house. That evening he had passed around, as a special treat, a rare golden cup with sacramental wine. Elderly Johanna Towne who sat next to him said he scarcely touched the contents but others accused him of drunkenness.*

During the prolonged hearing William Averill, "late constable of Topsfield," adressed the court, he having been charged by Mr. Gilbert with "base carriages for doing no more than he apprehended was his duty." Averill testified that Gilbert had announced a day of Thanksgiving had been declared for the 14th day of 9th month, "whereupon one that was present Replyed, 'Sir, you mean the 4th day of the next week.' I being present saw there was a mistake in bowth (and) I accounted it my duty in conscience to my oth, to endeavor to prevent furder inconvenience at that time and place; made bold to say it is the 4th day of this week as I had been informed, to which mr. gillbert Replyed 'I blesse god I am not drunk; o base base unworthy carriages to catch at a ministars words. let them that are more godly and judicious speke that are church members.' If I have desarved justly to be so villifyed in the face of an assembly for this cause I desire freely to leave it to the court to determine." (These words speak for themselves--Sheriff Averill was just trying to be helpful.)

In 1680 a later parson, Mr. Jeremiah Hobart (originally from Hingham) was haled before the court in Ipswich and fined. He also was dissatisfied with provisions Topsfield had made for him. Averill, again testifying, Said that after an argumentative town meeting, some mention was made about the parsonage, and "Mr. Hubberd said, 'I would that the parsonage were a fire and some of them int' to which I made so bold as to reply: 'Sir, I hope you doe not spake now Just as you thinke.'" Isaac Cummings, Sr., added that Mistress Huberd replied, "Noe, he does not mean soe." (This Cummings was the same man William's younger brother John had lived with a while after their parents died.)

As one perusing the old court records can see, there was little real crime as we know it today, but perhaps a lot of quarreling, name-calling, in-law trouble, anger over animals tresspassing or disputed ownership, meddling, pulling hair, "naughty speech," kissing in public, wearing clothing too fancy for one's station in life. Sitting in stocks or paying fines were common punishment. For serious offenses whipping or wearing those hated letters signifying the offense were less costly than maintaining gaols--those arrested, guilty or innocent, paid the jailer for [illegible] keep. During the years Will Averill served as constable (essentially a part-time job!) the only weapon he carried was a thick 6-foot wooden rod painted black on one end. If he needed help in apprehending a wrong-doer, the law was that anyone he requested assistance from (hue and cry) was obliged by law to lend a hand.

---

*The stories about the ministers are told in History of Topsfield page 96 & Ancestry of Dudley Wildes pp 45-6. Modern historians think Rev. Gilbert's real problem was some type of "nervous disorder."

A funny story, though it happened a few years later, is told about William's nephrew, Ephraim Wildes, a later Topsfield constable, and a turbulent Irish couple who had built a frame house directly over the boundary line separating Ipswich and Topsfield. Considering the dignity and morality of their town to be at stake in 1693, residents voted to have the selectmen complain at court against Goody Neland for "slandering the wholl Towne of Topsfield." As for her obstinate husband, whenever the constable of Topsfield called upon him for collecting the minister's rate, he was sure to be found in the Ipswich side of the house, and vice versa. "Finally after many fruitless attempts to collect the tax, forbearance ceased to be a virtue, and taking with him several sturdy fellows, Constable Wildes presented himself at the pig pen of the wily Irishman with black staff of office in hand, and distrained and carried away a fat porker, which cashed in full the unsettled balance in Parson Capen's salary rate."*

After serving as constable, William Averill Jr. was again a commissioner and on a committee to negotiate with Town of Rowley villagers in some dispute. On 21 May 1688 he was again a selectman. Impressive as all these positions sound, one must not forget that he was performing them as a public service, and that he was earning his living in the building trades profession, with many subcontractors working for him. He was especially skilled at millwork, an art he passed on to several of his sons, notably Nathaniel and little Isaac, our ancestor.

His will of 15 April 1690 was witnessed by his sister Sarah and her husband, John Wildes, and reprinted in full in pages 86-8 of the genealogy, making his wife Hannah executrix and administrator, she to have his estate for life to divide as she saw fit later on. The two oldest sons Nathaniel and John were to care for her and have 10 pounds apiece extra compensation for their efforts. (The only one then married and living away then was William III, the oldest, in Ipswich.) Each child was to have 6 pounds apiece on coming of age or marriage. Nathaniel was to have the shop tools, but not deprive any of the others of their use as long as they kept together. He died 23 April 1691.

According to Essex Co. Probate Records, Vol 303 page 54 (per Avery)

"The Invontary of ye estate off William Auerell senr of Topsfield
who deceased ye 23rd day of Aprill 1691

Item	Bookes	02-04-00
"	Wearing cloaths	04-11-00
"	armes & amonition	03-00-04
"	pewter coper brass Iron & tinn	07-15-00
"	beds & beding Linning & wooling cloath	57-16-00
"	tables chests boxes & other lumber	16-12-00
"	Carpenders tooles Joiners tooles & other tools	08-04-09
"	Impliments of Husbandrie	10-19-06
"	ye buildings	150-00-00
"	ye whomsteed Land & medow	160-00-00
"	Land at Ipswich	100-00-00
"	stock as neat Catle sheep & Swine	68-01-08
		lb s d 589-04-03

dat ye 16 Aprill 1691
prizers Samuel Howlett & Daniel Redington"

---

*History of Topsfield, pg 97

AVERILL FAMILY

In the Essex Co. Court sitting at Salem on 30 June 1691, "Hanah, widdow Relict& Executrix of her decd Husband Wm Averell p'sented ye above as a true inventory to ye best of her Knowledg promising to add wtt farther should come to her Knowledg."

A long, detailed settlement of the estate was made up on 04 Feb 1701/2 which the genealogy shows in full on pages 89-95, and signed by all of them, though not registered in the court at Ipswich until 3 July 1724. By then the mother was deceased and most of the children married, some, such as our Isaac, then of Preston, Connecticut, were living quite distant. However, the agreement was amicable and their mother, who had been much loved, spent her last years with her son John, who was late to marry.

The exact date of Hannah's death is unknown, but it was after she finally joined the Topsfield Church in June 1706. On 16 May 1697 her children (except William III of Ipswich, already baptized) had been christened by Reverend Joseph Capen, the kindly peace-making and much revered minister Topsfield had needed for so long. After the twin tragedies of the Indian Wars and the Witchcraft Hysteria, the town was much in need of healing, and he was the man for the job.

Hannah had been several years younger than her husband, and had been well reared in a caring family, even though we don't know as much about them as we would like. She bore 14 children, 11 of whom reached adulthood. Taken as a whole, her children showed the effects of her fine training of them.

Children of William, Jr., and Hannah (Jackson) Averill:

William	01 May 1662- ca 1720 m	ca 1686	Mary_______
John	?1663- 1720	09 Jun 1710	Anne Greensleet
Nathaniel	13 Oct 1664-03 Apr 1751	31 Dec 1698 17 Jun 1729	Sarah Howlett Lydia French
Job	01 Jan 1667- 1730	01 Feb 1703	Susanna Brown
Hannah	18 Dec 1667- bef 1724 ?		Prob. did not marry
Ebenezer	14 Oct 1669-22 Dec 1716	30 Nov 1687 31 Dec 1700	Susanna Hovey Mehitable Foster
Isaac	26 Jan 1672-11 Jun 1680		died age 8
Thomas	09 Dec 1672-10 Nov 1634	27 Jan 1702	Mary Baker
Abigail	03 Mar 1674- aft 1724	09 Jul 1699	Jonathan Bishop
Ezechiel	24 Jul 1675- bef 1690		died young
Paul	21 Jun 1677- after1738	27 Mar 1706 03 Feb 1737	Mary Andrews widow Mary Symonds
Silas	01 May 1679- bef 1690		died young
+Isaac	10 Nov 1680- after 1754	16 May 1709	Esther Walker
Mary	ca 1682-09 Feb 1730	16 Feb 1710	Silas Titus

We follow the youngest son, Isaac Averill. Here is a little about his brothers and sisters.

William Averill III, the oldest, was by far the least successful, and he must have been disabled in some way. He learned carpentry from his father, and married about age 23 Mary (   ) maiden name not found, who evidently was a church member for, though none of the other Averills yet belonged, he was admitted to membership in the Congregational Church of Topsfield on 24 May 1685, probably due to her influence. By March 1688 they were living in Ipswich where he "had fallen under scandall by irreverent carriage in the meeting house on Lecture day in ye time of worship...also for reproaching Mr. Wise" (the minister?) and was suspended for about half a year.

At some unknown date they returned to Topsfield where on 25 Oct 1702 Mary was admitted to the church he had already joined. There he was a carpenter, sexton and grave digger. On 5 March 1706/7 the town granted the couple for life a ½-acre lot on the commons NW of the meeting house and free use of the fruit from the parsonage orchard. It seems they were a nice but needy couple. By then the rest of the Averills were members of the congregation and of high social standing in the community, influencing the actions of the town. Despite their poverty, the couple continued to have children, eleven in all. The date of his death has not been found; Mary died 14 March 1728/8.

The children kept up close ties with their more fortunate cousins. To escape from poverty all of them moved away as soon as they were old enough and improved their stations in life. Samuel, Joseph and Steven moved to Arundel (Kennebunkport) Maine with some of the Wildes. Thomas and Jabez moved to Connecticut, as did Elizabeth, who joined the church in Preston with her uncles Thomas and Isaac, our ancestor. Mary married an Ipswich man, Caleb^3 Jackson (Caleb^2 Nicholas^1 of Rowley) who had settled in Ashford, Windham Co. CT. They moved to Enfield on the Connecticut River, where he died leaving behind four little children. On 3 Mar 1730/1 the town of Topsfield ordered that the estate of her mother be delivered to her, she being a poor widow. Caleb, by the way, was a grandson of Elizabeth How, executed as a witch on the same day as Sarah (Averill) Wildes.

John Averill, mentioned second in his father's 1690 will, was to be co-executor with his brother Nathaniel and to care for his mother, maintaining the homestead and having first option to buy it from his siblings when the estate was divided. In Feb 1692 these two bought 200 adjacent acres in Topsfield from Gov. Simon Bradstreet's grant. In 1694, as executors, they sold the family's holdings in Ipswich. He was also involved in various purchases and sales of land on his own behalf. The town appointed him fence viewer and in 1691/2 surveyor. On 2 Mar 1696/7 he was appointed Sergeant in the Train Band, and later that year was baptized by Rev. Capen. When his mother Hannah and his brothers and sisters achieved an amicable division of the estate, he retained the homestead, his mother to live with him there; and he stayed there the rest of his life though, as mentioned before, the old house was torn down and a new one built next to it, with a depression

marking the spot still visible in 1900, and some of his descendants still living there. Though trained to do carpentry in his youth, he was usually called a "planter and yeoman."

John was in his mid-forties when he married Anne Greensleet, "both of Topsfield." grand-daughter and namesake of Ann (   )(Greensleet) Pudeator. As an elderly widow of Thomas Greensleet (or Greenslade)(-1674) and Jacob Pudeator (-1682) this sweet old lady was executed for witchcraft in Salem in 1692.

In late 1720 a Committee listed the total payments collected for the minister's rate in the last ten years. It showed that "the widow and John Averil" paid 04-05-06. "The widow" was Anne (not Hannah, though some confusing records equate Hannah with Ann). He died in June 1720. The couple had six children, the youngest, Abigail, being a little over a month old. He left a considerable estate.

Nathaniel Averill was the most prosperous of the older brothers. He seems to have followed in his father's footsteps in his skill as a millwright and carpenter, and was, therefore, willed the shop tools but with instructions to let the others use them so long as they remained together. In some way not explained he acquired his Uncle Thomas's interest in "Mr. Bradstreet's land" besides having, with his brother John, purchased 200 acres from that family. It was due to his uncle that he was able to partake in several Topsfield land divisions.* Town records show his performance as constable, road surveyor, tithing man and juror.

On 4 June 1696 Samuel Symonds Sr. of Boxford, John and Jacob Towne; and John, Nathaniel & Job Averill of Topsfield, purchased from Thomas Putnam eight acres of upland, swamp, and marsh on both sides of Ipswich River in the part of town that eventually became Middleton. Job and John were farmers. Nathaniel, being a millwright, built a millhouse on the river, and operated the first sawmill on it. There had previously been a gristmill (not clear whether it was waterpowered) in the area, operated by Job Averill and Symonds, but they sold it in 1702.**

Besides sawing lumber, water power was used by Averill for "turnery." (See the photograph of a chair on a following page as a sample of his turnery, or lathe work.) An old account kept by one of his customers, John Gould, an early weaver by trade, shows that in 1721 he purchased "pulley blocks for his loom" and a "wheel" for spinning linen at 8 shillings, and another for spinning wool at 6s 6d from Nathaniel Averill. The informant continues: ***

> "Averill was born in 1664 and has been known to history heretofore as a carpenter and as a partner with his brothers in the operation of the two family sawmills and a gristmill on Mile Brook in Topsfield. The entries quoted above now establish for the first time that he was the member of this famous woodworking family who

---

*History of Topsfield pages 34, 54-5. 59, 67, 69-70

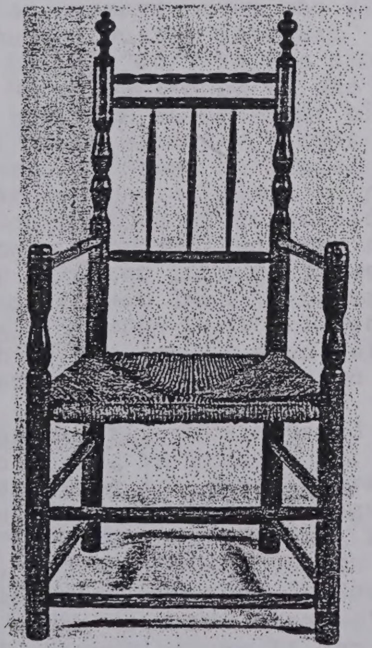
**EIHC 99:338-9 article, "Water Mills of Middleton

***ibid 105:45-6

> did the "turnery." This suggests that a chair which has descended in the Averill family to the present owner (through Isaac, our ancestor, who took it to Connecticut with him) may have been made by Nathaniel Averill rather than his father William, with whom it has been associated. Nathaniel Averill never refers to himself as a turner, or a chair-maker. In his will, dated April 1741, he passes on his "shop tools, that is Carpenters and Joyners tools," to his sons, Jacob and Jeremiah, just as his father had passed his tools on to him in 1691. Nathaniel Averill died in 1751."

The 1710-1720 minister's rate shows this family paying 06-07-09. His first wife, Sarah Howlett (-1729) was mother of all his seven children, who were well provided for in his estate. Besides the tools of his trade, Jacob and Jeremiah received "my two guns and my sword."

Below, photocopy and description of the Averill chair, taken from Essex Institutes Historical Collections periodical, is shown. It is still in Litchfield Co. Connecticut, in possession of our Isaac's descendants. Though the style is of an early period, isn't it lovely? One would surmise that it was made by Nathaniel, but how do they know for sure that his little brother Isaac, noted in his time as an "ingenious carpenter," and constructor of magnificent meetinghouses, did not make it in his youth using Nathaniel's equipment?



Armchair, associated with William Averill, Topsfield, 1680's.

Material: Oak.

Features: The sausage turning of the top rail, the bold finials, and the double vase turnings of the back posts which are echoed by the single turnings of the front arm supports are all unusual features in this chair. The bottom of the feet have been pieced out where rockers were added later. H. 48½", W. 24", D. 18".

Comments: Carver armchairs with North Shore histories are rare indeed, since this type was favored in southern Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and Connecticut. This chair is unlike examples made in those areas. It was owned by Isaac Averill, who was born in Topsfield in 1680. He was a carpenter and housewright, and moved to Rhode Island and Connecticut where he died around 1750. The chair, with its light turnings in the back, would seem to date in the 1680's. Isaac's father William Averill (c. 1632-1691) moved from Ipswich to Topsfield in 1663. He served as a surveyor and commissioner for the town, but his trade was that of a joiner-carpenter. In his inventory, taken on April 16, 1691, two of the twelve lines refer to his trade:

Item tables chests boxes & other lumber
Item Carpenters tooles Joiners tools & //other //tools.

He left these tools and his shop to his son Nathaniel.

Thus, there are grounds for at least an association with William Averill as the turner of the chair, which is owned by a descendant. *Privately owned.*

AVERILL FAMILY

Job Averill received a good inheritance in the mutual agreement including, with younger brother Paul, his father's grist mill with house and barn, located on both sides of the Ipswich River in that part of Topsfield which became Middleton. Grist mills were very essential in the early days and millers were usually influential men. When the land was divided with his brother, he took the land on the South side of the river and Paul the land on the North. Records about him mostly involve numerous real estate deals, occasionally in association with Paul.

He was married in 1703 to Susanna Brown, and on 30 June 1706 this couple along with his mother Hannah were received into the Topsfield Church. It is believed that Susannah was descended from John^1 and Nathaniel^2 Brown of Ipswich, who are our branch's ancestors and whose descendants went to the same part of Connecticut where they married into our line there. In the 1710-20 minister's salary, Job was rated at 03-05-04. Job died in 1730 and his wife three years later. They had seven children, one of the sons eventually becoming Clara Avery's ancestor.

Hannah Averill the oldest daughter, never married and must have lived with her mother and brother John. She was mentioned in the mutual division of the estate. The date of her death is said by some reporters to have been 14 May 1737, at the Preston, CT home of her younger brother Thomas. This needs verification.

Ebenezer Averill was a husbandman who lived all his life in Topsfield. He was baptized as an adult in May 1697. In 30 November following he married Susanna Hovey who died two years later. He then married Mehitable^3 Foster (Abraham^2 Reginald^1 of Exeter, Devonshire, England) On 5 March 1706/7 he was chosen Topsfield selectman. He died in his late 40's, mentioned by the honorific title of "esquire," but not much has been reported of his career, maybe due to his early death. The 1710-20 minister's rate for this family was 06-15-03. The older brothers John and Nathaniel were entitled, in the names of their father and uncle Thomas to periodic divisions in reserve lands belonging to the town of Topsfield. As of 1720 after the minister's rate had been computed, younger men who owned at least 40 acres of land after 1716 (40 in number) were allowed to participate in the division of what common land there was remaining. Thus Ebenezer, Job, and younger brother Paul all received some of it. It is said that the worth of the land turned out to be more than they had paid in tithes. Ebenezer sired ten children of the two marriages.

Thomas Averill participated in the mutual agreement on 4 Feb 1701/2. While living in Preston CT, on 30 May 1724 he and his brother Isaac acknowledged the same before John Brown, "Justice of ye peace." He was first of the siblings to go there, where he married "27 Jenewery" 1701/2, Mary Baker. She joined the First Church of Preston in 1703, and the Second Church (now in Griswold) in 1720; Thomas in 1721. The location was then in New London County, where it is recorded that John Brown sold him a parcel of land in Preston on the east side of the Pachoag River on 15 Sep 1703, entered into the record March 1706.

The deed specifies the bounds but not the acreage, which must have been considerable, for he deeded some of it to his brother Isaac on 28 March 1703/4; 120 acres to Hopestill Tyler 5 April that year; 32 acres to John Hall in 1712; and yet more to Gates & Clark in 1718 and still had plenty left over.

In 1733 John Cook of Preston for 63 pounds 12 shillings deeded to Thomas and John (his son) Averill 100 acres on the south side of the "Paacchog" River bounded by Edward Cogswell's land (another of our ancestors). The next day Thomas and John Averill sold for 240 pounds land bound by Benjamin Tyler, Cogswell, and Averill lands.

Thomas died before 11 Nov 1734, age 62. (If his sister Hannah lived with him, she outlived him by 2½ years.) The widow Mary outlived him by 20 years. They had nine children, one of whom was named for his mother Hannah, but she was married by then and not easily confused with his sister. (Evidently at some point there were those who thought he had married an Abigail Cogswell in Ipswich in 1712, but that must have been another man as the records are clear that Mary was his only wife.)

Abigail Averill was about 16 when her father passed away. In 1699 she married Jonathan Bishop, a saddler of Salem, and they lived there for four years before moving south to Rehoboth, Bristol Co. MA (founded by the Plymouth Colony before it merged with the MA Bay Colony) to be near his father's family. While we are not descended from the Bishop Family, it merits more space than ordinarily would be alloted to a non-ancestral family because it points out the mutual sufferings in the Salem witch hysteria of the Bishop, Averill, and Wildes clans.

Jonathan's parents were Edward^{2}Bishop (Edward^1) and Sarah Wildes, daughter of John Wildes and his first wife, & stepdauthter of the former Sarah Averill, his second. Edward and Sarah Bishop were both arrested in spring 1692 and confined to Boston jail until they made their escape on October 4th (being less infirm than many victims and better able to get away, and also having clandestine outside help). Their property had been confiscated by the magistrates but even so they had been expected to pay the jailer for their keep--a custom all over America until well after the Colonial days! But they were well received at Rehoboth where people didn't much cotton to the idea of witches, at least based on spectral evidence. Their other son Samuel was eventually able to secure the release of their property after the furor had burned out and the public came to its senses.

Sarah's father, John Wildes, had been a rather powerful man. Enemies who had an axe to grind thus went after him indirectly through his wife Sarah Averill and his daughter Sarah Bishop. But what of her husband, Edward Bishop, Jr.? It goes even deeper, for his stepmother, Bridget Bishop, was the very first "witch" to be hanged. She was a colorful person, and more has been written about her than most of the other victims, and telling some highlights of her life may help the reader understand the agonies our many-great Aunt Sarah Averill Wildes suffered through. See the photocopied data on another page.

AVERILL FAMILY

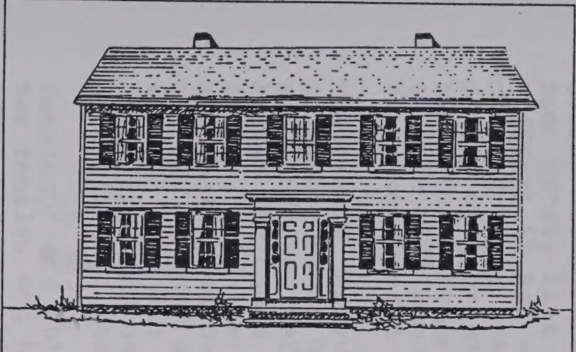
See cross-wise, below. This material, taken from three different sources, tells about Bridget Bishop, unfortunate first witchcraft victim hanged in 1692. This is meant to serve also as a memorial to Sarah (Averill) Wildes and others subjected to the same fate.

Only one of the imprisoned, Bridget Bishop, was brought to trial at this session. Bishop had been arrested on April 19, 1692. This first trial was a test case, and a large number of accusers and accusations were brought against her. She was charged with such things as losses her neighbors suffered in their cattle and poultry or with overturning their carts. Testimony against her included spectral evidence given by John Louder of Salem, aged 32. He stated that on waking in the dead of night he did clearly see Bridget Bishop, or her likeness, sitting on his stomach. Two workman testified that they found puppets in her cellar. The puppets were made of hog bristles and rags, and stuck with headless pins. Upon search a witchmark, or "tet," was found upon her body. Cotton Mather wrote, "There was little occasion to prove the witchcraft, it being evident and notorious to all beholders."[140] The jury found her guilty, and she was sentenced to die. To the end she did not make the slightest confession of anything relating to witchcraft. The court adjourned to June 30.

In Salem prison whispered voices passed the word; Bridget was going to hang. A terrible shudder went through the inmates; the prison walls seemed to reel around them. The few chained in view of the narrow slot-like windows could glimpse a little patch of sky; the rest were shrouded in gloom. The night before the execution, an ominous silence fell. With the hangman close at hand, the prisoners "passed a miserable night, so full of ugly sights, of ghastly dreams."[141] In the morning, June 10, 1692, the sheriff entered the prison and took Bridget away. Her legs made lame by the fetters, she stumbled painfully through the prison door into the open air.

Sheriff George Corwin pushed her into a horse-drawn cart and forced her to stand so the hundreds of spectators could see her better. A company of Salem militia marched to the fife and drum. John Hathorne, on horseback, was a prominent figure in the procession which followed her to the place of execution. As the cart passed the Salem meetinghouse, Bridget looked in that direction. The Rev. Cotton Mather later wrote that a board on the inside of the building broke from the heavy nails which held it and flew to the opposite wall with a crash that could be heard throughout Salem.[142] He intended his words to record for all time the power of her witchcraft.

Outside town the cart turned from the main street into a narrow track that led up to a rocky mound. This was Gallows Hill. With three fathoms of hemp rope, Bridget Bishop was hanged. Her body was cut down and thrown into a shallow, unmarked grave which had been dug among the rocks close by. Out of her grave, tradition has it, grew a wild red rose.



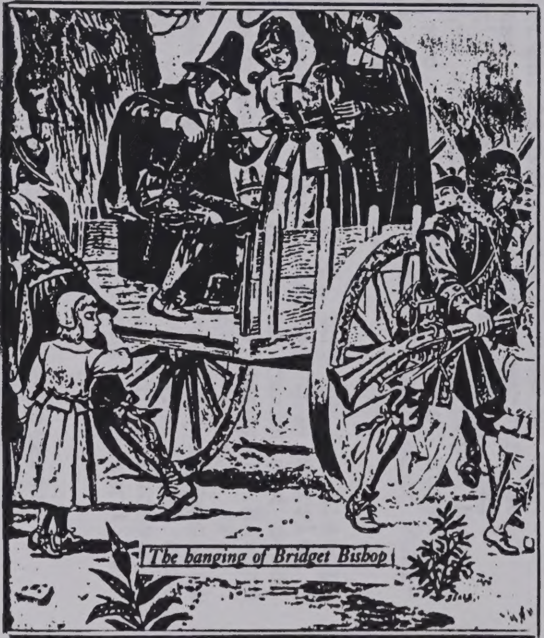
Bridget Bishop House

18. THE BRIDGET BISHOP HOUSE

Although not the first accused, Bridget Bishop was the first to be tried and executed. She was hanged on June 10, 1692.

She ran a tavern near the Salem and Beverly line had been accused of witchcraft years earlier.

The home at 238 Conant Street, Danvers where she lived in 1692 is today privately owned.



The hanging of Bridget Bishop

AVERILL FAMILY

Edward[1] Bishop came from England ca. 1639. He was a sawyer & farmer and married ca 1646 Sarah (Moore?) who was mother of his children. After her death he married ca 1680 Bridget (Playfer)(Wasselbe) Oliver, widow of Samuel Wasselby (-1666) and Thomas Oliver (-1679).* During her marriage to Mr. Oliver her only daughter was born and soon after, like a great many Puritan ladies, she opened up an ordinary in her home. "The success and levity of her venture soon created petty jealousies and suspicions among her neighbors--part of the antagonism stemmed from envy on the part of wives whose husbands found Bridget a jolly lady who, besides serving ales, supplied the men with games of what we now call shuffleboard." Many dour Puritains considered games of any kind to be sinful.

There were jealous whispers after Mr. Oliver died, but Edward Bishop, probably one of her customers, discounted them. After they married she continued her trade and he his. He improved both farms and sold lumber for homes and ships. We know what happened to Bridget; Edward died in 1705--he may have married a widow Cash in 1693. Edward Jr. apparently learned the tavern-innkeeping business from his stepmother and, as we have seen, was arrested with his wife Sarah about the same time as Bridget; but being younger they had the strength to escape after spending half a year in gaol. Most of their children went to Rehoboth with them.

Jonathan[3] and Abigail (Averill) Bishop remained in Salem nearer to her family, and his trade as a saddler seems not to have suffered. After the Averill heirs divided the estate, younger brothers and sisters became financially able to strike out on their own and move away. Others in her family accompanied this couple when in 1703 they went to Rehoboth to be near his relatives. By 1724, however, they were in nearby Norton where her sister, Mary Titus, resided. They had at least four children.

Paul Averill was about 20 when Rev. Capen baptized him and his siblings. In the division of the estate he and his brother Job received land on both sides of the Ipswich River and a gristmill in present Middleton, and he took the north half. He married Sarah Andrews in 1706 and in Feb 1707 they joined the church. She was the mother of all five children. The 1710-20 minister's rate shows them paying 03-02-09 and he was one of the 40 new men to share in division of the remainder of the Topsfield common lands.

---

*The American Genealogist 64:207 reveals Bridget's Norfolk, England background. There are several Bishop Genealogies but they do not all agree on details. Some are reluctant to admit there was a witch in the family.
The materials in the illustration come from the following sources:
The narrative on the left-hand side is is from Salem Witchcraft by Enders A. Robinson pp 108-9, Heritage Books (1992)
The sketch of the "Bridget Bishop House" is from a tourism bureau pamphlet distributed in Essex Co. MA during the 1992 Witch Trials tricentennial.
"The Hanging of Bridget Bishop" illustration is from The Salem Witchcraft Trials by Karen Zeinert, page 52 (1989)

In 1736after Sarah died, Paul married Mary Symonds of Wenham. The genealogy shows the transcripts of a number of real estate deals in which he was involved. After Middleton was set aside from Topsfield and a new church built, he was chosen Constable of Middleton in Feb 1733/4. On 8 April 1735 he and a few other family heads were permitted "to build a back seat under ye windows in ye West Gallery in our Meeting House" in Middleton.

He and brother Job had bought 40 additional acres on both sides of the river and divided them in 1709. In April 1718 they divided still more land they held in common in Boxford and Topsfield, and some of it wound up in brother Nathaniel's hands. In old age Paul and Mary moved all the way to Killingly, Windham Co. Connecticut, not far from the Rhode Island border where they had purchased at least 104 acres and maybe more, but early records in that area are scanty and in poor condition. They were there by 1747, and were admitted to the church there in 1753. When their youngest son Joseph came of age in February 1756 they made him a deed of gift of 100 acres of land there. By that time he would have been at least 79. It is presumed they died not long after, probably at Killingly.

Mary Averill, the baby of the family, would have been still little when her father died, and she lived with her mother Hannah and uncle John. She was baptized in spring 1697 with the others. Perhaps she was too young to go with her sister Abigail and brother Isaac to Rehoboth, but it is obvious she visited them there for on 16 Feb 1709 she was married by Rev. Capen in Topsfield Church, to Silas Titus Jr. of Rehoboth, born 1683.

She and Silas later moved to Norton MA, not far from Rehoboth, where they had four children, little Silas III among them. She and Silas as well as her Sister Abigail and Jonathan Bishop were in Norton in 1724 when they signed a notarized copy of the division of the Averill estate. She was yet a young woman when she died on 9 Feb 1729/30, and that fall her widower remarried. But after telling so much about Abigail's inlaws, telling a little about the unusual Tituses might help.

The earliest found progenitor was Silius Tito, a prominent Italian member of the "Salter's Company," a London guild in the time of Henry VIII. The family multiplied rapidly and spread out, establishing trading posts in various localities. The first to America was Robert Titus (1600-1672) from St. Albans to Weynouth MA, then with grown sons to Rehoboth but later to Long Island, leaving behind son John and grandson Silas, Mary's father-in-law. (Other Tituses of Rehoboth married into our Averill ancestral Bowen Family.)*

---

*History of the Titus-Capron Family, Vol. I pages 25-29 by Elroy Wilson Titus (1984)
Printed abstracts of Bristol Co. MA records and local histories of Early Rehoboth tell a little more, and also mention the Bishops.

ISAAC AND FAMILY

Isaac^3 Averill (William^{2}William^1) 13th of the 14 children of William Jr. and Hannah (Jackson) Averill, was born in Topsfield MA on 10 Nov 1680. He was named for his 8-year-old brother Isaac who had died earlier that year. His father died when he was ten. Except for the eldest brother William III, the rest of the family continued living in the old homestead for many years, for the older brothers were late to marry. Nathaniel, first to marry about seven years later, settled adjacent where he was a cabinetmaker who ran a sawmill on the Ipswich River, where he also owned a nice farm. John, who eventually received the homestead, prospered as a farmer-carpenter.

All of them were quite literate for their times, and saw to it that Isaac was, as well, and encouraged him to develop his natural talent in the carpentry business. As related before, when he was 17 all of them were baptized by the local parson, Rev. Joseph Capen. The year he came of age, he being the youngest son, his mother decided it was time to divide the parental estate, thus enabling all of them to invest in homesteads of their own. The "mutual division"of the Averill estate," printed in full by Clara Avery, was worded very carefully, but still leaves a lot of questions unanswered. It implies that all of the children received a suitable share--but does not specify what the portions of William III and the half-dozen younger children consisted of. Real estate, described in detail, went to John, Nathaniel, Ebenezer and Job, which the latter shared with Paul. William III did not sign and it·is difficult to see how he benefited, since he continued to live in poverty on the half-acre lot near the Topsfield church. The rest must have received cash settlements which they could apply to land of their own.

By that time Essex County was running out of farmland for new families, and people had for some time been scattering out in all directions. besides the Rehoboth area, one popular destination was a sparsely-populated area near the eastern Connecticut border above Stonington. That town, with its harbor on the seacoast, set off from Rhode Island by the Paucatuck River, had been settled in 1653, mostly by families from Rehoboth, and people from there were now moving up to the new town of Preston via the Thames/Quinnebaug River system to meld in with settlers from Massachusetts--like our Browns and Cogswells from Ipswich, and another contingent from Andover that included Hopestill Tyler and his extended family. (At least seven Tylers had been arrested for witchcraft in 1692 but finally spared when Governor Phipps intervened in the trials, putting an end to convictions based on spectral evidence alone.*)

Thomas Averill was in Preston by the time of his marriage in "Jenewery" 1702 and by 1703 had purchased land from John Brown. The year after that he sold some of it to Isaac and some to Hopestill Tyler, already living in the area. The land was described as "on the Pachoag River."

---

*The Tyler Genealogy - Descendants of Job Tyler of Andover by Willard Tyler Brigham (1917); also, though less detailed about early Tylers is American Backlogs, The Story of Gertrude Tyler compiled by her daughter, Mrs. Theodore Roosevelt et al (1928).

AVERILL FAMILY

It might be helpful, as our narrative continues, to refer back occasionally to the following data as presented by Clara Avery, rearranged to chronological order, but book and pages abbreviated and "2" substituted for "ii," etc. Wording of the abstracts was taken verbatim--you will notice that many important details were not given. Her language was obscure so that I may have misunderstood book & page nos. for the first three entries. In colonial America, the letters "u" and "v" were usually transposed, but the words pronounced as they are today.

Preston, Connecticut, Deed Abstracts

Bk 2 pg 41. Thomas Auerill of Preston deeds land on the Pachoag River in Preston to Isaac Aueriel, March ye 28 in ye yere of our Lord God one thousand seuen hundred and three four and in ye third year of ye Raigne of our souer (sovereign) Lady Quen Ann: /s/Thomas Auerill. wit: John Brown, James (his mark) Tyler.
Bk 1:369?? Isaac Auerell and Jonathan Tracy were witnesses to deed of Joseph Benjamin 24 Jn 1704.
Bk 2:73. Thomas Stanton to Isaac Auerell, 50 acres for £ 8, 1706
Bk 2:140. Nathaniel Tracy to Isaac Iverell for £ 10, land on the Pachoag in Preston (no date or acreage)
Bk 2:415. Isaac Averill of Preston £16.10s sells to John Benjamin land on the Pachoag river 10 Nov 1710.
Bk 3:12. Josiah Harris of Groton CT sells land in Preston to Isaac Avirell of Preston for £58 1712/3
Bk 3:34. Isaac Averill and Jno Cook chosen with Lieut John Brown and sworn by Mr. Daniel Palmer Esqr one of his Majesties Justices of ye pease for ye county of New London for to renew and fix up bounds of a tract of land scituate in Preston Northward from Capt. Wm Billings his dwelling formerly given by Mr. Wm Billings of Stoughton late decd to his dau. Lydia wife of Sam'l Coye....ordered report 24 Jan 1722. (The date sounds out of place, but this shows Isaac acting as a surveyor, more or less, like his father before him.)
Bk 3:36. Isaac Averill of Preston Conn. for £15, sells to jacob Burton....21 Dec 1714. /s/ Isaac Auerill.
Bk 3:37. Isaac Averill to Edward Cogswell for £80...8 Apr 1713.
Bk 3:163. A piece of land laid out to Isaac Auerell by the Surveyors of Preston---140 rods E 36 rods N 140 W & 20 r. S. 16 Dec 1719.
Bk 4:34. Isaac Averill sells land to Samuel Coys 1723.
Bk 4:583. Isaac Averill to Jabez Averill...one of ye sons of my Brother William Auerill of Topsfield in ye county of Essex in the provance of Mass. Bay...aforesaid 1717 Bound to me for more than ten years...about 50 acres. 11 Feb 1729/30.
Bk 5:94. Isaac Averill, House wright, of Preston, deeds land in Preston to his son Samuel 18 Aug 1738.
Bk 5:378. Isaac Averill (of Preston?) to Wm. Denison of N. Stonington for £980, sells him 108 acres more or less with all housing. 23 Aug 1744. /s/ Isaac Averil. wit: Ephraim Smith, William Witter.

Presumably the last entry shows Isaac, now a senior citizen, preparing for the big move to western Connecticut with his sons, but that is getting ahead of the story.

A modern atlas reveals that the Pachoag, which empties into the Quinebaug, is in that part of Preston which became Griswold in 1815, and has since become a recreation area with several lakes. A slice of land on the far eastern side of the township is part of the Pachaug State Forest--which is mostly in adjacent Voluntown.

An 1819 gazetteer says that much of the land along the river was marshy, and the stream sluggish though the section nearest the Quinebaug full of salmon and shad, some of which was marketed, and that the land was very fertile. For a very long time there had been a "turnpike" through the vicinity connecting Norwich CT with Providence RI,* which was so close to Rehoboth that, had Isaac and Thomas wished to visit their sisters Abigail Bishop and Mary Titus, they could have just saddled up their horses and taken the turnpike. Or they could have boarded a boat at Stonington.

Isaac, like his father before him, was a self-confident building contractor. Partly to promote business we suspect, he mingled from the time he got there with leading families of the Preston community, and since his oldest daughter later married Daniel Parke, grandson of the very most prominent first settler, a short review of some events during the areas first years may help show how the Averills fitted in. Starting back in 1637, a usurping Algonquin tribe from upper New York calling themselves Pequots (the "fierce ones") was terrorizing the peaceful local tribes and what few white traders there were in the vicinity (Jonathan Brewster, for instance). Though himself originally one of the invaders who had assumed dominion in the locality, Chief Uncas and his more moderate followers had broken off and were now calling themselves Mohegans. Native tribes joined in a coalition to petition English colonists to help remove the menace, in return for land. The war was fought. The few Pequots not exterminated or sold into slavery in the West Indes fled to New York where they were treated roughly by the Iroquois, and Uncas granted land. The seacoast Pequot village became New London in 1646, shire town of New London County. Stonington a little to the east was settled soon after.

Land for Norwich, the first wilderness settlement away from the coast, was purchased from Uncas and his two sons by Thomas Leffingwell, John Mason, James Fitch and others in 1659, with its bounds extending at first east of the Thames-Quinebaug River into what later became Preston. Though land over there was very fertile, few colonists ventured so far due to fear of the Indians. Four who took the chance and thrived were Jonathan & Thomas Tracy, Leffingwell, and Samuel Fitch, though taming the wilderness was was very hard. (These men had servants.) After King Phillips War in 1675/6, more families moved there, facing lesser hardship. All these hardy folk traveled 20 miles and more through woods and across the river to worship at Norwich every Sabbath Day!! **

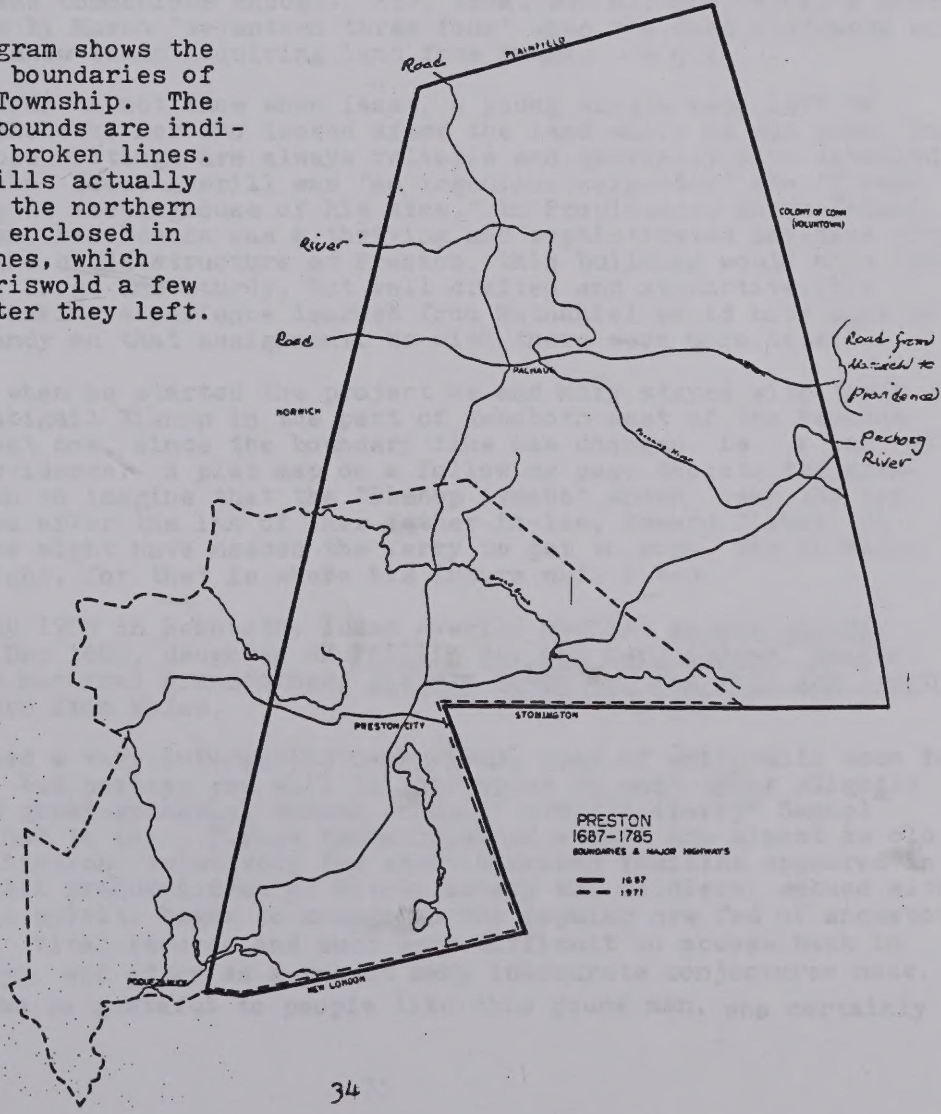
---

*A Gazetteer of the States of Connecticut and Rhode Island, page 153 by John Pease et al (1819) reprint Heritage Books

**Some but no means all of the material on this page and next is from Preston in Review by Preston Historical Society (1971).

A decade later 25 or 30 families were there. They petitioned the General Court at Hartford for permission to start a town. There was no such thing in pioneer Connecticut as a town without a minister, for church and government were as one, the same meetinghouse serving both purposes. On 15 Feb 1686, the Court granted "to Mr. Thomas Parke, Tho Tracy and Tho Rose and the rest of the farmers...to lay out a plantation and to arrive at such capacity as to maintain a minister." The next March Chief Owaneco, son of Uncas, deeded the tract, which became the 36th town in the Colony of Connecticut, and received its name from the place in England the Parke family came from--Preston, Suffolk County, England. The first town meeting was held that month, the first order of business to choose a recorder (town clerk). Jonathan Tracy was selected, followed by other officers and a tax rate to pay the minister. (Either this man or his son of the same name witnessed a deed with Isaac Averill in June 1704.)

This diagram shows the original boundaries of Preston Township. The present bounds are indicated by broken lines. Our Averills actually lived in the northern section, enclosed in solid lines, which became Griswold a few years after they left.


Road
PLAINFIELD
River
COLONY OF CONN (VOLUNTOWN)
Road
PALMAUG
Road from Norwich to Providence
NORWICH
Pachaug River
Pachoag River
PRESTON CITY
STONINGTON
PRESTON
1687–1785
BOUNDARIES & MAJOR HIGHWAYS
1687
1971
POQUETANUCK
NEW LONDON

AVERILL FAMILY

The first few temporary ministers were boarded by settlers; a Mr. Hale served a few years. "In 1693 a tax was laid to build a meetinghouse and work started. It was 35 futte long, 25 futte wide and 16 futte between the joynts," plain, crudely constructed with a steep roof and few windows. Each family furnished its own bench to sit on. This would have been the church Thomas and Isaac Averill attended for some years, though as you can see from the map it was quite some distance away, at Preston City whereas they lived at Pachoag. Arrangements for a rectory and a permanent minister followed the construction of the meetinghouse, and Rev. Salmon Treat was ordained in 1696. Records show that Thomas's wife joined in 1703, but are silent about the others, though they were also members. Thus we see that by the time the brothers arrived, though there was yet much work to be done to refine the community, the building, crude and inconvenient to reach though it may have been, was there, and it was commodious enough. Rev. Treat was already tutoring some students by March "seventeen three four" when the deed abstracts on page 32 show Isaac acquiring land from Thomas 1703/4.

The records do not show when Isaac, a young single man, left to go to Rehoboth, nor who looked after the land while he was gone, but Dow, whose writings are always reliable and generally more detailed, states that Isaac Averill was "an ingenious carpenter" who "framed the largest meetinghouse of his time," in Providence, Rhode Island. Even then, Providence was a thriving and sophisticated maritime city. Unlike the crude structure at Preston, this building would have been not only large and sturdy, but well crafted and attractive. The cabinet-making experience learned from Nathaniel would have come in quite handy on that assignment. We wish there were more details.

Perhaps when he started the project he and Mary stayed with their sister Abigail Bishop in the part of Rehoboth east of the Seekonk River that now, since the boundary line has changed, is a part of East Providence. A plat map on a following page depicts the area. It is fun to imagine that the "Bishop Avenue" shown near the top was named after the inn of her father-in-law, Edward Bishop, Jr. Though he might have needed the ferry to get to work, the location seems right, for that is where his future wife lived.

Cn 16 May 1709 in Rehoboth, Isaac Averill married Esther Walker, born 21 Dec 1686, daughter of Phillip Jr. and Mary (Bowen) Walker. Esther's maternal grandfather, Richard Bowen Sr. and wife Ann (Born?) came there from Wales.

Esther had a very interesting background, some of which will soon be related, but perhaps you will be interested in what their slightly mixed-up great-grandson, Samuel Johnson^{6} Averill (Perry^{5} Samuel^{4} Isaac^{3}) had to say. Though genealogies of a sort are almost as old as civilization, relatively few about American families appeared in print until grandchildren of Revolutionary War soldiers, embued with patriotic spirit, began to engage in the popular new fad of ancestor tracing. Vital records and such were difficult to access back in those days, and often as a result many inaccurate conjectures made, but we can be grateful to people like this young man, who certainly

knew a wealth of information about the previous two and maybe three generations if they had access to Bible records. Those early writings are of particular value because they cover the obscure years following the Revolution when families started milling about in new frontiers, distant from courthouses, often too fatigued from clearing raw land to register family records that had been required by law in more settled home towns. Some of them moved often and seemingly unpredictably over great distances, as some of our line of later Averills did.

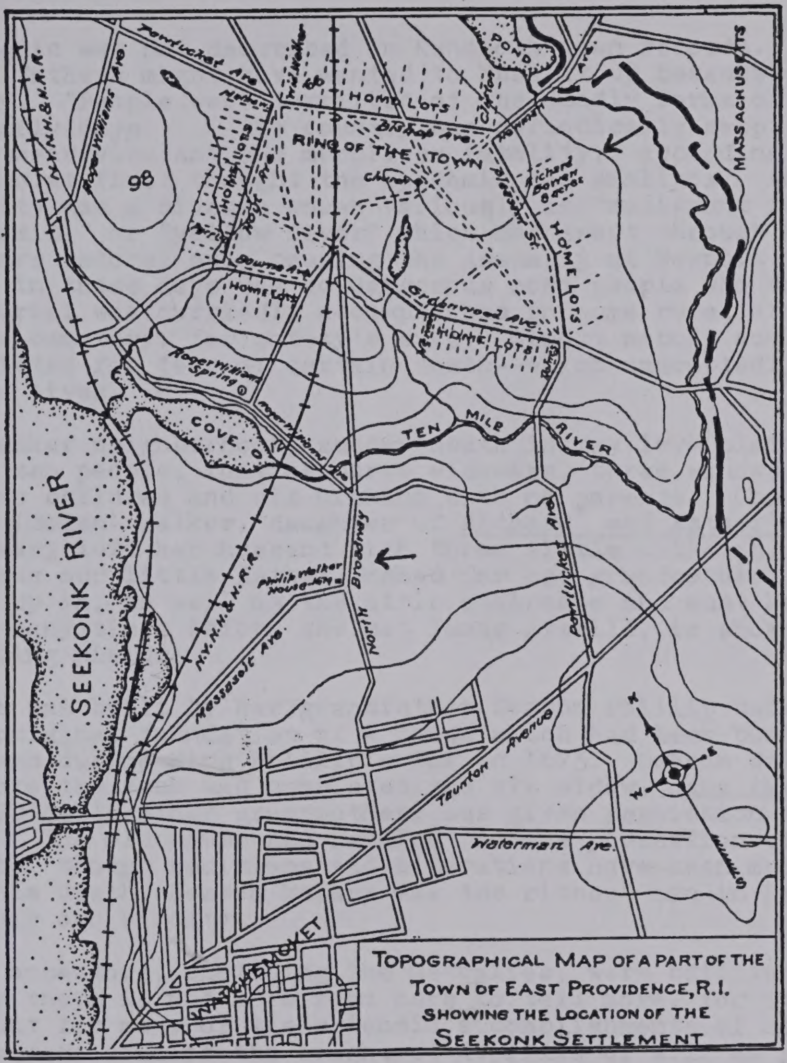
Though families with a many-great uncle who passed his findings down to posterity are at a distinct advantage over those who are unable to establish a bridge to the past because records weren't kept, there is often a fly in the ointment that can befuddle the unwary. In their zeal to link up to the distant past, many people, especially those of means, became easy prey for "experts" who, for a fee, duped their clients by digging up accurate-sounding but fictitious royal descents and so on. (That happened to our Esther's Bowen family!) It was about that period in time that several fine organizations like the New England Historic Genealogical Society stepped in to fill a genuine need for accurate data.

Mr. Averill, writing around 1850 or so, after having done some preliminary search, shared the same opinion as other Connecticut Averills when he reported that his great-grandfather Isaac Averill was one of three brothers who came there from Milford Haven, Wales. Though that may sound strange to us, like so many old family traditions, there is truth in what he said. (1) Isaac was not Welsh, but Esther was partly so. (2) Three brothers, Isaac, Thomas and Paul, came to Connecticut more-or-less together, but not from Wales. (3) Two of Isaac and Esther's sons married into the Cogswell family, which you will soon meet. The ship that brought them from Wiltshire, not Wales, in 1635 was becalmed for two months off the coast of Milford Haven awaiting favorable winds for its sails before they could continue. Ironically, a noted local historian picked up our cousin's information and used it in a then-popular book still being circulated to this day, perhaps confusing more readers even now.*

Although the Averill Genealogy states (as was once believed because of the late date of her baptism) that Esther (Walker) Averill was daughter of Phillip Walker Jr's second wife Sarah, it has since been proved that her mother was really the first young wife, Mary (Bowen) Walker, who died at age 28 in "the great Rehoboth epidemic" on 04 May 1694, leaving behind three motherless children. Esther, the oldest, was then 7½ years old.

---

*Early Puritan Settlers of the Colony of Connecticut pages 86-7, by Royal Hinman (1852)
Also see History of Ancient Woodbury, Connecticut by Cothren (1854)


Pawtucket Ave
N.Y.N.H.&H.R.R.
Roger Williams Ave
98
66
HOME LOTS
RING OF THE TOWN
Bishop Ave
Church
Richard Bowen 8 acres
POND
MASSACHUSETTS
Pleasant St.
HOME LOTS
Bourne Ave
Greenwood Ave
Roger Williams Spring
COVE
TEN MILE RIVER
SEEKONK RIVER
Philip Walker House 1674
North Broadway
Massasoit Ave
Pawtucket Ave
Taunton Avenue
Waterman Ave
WATCHEMOKET
N
S
E
W

Topographical Map of a part of the Town of East Providence, R.I. Showing the location of the Seekonk Settlement

Western part of Old Rehoboth in Bristol County, Plymouth Colony at first but taken over by MA before the Bishops & Averills arrived.

Present Rhode Is. border, broken line.

The above map is taken from Early Rehoboth a 4-Volume set of books by Richard LeBaren Bowen, recommended reading about the Walker and Bowen families and others. Bowen was not only a meticulous historian but a marvellous spinner of stories concerning the early families. Sad to say, most Bowen genealogies are sketchy or inaccurate, and often report a fictitious royal lineage ascribed to our Richard the immigrant. I have to confess having been taken in by that for a few years myself, and reconstructing royal ancestral charts based on the so-called lineage. Perhaps it was not all in vain, for one can learn a lot of medieval history that way. Actually, the young Richard supposed to have been our Richard died as a child in Wales! An accurate Walker lineage is given in Memorial of the Walkers of the Old Plymouth Colony by J. B. R. Walker (1861) a very old book remarkable for the age in which it was written.

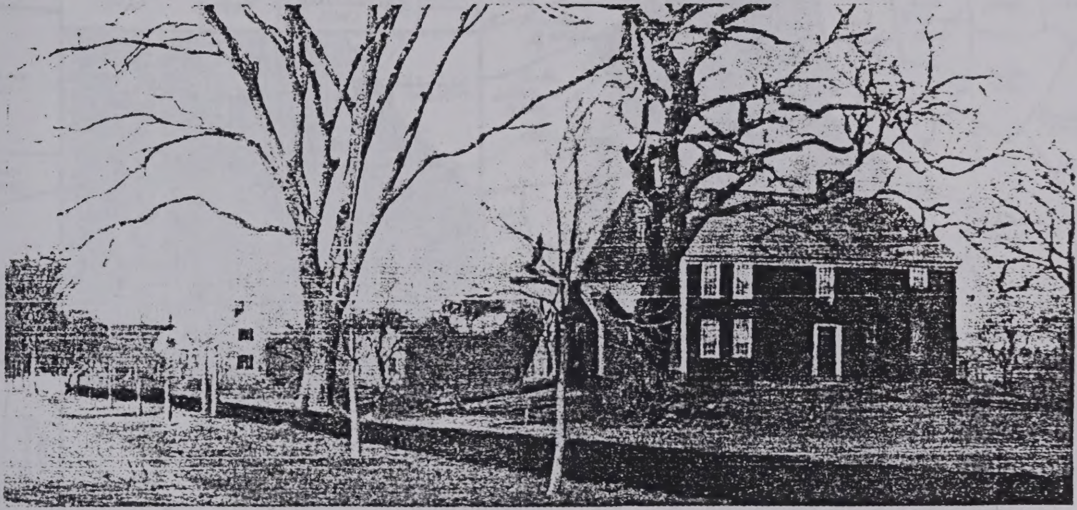
The epidemic was not described in Rehoboth town records. In fact, the town fathers might have wanted to hush it up because of bad publicity. "People were terrified of the deadly forms of diseases in the early days .. the country was periodically swept by, appalling in their virulent and merciless fatality," according to Bowen. Historians at first thought the epidemic was smallpox. Another possibility was a disease known variously as "malignant fever," "black vomit," or "yellow fever" which had swept through Rhode Island three years before, even causing the Assembly at Newport to shut down. Smallpox in those days was so dangerous most people who contacted it died. Burial was hurriedly accomplished in some rural area rather than in a cemetery, for safety's sake. Almost nobody would go near the afflicted for fear of certain death--which undoubtedly did save countless lives.

In the Walker neighborhood, sudden death in May 1694 claimed the lives of ten people, leaving three widowers, three widows, seven motherless children and six orphans with no parents. One of the dead was Mary (Bowen) Walker, daughter of Richard^{2} and Esther^{2}(Sutton) Bowen. Mary left her husband with three little children, the oldest of whom was our little Esther, named for her grandmother. The house she grew up in, as well as the attic staircase she must have run up and down many times before she met Isaac Averill, is shown in the accompanying picture.

The house was built by her grandfather Deacon Phillip Walker, Senior, over an original foundation of a house which had been burned down by the Indians during King Phillip's War in 1675. Deacon Walker died in 1679 before the task was completed and his widow, Jane (Metcalfe) Walker, Esther's other grandmother, was given permission to finish the task. The old house has remained in the possession of descendants ever since, though additions and alterations have been made. At the time of his death, Deacon Walker was the richest man in Rehoboth, through his own efforts.

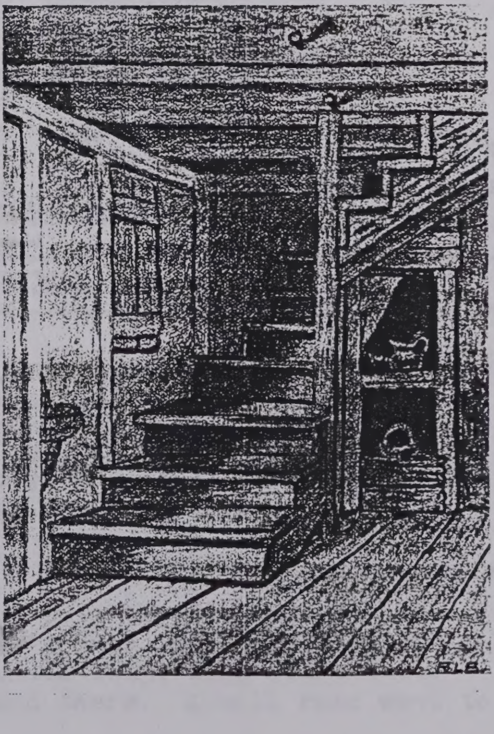
Esther's ancestors, including the Metcalfes, were brilliant, and it is a pity there is not more room here to tell more, for the genes may account for many of the splendid accomplishments of her Averill sons, who were some of the brightest Averills of all, as you will see, Simple mathematics should have cued earlier historians that Mary, rather than Phillip Jr's second wife Sarah, was Esther's mother, for the simple reason that Sarah's first child, Sarah Jr., was born on 8 Jan 1695/6. A child younger than that would have been far too young to marry Isaac Averill in 1709. We suspect they were confused because Esther was baptized on 4 July 1697 rather than infancy (much like the Averill children). Many people believe that the Bowens, being Welsh and living near Baptist Rhode Island, and other nearby Baptist settlements in the area, were also Baptists--many of their descendants were. Sarah, who belonged to the Puritan Congregational Church, had all her stepchildren baptised along with her own.

There was a tradition in the Averill family, and also among those of Isaac's nephew and apprentice, Jabez Averill's descendants, that they lived in Rehoboth for some years, and that Isaac and Esther's son was born there. I suspect they are correct, but there is no proof.



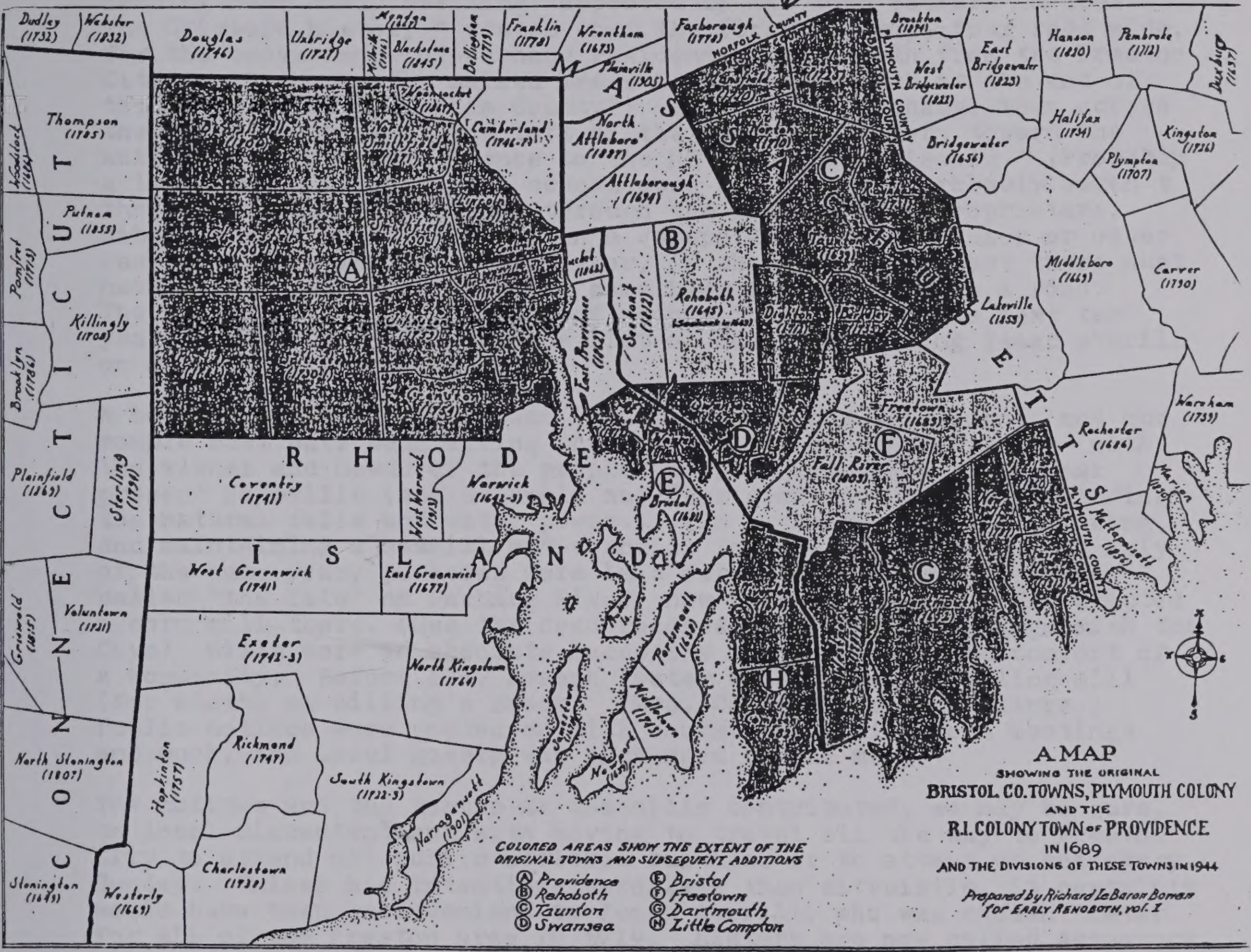
From My Ancestors in America.

Deacon Philip Walker's house, corner of Massasoit Ave. & North Broadway, E. Providence RI, as it appeared in 1890. The house is still standing, and still in the possession of descendants. The right hand half is the original house built by Deacon Walker in 1679; the left hand half was added about a hundred years later. This is the oldest surviving house in Old Rehoboth, built 36 years after the settlement of Seekonk in 1643.



Right- original attic staircase in the old Philip Walker house, home of Mary (Bowen) Walker who died in the epidemic on 8 May 1694. (Pencil sketch-R.L. Bowen, 1892) The ancient staircase was removed in 1899 to provide space for a bathroom.

AVERILL FAMILY


Dudley (1732)
Webster (1832)
Douglas (1746)
Uxbridge (1727)
Millville
Mendon
Blackstone (1845)
Bellingham (1719)
Franklin (1778)
Wrentham (1673)
Plainville (1905)
Foxborough (1778)
NORFOLK COUNTY
PLYMOUTH COUNTY
Brockton (1874)
West Bridgewater (1822)
East Bridgewater (1823)
Hanson (1820)
Pembroke (1712)
Duxbury (1637)
Thompson (1785)
Woodstock
Cumberland (1746-7)
North Attleboro (1887)
Attleborough (1694)
Norton (1710)
Halifax (1734)
Bridgewater (1656)
Kingston (1726)
Plympton (1707)
Putnam (1855)
Pomfret (1713)
Killingly (1708)
Brooklyn (1786)
A
B
Rehoboth (1645)
Seekonk (1812)
East Providence (1862)
Taunton (1639)
C
Middleboro (1669)
Carver (1790)
Lakeville (1853)
Wareham (1739)
Rochester (1686)
Freetown (1683)
F
Fall River (1803)
D
E
Bristol (1681)
Plainfield (1869)
Sterling (1794)
Coventry (1741)
West Warwick (1913)
Warwick (1642-3)
RHODE ISLAND
CONNECTICUT
MASSACHUSETTS
West Greenwich (1741)
East Greenwich (1677)
Griswold (1815)
Voluntown (1721)
Exeter (1742-3)
North Kingstown (1674)
Portsmouth (1638)
G
Mattapoisett (1857)
Marion
PLYMOUTH COUNTY
H
Middletown (1743)
Jamestown
Newport
North Stonington (1807)
Richmond (1747)
Hopkinton (1757)
South Kingstown (1722-3)
Narragansett (1901)
Charlestown (1738)
Stonington (1649)
Westerly (1669)
N
S
E
W

A MAP
SHOWING THE ORIGINAL
BRISTOL CO. TOWNS, PLYMOUTH COLONY
AND THE
R.I. COLONY TOWN OF PROVIDENCE
IN 1689
AND THE DIVISIONS OF THESE TOWNS IN 1944

Prepared by Richard LeBaron Bowen for EARLY REHOBOTH, vol. I

COLORED AREAS SHOW THE EXTENT OF THE ORIGINAL TOWNS AND SUBSEQUENT ADDITIONS

Ⓐ Providence
Ⓑ Rehoboth
Ⓒ Taunton
Ⓓ Swansea
Ⓔ Bristol
Ⓕ Freetown
Ⓖ Dartmouth
Ⓗ Little Compton

This map, drawn by our distant cousin, Richard LeBaron Bowen, for his Early Rehoboth series, has been very useful in visualizing the migrations of many ancestral lines, not just the Averills, though some of the darkened areas are hard to read. South of the arrow at the top and east of Attleborough a little farther down, you can make out the name Norton, where Isaac Averill's sisters Abigail Bishop and Mary Titus were living in 1724, having moved from Rehoboth. You can see that it was not far away.

At the far left on the map you will see part of Griswold CT. That is where Isaac and Esther went to live, though it was then North Preston. Griswold was not set aside until 1815, long after their lifetimes. Isaac already possessed land there. A toll road went to Providence.

And now back to Preston, with a new bride. But first, because it helps us imagine the setting, we will refer back to that first road leading near their dwelling, approved by the town fathers in 1691. The Griswold history * states that the first highway, four rods wide, for the convenience of Pachaug residents, went north from the Preston City meetinghouse "by marked trees to the Ekonk path at the end of the bounds" (with Windham County?) It went "to Pachaug, then across the river, turning at the left of the Pachaug Cemetery toward the White schoolhouse and thence to the NE corner of Griswold." (Probably a later description, forthe schoolhouse and cemetery probably weren't there that soon.) It passed through the land of four proprieters, Robert & William Parke and John & Joseph Morgan. No houses or other residents were mentioned that year, if there were any, but there must have been a reason for needing something as expensive as a road. There certainly were a number of people there within the next ten years, as we can tell from the list of deeds concerning Isaac Averill on a previous page. (32).

A housewright would have been in demand in a new settlement, and our couple must have been living there by 1711 when "in compliance with the wishes and needs of the people" Stephen Gates who lived near present Hopeville (see Griswold map)(45) was granted 14 acres "including the natural falls and water power....(in exchange) for his building and maintaining a sawmill and cornmill for the inhabitants." In July of the same year, 50 acres were laid out to Samuel Coy at a place called "the fals" on Pachaug River, now known as Glasgo. Coy erected a corn mill there, (See the deed records for Isaac's dealings with the Coys) Mills were an absolute necessity to the health and comfort of a community. Before 1717 Joseph Foster established a fulling mill (for cloth) on Billing's Brook. (Mrs. Coy was born a Billings.) Public notices were posted on mill doors, announcing town meetings and such, and local gossip was exchanged by the men.

The notices and the gossip at the mills contributed, we may be sure, to local discontentment with having to travel all the way to Preston City to attend all public official business or to attend church every Sunday. Unless his intentions were less than altruistic, it certainly would have been inconvenient to Isaac Averill, who was chosen Lister for ALL of the Preston area in 1714. Listers are now called Assessors. His responsibility was to rate the value of the property of every resident, and make up an official list for the town fathers and the tax collectors. Even if an area were sparsely populated that would be an onerous task. At least the older part of Preston would have had many residents by then.

The discussions brought matters to a head, and on 10 Jan 1715/6, at a legally posted town meeting in Preston it was decided by the voters that the town of Preston be divided into two separate ecclesiastical societies. At that meeting a committee consisting of Ens. Wm. Billings, Lt. John Brown, Joseph Geers, Capt. Parke, John Amos and Caleb Fobes, should lay out the boundary line between the North and South Societies. (A century later to become Griswold and Preston, with our family gone.)

---

*History of Griswold by Daniel L. Phillips (1929) pages 10-41 used

A meeting of the legal voters ofthe North Society, Preston, was held on "December ye 17, 1716." Agreement among the voters had been an all-important first step, but we must remember that after that a petition had to be drawn up and presented to the Colonial Government at Hartford, and approved by a regularly-held session of the Legislature which alone had the power to confirm or deny the right to call a minister, without which there couldbe no new society. Isaac Averill became the North Society's clerk, and thereby the contact person between the petitioners and the colonial government. Though the role was essential, a gregarious man like our Isaac would not have considered the assignment overly difficult.

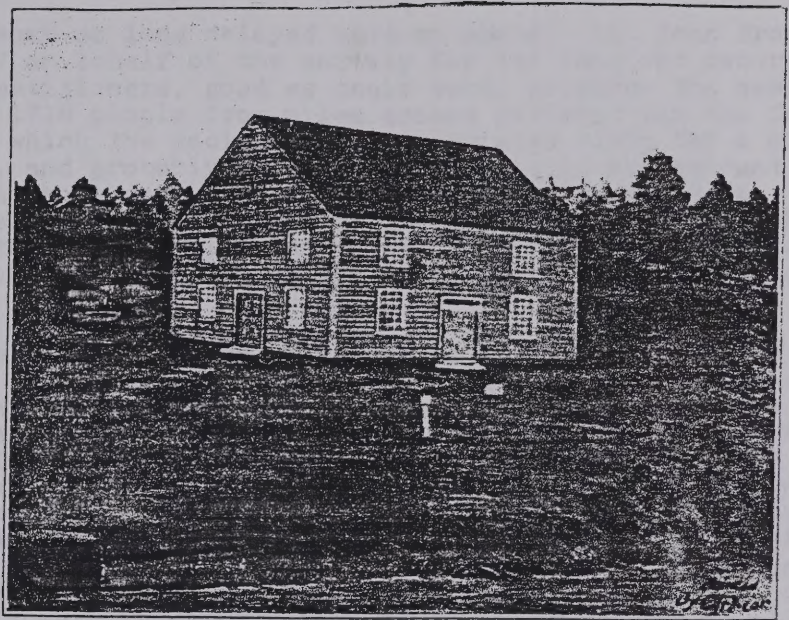
At that first meeting it was voted that "yt place that hath most votes for, be set a meetinghouse upon, shall be ye place where it shall stand." At the same meeting it was voted "that ye knowle on ye west side of ye river by the bridg on John Pray's land shall be ye place where our meetinghouse shall stand." At the next meeting on 20 Jan 1716/7 a tax of 5 shillings per hundred on all land, commons excepted, be levied towards buildingand finishing the meetinghouse. But more people lived on the east side of "ye river" than on the west and preferred "the point of country road where the path of Mr. John Brown turns off" near what is now the Pachaug Cemetery. Contentions became so intense that the east-siders carried a petition to the Legislature which sent three commissioners to settle the matter. They opted for the second alternative because more people lived there. Looking at those deed abstracts again, it seems to me the Averills must have lived not far from Lt. Brown.

"Tradition says that..the people of the east side..(then) dug a well to a considerable depth; but one day while the workmen were at dinner, the gravelly sides of the well caved in, destroying their work and burying their tools." This was looked upon as disapproval by Providence. The west side residents had already hawled timber to "ye knowle on John Pray's land," but building was suspended for more negotiation, and the center of population determined, (See illustration submitted to the Legislature.) described as "thirty-one chains southeast from the place where the gentleman of the committee commissioners of the General Court have pitched for."

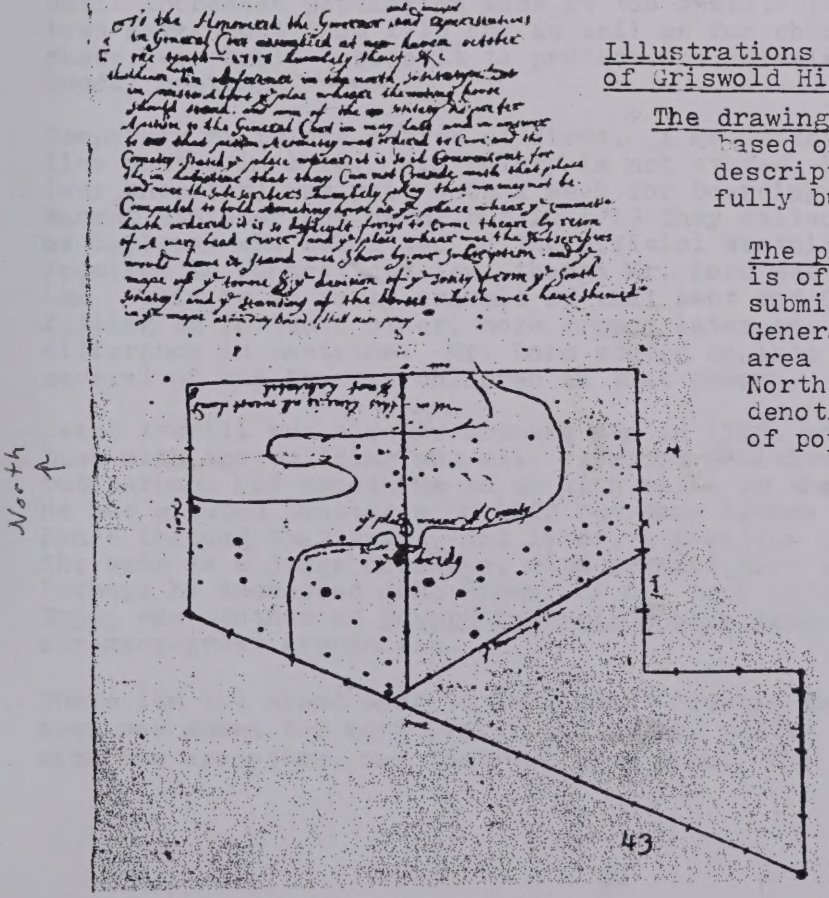
"The petitioners had not counted on the intensity of opposition...or dreamed it would stoop to dishonorable methods. The sequel to the affair is found in a document which Isaac Averill, the Society's clerk, forwarded to the colonial government. It contained a copy of the agreement, without the names of the signers,..regarding the fate of the original document:

> 'The agreement was left with me the subscriber but was falatiously gott awaie from me and destroyed by one of the non-petitioners.'"

The records are silent on the issue for next six months when a binding agreement was reached by both factions to build the meetinghouse on the "knowle on John Pray's land" to the west of the bridge across the "Patchaage River."



EARLIEST PACHAUG MEETINGHOUSE, 1720



To the Honoured the Governor and Representatives in General Court assembled at new haven october the tenth — 1718 humbly shewt &c
that [illegible] difference in the north society [illegible] about ye place wheare the meeting house should stand. and one of the [illegible] society did prefer A petion to the General Court in may last and in answer to [illegible] that petion A comitey was ordered to Come and the Comitey stated ye place wheare it is so ill Conveniant for the inhabitants that they Can not Comply with that place and wee the subscribers humbly pray that we may not be Compeled to build a meeting house at ye place wheare ye comittee hath ordered it is so difficult for us to come theare by reson of A very bad river and ye place wheare wee the subscribers would have it stand wee shew by our subscription and ye mape of ye towne & ye division of ye society from ye South society and ye standing of the houses which wee have shewed in ye mape [illegible] shall ever pray

Illustrations taken from Town of Griswold History

The drawing above was based on detailed recorded descriptions. Though carefully built, it had no steeple.

The photostatic copy below is of a paper which was submitted to the Connecticut General Court showing the area then populated in the North Society, with a line denoting the center of population.

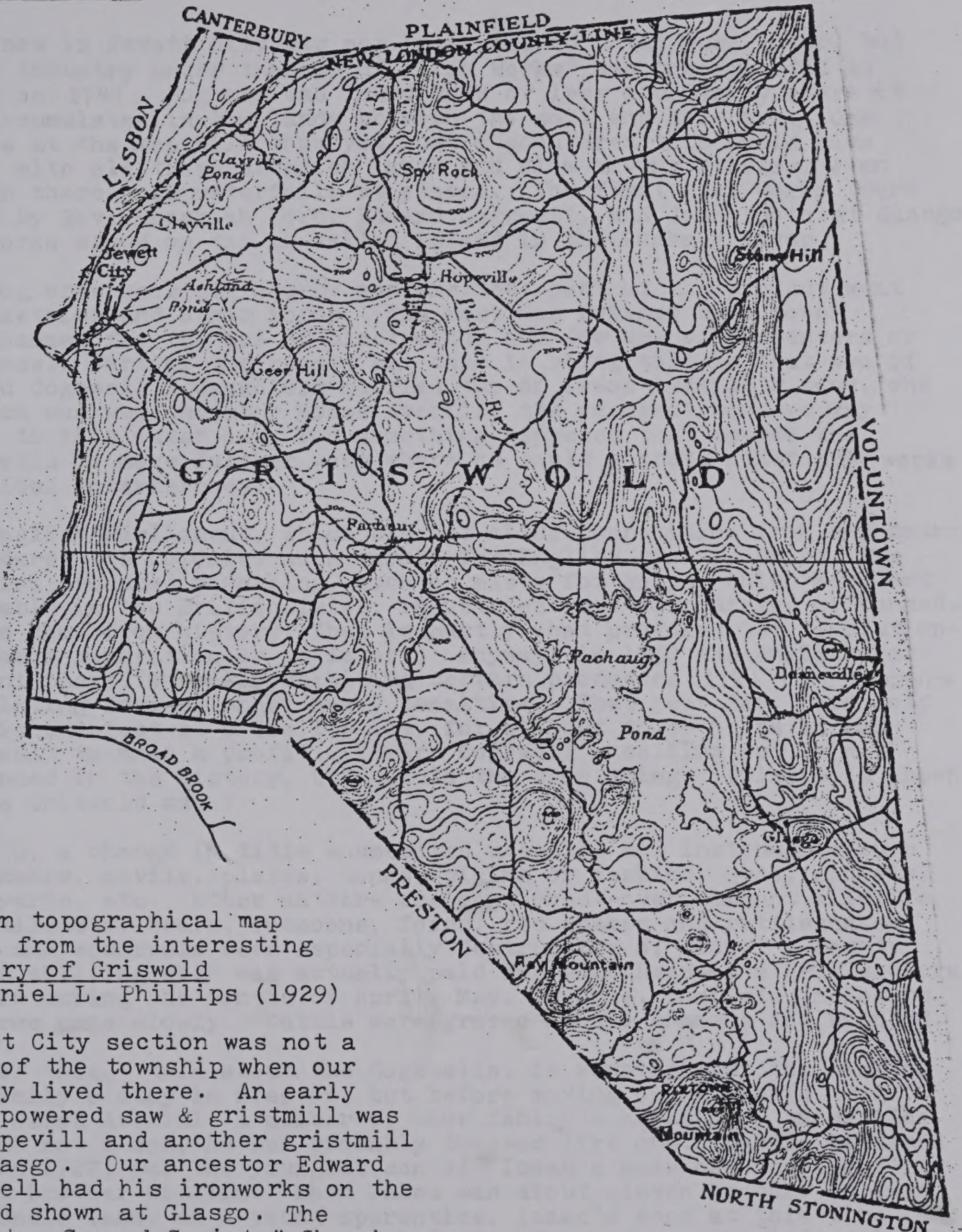
Thenceforth the work so long delayed went on apace. Lt. John Brown paid John Pray Ŀ7 on behalf of the society for the land and recorded the title. Non-petitioners, good as their word, prepared the meeting house frame. In 1718 people from miles around gathered for the festive raising for which the society had appropriated 41s8p for a hundred weight of cheese, and probably other solid and liquid refreshment not mentioned, but in those days much of each were usually consumed. Only one incident, when young Elijah Belcher, "exiliarated with good cheer" expressed his enthusiasm by climbing to the topmost timber and standing on his head on the ridgepole of the roof. (Elijah was later a deacon.)

The people of the community were enthusiastic laborers. Since an Averill daughter later married a Kinny, we should mention that a Joseph Kinny was a helper, and that Thomas Davison and Thomas Kinny were appointed to "see to laying of the gice and flower." (joists and floor) James Tyler and Isaac Averill procured 12,000 shingle nails plus deck and floor nails (this in an age when metal for nails was hard to get and quite expensive). Others did "clabording & bording," built the pulpit, prepared window sash, etc. 200 bushels of oyster shells were burned with walnut cordwood to prepare lime for the plastering. Details go on and on, but one can tell that these citizens took pride in their meetinghouse. Though squarely built and unpainted as all buildings in that era, and with no steeple, it lasted fifty years until increased population made it too small. It was the center of town government from 1718 on, as well as for church. By 1722 horse sheds were built beside it to protect the animals during the long Sunday meetings.

Temporary ministers served at first. A Mr. James was there about five months in 1718. His salary is not stated, but Edward Cogswell (our ancestor) was paid 4s6p a week for boarding him. Finding a permanent minister was hard, but in 1719 they called Rev. Hezekiah Lord of Saybrook who submitted to the official Westminster Confession required by Connecticut law, though Mr. Lord was a modified Presbyterian. This is an early example of that sect and Congregationalists filling in for each other, more common later on. There was not much difference in doctrine. Mr. Lord stayed on into old age, and married several of the Averill children in that church.

Isaac Averill was elected Granary Man in 1718, while they were so busy with the building and all. I'm not positive what his duties were but perhaps had something to do with mills or their edible byproducts. He was elected Constable in 1722 but soon became a Justice of the Peace instead that year , and later, a position of much importance, the same as a judge nowadays, with perhaps more decision-making power. Perhaps he succeeded John Brown; if not they were colleagues. John Brown was brother of Edward Cogswell's wife Hannah; and thus he was our many-great granduncle.

There isn't a great more to tell about Preston 2nd Society, as the area was known for many years, and it was mostly an agricultural area with one exception, and that was iron works. The part of the township


CANTERBURY
PLAINFIELD
NEW LONDON COUNTY LINE
LISBON
Clayville Pond
Spy Rock
Clayville
Jewett City
Ashland Pond
Hopeville
Pachaug River
Geer Hill
GRISWOLD
Stone Hill
VOLUNTOWN
Pachaug
Pachaug Pond
Doaneville
BROAD BROOK
Glasgo
PRESTON
Ray Mountain
Rixtown Mountain
NORTH STONINGTON

Modern topographical map taken from the interesting History of Griswold by Daniel L. Phillips (1929)

Jewett City section was not a part of the township when our family lived there. An early waterpowered saw & gristmill was at Hopevill and another gristmill at Glasgo. Our ancestor Edward Cogswell had his ironworks on the island shown at Glasgo. The "Preston Second Society" Church was on a knoll east of Pachaug and just west of the bridge across the river.

that now is Jewett City was not incorporated until much later, but a new industry under thename of "Iron Works" was incorporated as early as 1741. Bog ore was found more or less abundantly where it had accumulated in low lands between the soil and hard pan. One glance at the map will show you what a good area this would have been, with all those sluggish lakes and slow-moving streams, even though there were waterfalls at places. The first iron works were owned by Rev. Hezekiah Lord, Edward Cogswell, and John Booth at Glasgo. The works stood on the so-called island in the Pachaug River.

The bog ores were dug nearby and smelted, part of the product went into kettles and other forms. The rest was refined by a power trip-hammer for the use of blacksmiths and for use of carpenters or in homes. Part of the reason all this is being told is that two of Edward Cogswell's daughters married two of Isaac Averill's sons, one of whom was our ancestor Moses Averill, the youngest son--we may refer to this later on. For something happened that caused the Cogswells to move further west where he could operate other iron works with less interference.

The English Parliament, which did not abide competition from any source, considered the Colonies as a market for English goods. Unless the colonies produced something, such as masts for ships, which were not available in the British Isles, industries were discouraged or banned. (As we know from history, that is partly what provoked the Revolutionary War a generation or so later.) Anyway, in 1750 the English Parliament passed a bill prohibiting certain processes like trip hammers and plating forges, under heavy penalties. That year Rev. Lord sold out his interest at a small price, for without those helps it was difficult to make a profit. Edward Cogswell's selling out is not mentioned in the history, but he did the same thing. (Glasgo is shown on the Griswold map.)

In 1750, a change in title enumerated utensils and instruments such as hammers, anvils, plates, tongs, pigins or ferkins, quas, shovels, stillyards, etc. Other matters are mentioned--overabundant wildlife like wildcats, bears, raccoons, foxes, red snakes and rattlesnakes. Crows and squirrels were especially destructive of crops; a bounty of one shilling each was actually paid for each head of a gray squirrel or crow during the months of April, May, or June. Complete enclosure of farms came slowly. Cattle were grazed on the commons and branded.

Some of this, told about the Cogswells, is running past the time of our family's stay in Preston, but before moving on we should tell about Jabez Averill, a member of our family's household; though the lad was not a son, he was probably treated like one. Jabez, baptized 15 June 1707, was the youngest son of Isaac's somewhat insolvent oldest brother William. When Jabez was about eleven he came to live with Uncle Isaac as a young apprentice, Isaac's sons at this time being only toddlers. It was a good move for both nephew and uncle. No mention is made of the brothers visiting and finalizing the deal, but there must have been a meeting of minds somehow. The boy was bright and a good learner, and also sent to the neighborhood school.

Jabez was an apt apprentice, and cooperative to the point that he worked a year and a half beyond the terms of his contract. As shown by Preston Deeds, he was rewarded by his Uncle Isaac with 50 acres of land "50 R 61 Rds Easterly by my own line" on 11 Feb 1729/30. He was married on 5 Jan 1737/8 to Rachel Burton (spelled "Buxton" by Rev. Lord). He purchased several other tracts of land and eventually was prosperous, and pious, owning five Bibles. He and his uncle Thomas continued to live in the area. Their children as well as remaining young Cogswells, Kinneys, Tylers and Parkes were mentioned in town records, descendants petitioning in 1815 to be set off as the Town of Griswold. Some of his children traveled to Rehoboth and to New Preston to visit with the cousins.

One of the earliest records in Kent in far NW Connecticut shows that Isaac and Esther's son Daniel purchased land from Indian Chief Chere Waramaug, 100 acres more or less, on 20 July 1749--that served to confirm his title but he had purchased other land as early as 1744 which must be recorded in some older book. By 1746 or so the rest of the family, except an older married daughter, had gone there to be with Daniel. It is obvious they were part of a migrating group, for the settlement was later called New Preston. Other acreage in the area was purchased by Edward Cogswell on 18 Jan 1846; true to form Cogswells established iron works in the vicinity.

When Isaac moved there he took along the lovely turned oak chair you saw in an earlier section about his brother Nathaniel Averill. That chair is still there, in possession of a descendant. In 1746 Isaac was 66 years old and a little old to set about clearing lands in the wilderness recently acquired from the Indians. He and Esther lived out their days in the home of their eldest surviving son Samuel and his family, and are buried in a private Averill cemetery on part of the farm. Probably there were once gravestones telling when they died; if so they have not survived.

The following children are listed in Church of Preston (Griswold) records:

Children of Isaac and Esther (Walker) Averill:

Hannah	30 Oct 1710-16 Apr 1725)		age 14
Esther	11 Mar 1712-	m 13 Apr 1732	Daniel Parke
Isaac	24 Dec 1713-06 Apr 1714		age 4 months
Samuel	01 Mar 1715-30 Mar 1786	07 Jun 1739	Patience Perry
Daniel	07 May 1717-23 Oct 1785	11 Nov 1742	Lucy Cogswell
Abigail	10 Apr 1719- after 1786	ca 1740	Stephen Kinne
Sarah	12 May 1721-	11 Nov 1742	Zepheniah Branch
+Moses	06 Mar 1724-22 Jan 1784	ca 1748	Martha Cogswell
Ruth	03 Feb 1725-		no further record

AVERILL FAMILY

Since we follow son Moses Averill, here is some information about the others. Not much was passed down about the sisters; a search to learn more has been attempted with varying success. Clara Avery told so much about the brothers Samuel and Daniel that we can only gloss over it here, and much of that involves land speculation. Students of American history will recall that land hunger became a craze in those years, of all who had the means to invest--government leaders like George Washington and Benjamin Franklin were among those leading the pack. The famous Green Mountain Boys Ethan Allen, his brothers, and their cousin Remember Baker originated in Cornwall TWP only a few miles north of where our Averills settled, and they became very involved with them as time went on, for at the close of the French & Indian war in 1763 the British Parliament forbade white settlement west of the mountains. More of that later.

Hannah Averill, named for her grandmother, died at Preston, age 14½. Isaac Averill, Jr., lived only four months. Nothing but her name has been uncovered so far about Ruth Averill. Whether she died young or moved west with her parents and was lost track of because of lack of good record-keeping in a then primitive area is unknown. #

Esther Averill married Daniel Parke when she was twenty, and they stayed in Preston 2nd Society where they had eight children, six of whom lived. Somewhere probably a Parke genealogy mentions this couple, but so far I've been unable to find it, though I've come close.* Daniel was grandson of Thomas and Dorothy (Thompson) Parke, maybe by Nathaniel who married Sarah Geer in 1677, though it could have been his brother Robert, John, or Thomas Jr., for all four lived in some part of Preston. Either way, Esther's children were descendants of Charlemagne on their grandmother's side and of a baronet on their grandfather's.

The Parke family coat of arms was: Argent, on a pale azure 3 stags-heads caboched of the field. Crest: A talbot's head couped gules eared and gorged with a collar gemmel or, and pierced in the breast with a pheon of the last. Motto: Justitiae tenax.

The immigrant, Robert^{8}Parke (Robert^{7}William^{654}John^{32}Robert^1 died 1400 AD) came on the "Arabella" with Gov. John Winthrop. Though the Preston history says he lived in Preston, Suffolk, England, evidently he was baptized 03 June 1580 at Postingford, Suffolk and died 14 Mar 1654/5 at Old Mystic (Stonington) CT. The son Thomas (Daniel's

---

*The Park Record by Edwin H. Park pp 7-13 (1922) follows only the line of Robert^{3}Thomas^{2}Robert^1 Parke. This Robert, probably Daniel's Uncle, does not mention him as a son, though it could have been an oversight. That man married first Rachel, dau of Thos. Leffingwell and second Mary, dau of Thos. Rose.
An Emerson-Benson Saga pp 420-7 by Edward K. Swigert (1994) is very thorough but does not reach into the third generation.

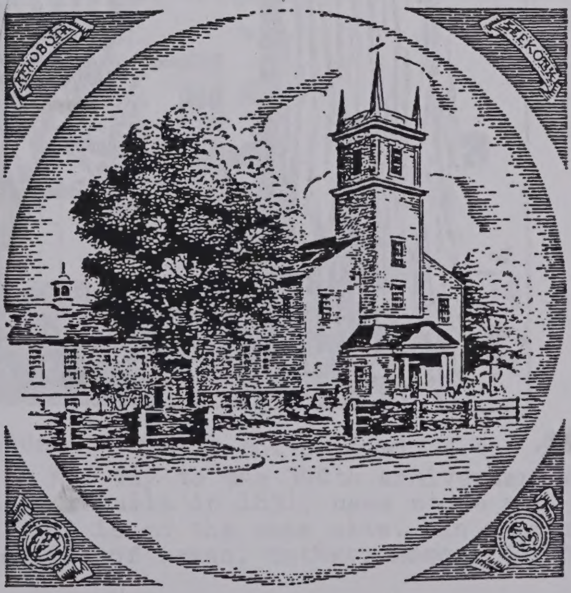
#Early New Preston/Washington marriage records have not survived before 1770. There is another unaccounted-for Ruth Averill who married Zechariah Price there on 20 Oct 1782, but she would have been 57 then.

grandfather) married his stepsister Dorothy, daughter of John and Alice (Freeman) Thompson; it is through the Freemans that the royal descent comes in. Thomas and Dorothy Parke, by the way, were ancestors of the late Diana (Spencer) Princess ofWales and of the future king of England. When Thomas died 30 July 1709 at Preston CT, we may assume he was well acquainted with Esther's father Isaac Averill, regardless of which of his sons was Daniel's father.

The Preston history says that during the beginning of settlement at Old Mystic seaport, only two settlers were allowed to use the honorific title of "Mister," and they were the first Robert Parke and Jonathan Brewster, owner of the first trading-house with the Indians, and son of Elder William Brewster of Plymouth Colony. Later Robert purchased Jonathan's "mansion house" for the use of his own family. But since none of this is about Esther Averill Parke herself, this is enough about her in-laws. The references and town histories tell more. Some descendants dropped the "e."

Samuel Averill the oldest living son, while spending time in Rehoboth met a fine young lady whom he desired to marry. The Preston deeds a few pages back reveal that on 18 August 1738 his father deeded him 86 acres of land next to his own, cousin Jabez, and the Burtons. Two days after that, Samuel published his intentions of marriage to Patience Perry, daughter of Nathaniel^3 Nathaniel^2 Anthony^1 Perry and his wife, Patience (Butterworth) Perry. This was also a well-t0-do family, and they joined Samuel in business investments later on. Patience was a June bride ten months later. The couple was married in the old Newman Congregational Church in Rehoboth, most likely the same church in which both sets of parents had been married.

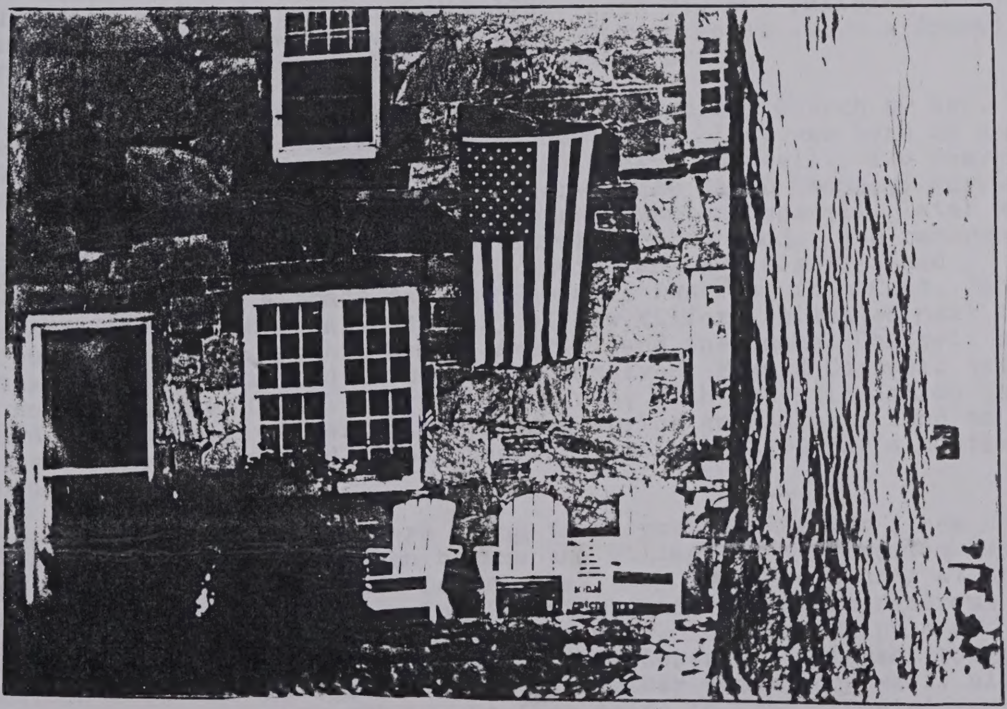
The fine old church at right has undergone remodelings, but is the very structure & congregation, on the same site where Rev. Samuel Newman preached to the first settlers, and where Mrs. Esther (Walker) Averill's grandfather, Deacon Phillip Walker Sr. assisted Rev. Newman in compiling a once-noted Concordance with the Bible, translating Greek and Latin.



NEWMAN CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH, U.C.C.
OF
SEEKONK AND EAST PROVIDENCE

In August 1744, Samuel and his father Isaac sold their homesteads, and on 31 October following he, his brother Daniel, and Daniel's father-in-law Edward Cogswell, purchased land in the newly-opened Waramaug Indian Reserve abutting the previously settled Woodberry North Purchase in far NW Connecticut. (The first deed calls this in the township of Hartford; because of the newness of the region, jurisdictional boundaries changed with bewildering frequency. To safeguard their purchases they had warranty deeds signed a few years later by Chief Cheerie Warramaug, head of the tribe which had claimed prior possession.) Soon thereafter began the migration from far SE to far NW CT of all of Isaac's children and their families except for oldest daughter Esther (Averill) Parke.

On 21 April 1746, Samuel paid an additional Ł500 to purchase an adjoining tract whereupon he built the "Old Averill Homestead," still in possession of descendants, the front porch of which is shown in the photograph below. His parents lived out their remaining days with him and Patience and their children in this home. Another tract was 70 acres with house and barn, purchased from Ephraim Tyler, who then moved on to Nine-Partners NY. That land was next-door to his brother Moses, our ancestor. In 1752 he became ensign of the local train-band, of which Moses later became captain.



Above. In Oct 1992, Oregon descendant Meredith Bolton visited the old homestead and took this snapshot on her way to the 300th anniversary of the Salem Witch Trials. This house, rebuilt in 1831, uses stone and other materials from the original but is on the same site. In a nearby graveyard on that farm rest the remains of Isaac, Esther, Moses, Martha, and other family members.

Samuel became quite wealthy through land speculation. The Averill Genealogy devotes many pages to his dealings which we can only gloss over here. One example is Great Averill Pond near the Connecticut River in Vermont near the Canadian border, still wilderness but beautiful. In colonial times New York claimed Vermont but made little attempt to settle the area until challenged by New Hampshire royal Governor Benning Wentworth, who cited a conflicting royal grant and became a speculator himself. Many of his grants went, at least indirectly, to our kin. Histories tell about skirmishes and even armed conflict between the two colonies over this. But no matter, Samuel and his cohorts hedged their bets by getting grants from both sides.

Samuel, and also Nathaniel and Daniel Cogswell, were listed as original proprietors of Bolton, Vermont, chartered 01 June 1763 by "King George the Third through Gov. Benning Wentworth of New Hampshire to Thomas Darling and 71 Others." The first group meeting of these proprieters was held in Newark NJ in May 1770. He was also on a list of 66 proprietors in a similar charter on 07 June 1763 for the town of Burlington VT, first meeting scheduled in his home county of Litchfield CT on 23 Mar 1774. At an adjourned meeting the next day Ethan, Zimri, Heman and Ira Allen and their cousin Remember Baker were among those who then and there formed the famous "Onion River Company" mentioned in many books. Samuel died a wealthy man in April 1786, aged 71, and Patience in 1790. Their three children were Patience (Mrs. Morgan Noble--also a speculator) Perry Averill--a Rev. War officer, and Samuel Jr.

Daniel Averill was married in Preston Second Society Church by Rev. Hezekiah Lord to Lucy Cogswell on 11 Nov 1742. Lucy was born 14 Apr. 1720 in Ipswich MA to Edward and Hannah (Brown) Cogswell. Two years later he, his father-in-law, and brother-in-law Jacob Kinne(y) married to Lucy's sister Judith (& our ancestress Martha Cogswell, later wife of Daniel's brother Moses) invested in wilderness land. The records state that even before October 1744, Daniel and Mr. Cogswell had jointly invested in a tract called "Ramoag's Reserve" from Capt. John Baker of Woodbury and Caleb Mallory of New Milford, situated next to the purchase of his brother Samuel Averill and one Samuel Chappel; and on that date they divided it between themselves, Edward Cogswell taking the north half and Daniel Averill the south, with the stipulation that Edward be allowed to divert water from a spring on Daniel's land to his own use. They, also paid Chief Cheerie Wramoag in 1749 for a confirmation of title.

Daniel and other relatives were among those petitioning for a new church in 1748 and beyond, which then became the village of New Preston--more detail in the Moses section. Before that they attended church at the Judea Society further north. Lucy's father was, of course, desirous of establishing new ironworks near Lake Waramaug. Matthew Whipple of Ipswich, married to Edward's sister Martha (Cogswell) Whipple, bought a half-interest in the venture. Lucy's brother Samuel Cogswell, already living at Weston (far SW CT) bought lots there in 1746. Daniel ran a gristmill at New Preston Village, in which his brother Samuel was part owner. He, also, was involved in New Hampshire grants plus one in Plattsburgh NY. The Cogswell Genealogy says he and Lucy moved to Vermont, but

that was really their son Daniel, Jr. Some of their children married well-t-do Nobles, Tylers, and Calhouns. Daniel and Lucy are buried near her parents in the New Preston Cemetery.

Abigail Averill married Stephen Kinne, a name spelt variously in old records--Kinny in the Griswold history, Kinney in the Cogswell Genealogy, and Kinni by Rev. Hezekiah Lord. As mentioned before, when the Preston Second Society Church was being built, Joseph Kinny was a volunteer and Deacon Thomas Kinny with another man were appointed to "lay the gice and flower." Apparently Stephen was the gice-layer's son, though he was 14 years older than Abigail and perhaps a widower. Be that as it may, we do know his early descent.*

Sir Thomas Keney of Kings Lynn, Norfolk, England, Merchant-Taylor, was knighted by Goode Queen Bess for "ye gifts of ships to Captaine Davis ye navigatore" (though his coat-of-arms was not conferred until 04 Oct. 1618, 12 years after her death). Son John^2 and his wife Sarah (Cheever) Kinney, as prominent Puritans, fled to Leyden, Holland, in 1623 with their son Henry^3, a babe-in-arms. Henry came as a child to America where he married Anne Howard (or Putnam or both) and had 9 children. Thomas^4 and Elizabeth (Knight) Kinne of Salem had four sons, of whom two moved to Preston CT. Deacon Thomas^5 with wife Martha Cox and Joseph^5 with wife Keziah Peabody (Jacob^3 Francis^2 John^1) of Topsfield.

Our Stephen and Abigail (Averill) Kinne, like Ephraim Tyler before them, migrated even further west than her siblings, to Crum Elbow near the present Roosevelt mansion at Hyde Park, then to Amenia, both of which were in the old Nine-Partners grant, present Dutchess Co. NY. She was in her 60's in April 1786, when her oldest brother Samuel willed her 100 acres of land in the town of Philadelphia VT which he had purchased fron Levi Allen. (Clara Avery adds, "The design & plan for the settlement of Danby, Rutland Co VT were conceived & adopted in Nine Partners NY, charter granted 27 Aug 1761 by Gov. Benning Wentworth. The first meeting was held at Great Nine Partners, Cromelboro Precinct, Dutchess Co. NY, Jonathan Willard, Moderator." Avery thought they had at least one child. Nothing else was told, but rumors that they moved to Vermont seem unlikely though descendants may have. See tax table for more clues.

Sarah Averill was married to Zephaniah Branch on 11 Nov 1743 by Rev. Lord, who had on 09 Nov 1726 married a Thomas Branch to Zipporah "Kinni," very likely his father and stepmother, thus related indirectly to the Cogswells. Avery did not follow the couple except to mention the marriage but they were part of the group that migrated to New Preston.

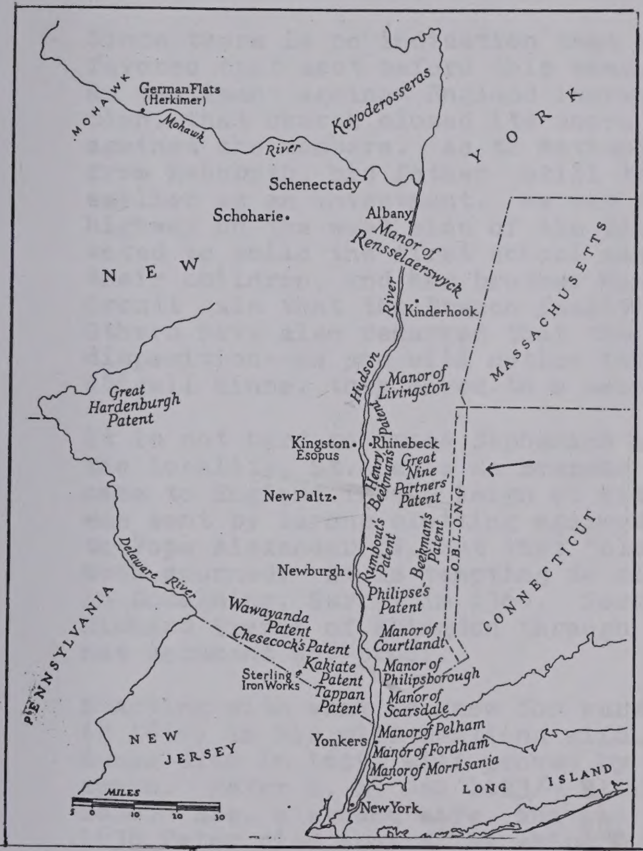
---

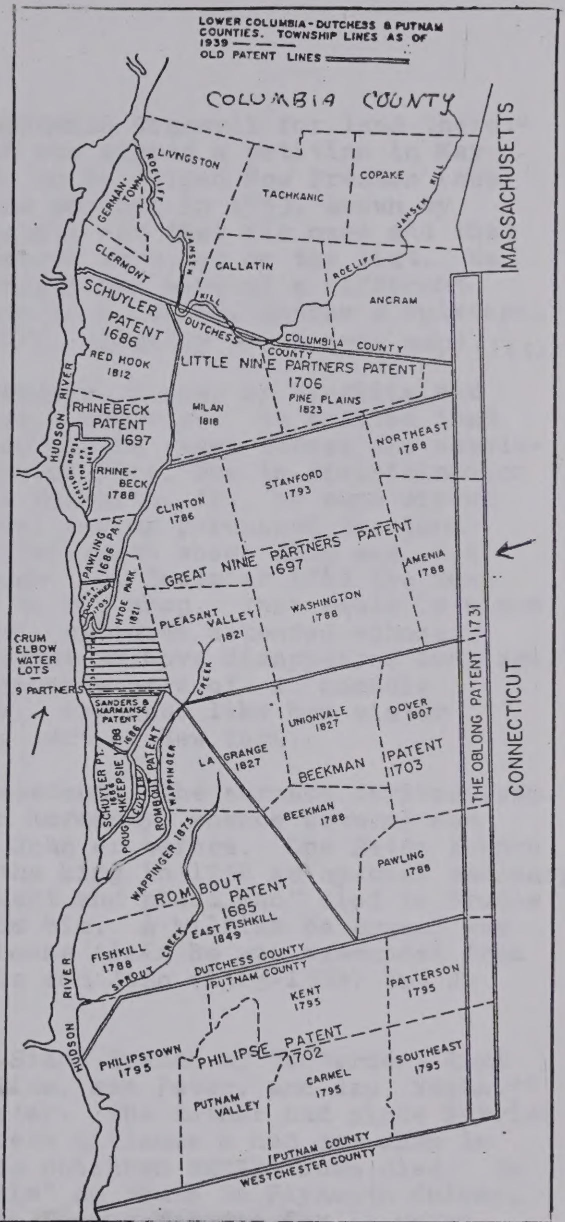
*An Emerson-Benson Saga by Edward K. Swiggert, pp. 323-7, gives a list of Thomas Kinne's purported 17 children! He is fuzzy about Stephen, giving him a different (first?) wife. Much of the list appears accurate but 17 children of one wife, even in those days, sounds a bit unusual. Kenney-Kinne-Harding (1960) by Lora L. Harding, pp 4-7, lists ten children of Joseph Kinne--Zipporah who married Thomas Branch, and Jacob Kinne who married Judith Cogswell, sister of our Martha (Cogswell) Averill, next chapter, were two of them.

It might be helpful to refer back to these maps while reading the following 2 chapters, wherein folks residing in some of these localities will be mentioned.

Right-- Map featuring Great Nine Partners Grant, etc.

Below left--
17th & 18th Century Land Patents in NY


NEW YORK
Mohawk River
German Flats (Herkimer)
Kayoderosseras
Schenectady
Schoharie
Albany
Manor of Rensselaerswyck
Kinderhook
MASSACHUSETTS
Great Hardenburgh Patent
Hudson River
Manor of Livingston
Kingston Esopus
Rhinebeck
Henry Beekman's Patent
Great Nine Partners Patent
New Paltz
Rombout's Patent
Beekman's Patent
O.B.L.O.N.G.
Newburgh
Philipse's Patent
CONNECTICUT
Delaware River
Wawayanda Patent
Chesecock's Patent
Manor of Courtlandt
Kakiate Patent
Sterling Iron Works
Tappan Patent
Manor of Philipsborough
Manor of Scarsdale
PENNSYLVANIA
Yonkers
Manor of Pelham
Manor of Fordham
Manor of Morrisania
NEW JERSEY
New York
LONG ISLAND
MILES
5 0 10 20 30


LOWER COLUMBIA - DUTCHESS & PUTNAM COUNTIES. TOWNSHIP LINES AS OF 1939 ———
OLD PATENT LINES
COLUMBIA COUNTY
MASSACHUSETTS
LIVINGSTON
GERMANTOWN
ROELIFF JANSEN
TACHKANIC
COPAKE
CLERMONT
CALLATIN
ANCRAM
SCHUYLER PATENT 1686
DUTCHESS COUNTY
COLUMBIA COUNTY
RED HOOK 1812
LITTLE NINE PARTNERS PATENT 1706
PINE PLAINS 1823
MILAN 1818
RHINEBECK PATENT 1697
HUDSON RIVER
RHINEBECK 1788
NORTHEAST 1788
STANFORD 1793
CLINTON 1786
PAWLING 1686 PAT.
GREAT NINE PARTNERS PATENT 1697
AMENIA 1788
HYDE PARK 1821
WASHINGTON 1788
PLEASANT VALLEY 1821
CRUM ELBOW WATER LOTS
9 PARTNERS
SANDERS & HARMANSE PATENT
CREEK
UNIONVALE 1827
DOVER 1807
LA GRANGE 1827
BEEKMAN PATENT 1703
THE OBLONG PATENT 1731
CONNECTICUT
SCHUYLER PT.
POUGHKEEPSIE
ROMBOUT PATENT
WAPPINGER
BEEKMAN 1788
WAPPINGER 1875
PAWLING 1788
ROMBOUT PATENT 1685
EAST FISHKILL 1849
FISHKILL 1788
SPROUT CREEK
DUTCHESS COUNTY
PUTNAM COUNTY
KENT 1795
PATTERSON 1795
HUDSON RIVER
PHILIPSTOWN 1795
PHILIPSE PATENT 1702
SOUTHEAST 1795
CARMEL 1795
PUTNAM VALLEY
PUTNAM COUNTY
WESTCHESTER COUNTY

Book, Dutchess County New York Taxpayers 1738-1787 by Clifford M. Beck (1991) show the following for Kinney, spelt variously; pgs 88&122

Nine Partners/Crum Elbow		
Didemus	1773-1779	
Ebenezer	June 1757-Feb 1762	to Amenia
James	Feb 1760-Jun 1765	farm
Roswell	Jun 1763-Jun 1766	
✓ Stephen	Jun 1748-Feb 1762	to Amenia
Stephen Jr	Feb 1762-Jun 1767	

Town of Amenia		
Didymus	Jun 1763-Jun 1768	
Elijah	Jun 1766-1778	
Jesse	Feb 1763-1778	
Jesse	Jun 1767	near Tilson on mountain
Nathaniel	Jun 1765-1768	
Roswell	Jun 1763·	
Roswell	Jun 1767-1778	
✓ Stephen	Jun 1762-1778	

How the men above were related to Stephen & Abigail (Averill) Kinne is presently unknown. Stephen Jr & perhaps others could have been her stepsons, younger ones her own, others his cousins or brothers.

In 1749 they paid £139 to Samuel and Edward Cogswell for land there.* His name is on the list of family men who signed a petition in May 1752 for a new ecclesiastical society to be called New Preston (see full list on a later page). There was another in 1753, shown by Orcutt in a different book, but he points out that his name and that of Edward Cogswell and Nathaniel Bosworth were not on the list. He supposed that was because the two younger men were of a different faith, saying that they were adherents to a new St. Andrew's Episcopal Church of Marbledale, erected in 1766/7, slightly south.(see map).(55)

Since there is no indication that Branches, Kinnes or Averills had favored that sect before this comes as a surprise. He related that as sentiment against England increased in the years before the Revolution, that church closed its doors out of fear, due to discrimination against the members. As to Nathaniel Bozworth, Jr., he came direct from Rehoboth, his father still there, having purchased the land earlier as an investment. He was a blacksmith whose shop was on a highway on the west side of the Village. In December 1762 the town voted to build the first school next to his shop. That would be where their children, and her brother Moses's children attended school. Orcutt said that the Branch family "seems to have disappeared long ago." Others have also remarked that the Branches were of a nomadic disposition--as you will notice below. Perhaps, like her sister Abigail Kinne, they moved to a nearby part of New York.

It is not hard to trace Zephaniah's descent. The surname derives from the locality, St. Denis de Branche in Normandy, whence several men came to England in the Reign of King John or before. One Peter Branch was sent by barons plotting against the king in 1258 as special emmisary to Pope Alexander IV, but that "eloquent and pious man" died in France much mourned. It is tempting to claim him. A William de Branch was in Godalming, Surrey in 1360. Some books claim he was descended from Richard Branch of Abingdon through his son John (1515-1588) but do not document any proof.

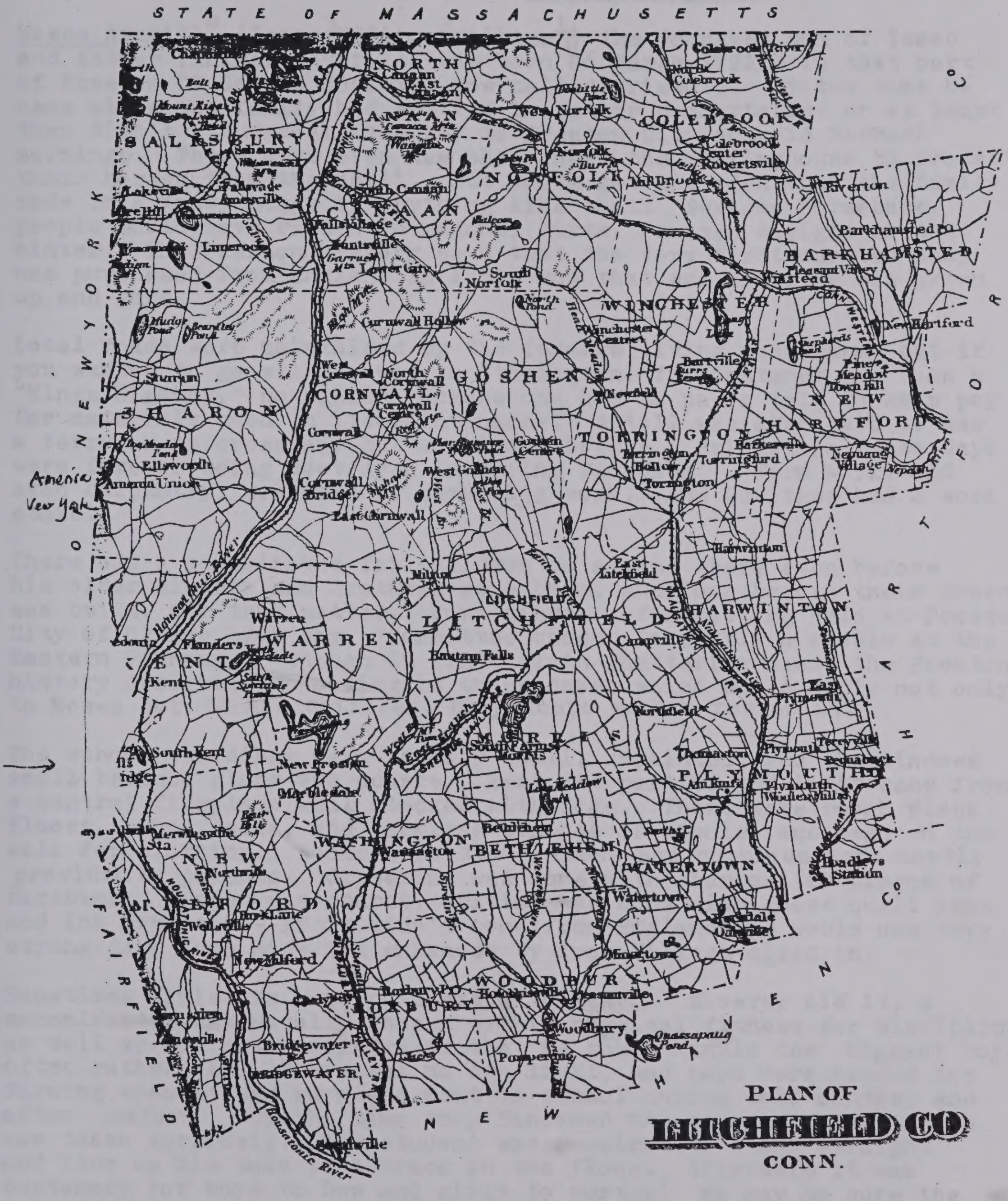
Starting with what we know for sure, Simon Branch of Tenterden, Kent (d 1614) in his will mentions wife Alice, son Peter, and dau. Susan.** Susan died in 1619, will proved by Peter. The mother had since married again. Peter m. 14 Jan 1623/4 Elizabeth Gillaume & had son John in 1628. She, a second wife, and all the children except John died. In 1638 Peter died aboard the ship "Castle" en route to Plymouth Colony, and left a will binding little John to Thomas Wyborne for 11 years until he came of age. John was of Scituate, then Duxbury, then in Marshfield in 6 Dec 1652 where he married Mary Speed. They had 6 children--John died in the K-P War. Our Peter (1659-1704) m. Hannah Lincoln (1663-1735) gt-aunt of Abraham Lincoln, in Taunton & came to Stonington/Preston CT. Their son Thomas married Zipporah Kinne, in Preston Second Society, stepmother of Zephaniah.

---

*History of the Towns of New Milford and Bridgewater, Connecticut by Samuel Orcutt, pages 207 and 210-11

**New England Historic Genealogical Register 65:286

Early Connecticut Marriages by Frederic C. Bailey used throughout this Chapter. Undocumented Branch of Virginia histories by Benjamin Branch and James Branch Cabell were also consulted but not relied on.


STATE OF MASSACHUSETTS
NEW YORK
HARTFORD CO.
NEW HAVEN CO.
FAIRFIELD
SALISBURY
NORTH CANAAN
CANAAN
NORFOLK
COLEBROOK
BARKHAMSTED
WINCHESTER
SHARON
CORNWALL
GOSHEN
TORRINGTON
NEW HARTFORD
LITCHFIELD
HARWINTON
WARREN
KENT
MORRIS
PLYMOUTH
WASHINGTON
BETHLEHEM
WATERTOWN
NEW MILFORD
WOODBURY
ROXBURY
BRIDGEWATER
New Preston
Marbledale
Amenia
New York
PLAN OF
LITCHFIELD CO.
CONN.

1880 map of Litchfield County, Connecticut, from the County History. Our Averills lived at New Preston, Washington TWP, near the Waramaug Lake. Abigail (Averill) Kinne lived at Amenia at "Nine Partners NY" shown at left. "Green Mountain" Vermont Ethan Allen sold the family much land, and was from Cornwall TWP to the north.

MOSES AND FAMILY

Moses Averill^4 (Isaac^{3}William^{2}William^1) the youngest son of Isaac and Esther (Walker) Averill, was born 06 March 1722/3 in that part of Preston CT Second Society, now called Griswold. By the time he came along the family had settled in rather comfortably, or at least they didn't trudge all the way to Preston City on cold Sabbath mornings. There were even new sheds near the meetinghouse to protect their horses from the chill. But don't get the idea that the family rode in a fancy buggy or anything like that. Besides horseback, people would have ridden in wagons, carts, or oxen sleighs in the winter. The Preston history says that the very first wheeled shay was purchased from England in 1750, and that was after he was grown up and gone.

Local roads were maintained by the farmers living near them, but if you wanted to go all the way to Stonington, for instance, you took a "Kings Highway," so-called because one had to pay a toll to help pay for materials used in its maintenance. A toll was also paid to use a ferry or to cross any but a private bridge. Bridges in those days were forever being destroyed in spring flooding. Farm work, and even carpentry, was hard or demanding work. And Puritans had a work ethic!

There was a schoolhouse for children to attend there even before his older sisters and brothers were born, and long before their church was built, for that matter. Town minutes of a meeting held at Preston City of 02 May 1709 say, "Committee chosen to settle a scoule at the Eastern Pachaug." Though it isn't earth-shattering news, the Preston history describes schooling in those days, which would apply not only to Moses but to his children, so perhaps we can review it.

The school buildings were usually small, unpainted, and the windows small because glass was scarce. Heat and part of the light came from a central fireplace well stocked with logs. There were rough plank floors, crude desks, and backless benches or stools, and pegs on the wall for clothing. Books were few. These and supplies were mostly provided by parents. Ciphering was done with charcoal on pieces of birchbark. Paper was scarce, writing was done with goose quill pens and ink expensive--if it didn't come from England one would use very strong dark home made tea enhanced by iron filings mixed in.

Sometimes ministers were paid extra to teach. Whoever did it, a schoolmaster was usually chosen by his physical fitness for discipline as well as for his knowledge so that he could handle the biggest boys, often rather old. There was no age limit, and boys were needed for farming when it was warm and went to school during cold months, and often mature by the time they finished the courses. Recitation was taken seriously. The student was required to stand straight and line up his toes to a crack in the floor. Afterward it was customary for boys to bow and girls to curtsy! We may be sure the Averill children took education seriously because of the kind of responsible adults they became, and their later achievements.

Moses grew up in the eastern Pachaug area, and was a young bachelor when the family group migrated to the Waramaug Reserve of the Bantam Indians. Moving that far would necessarily be very laborious, for many goods were taken along, including furniture made in Topsfield long ago, like the chair shown many pages back--even when they settled in wilderness areas, Averills had nice things! Being the only unmarried adult male in the group, and with his parents Isaac and Esther a bit elderly, he may have done more than his share of the grunt work. Once they got there, the parents made their home with his oldest brother Samuel and Patience. so one would presume he did the same, but not for very long. As with most wilderness areas distant from the seat of government, more energy went into chopping down trees for shelter than in recording vital records like births and marriages; however, deeds and petitions give us some idea when he married.

About 1747 Moses Averill married Martha Cogswell, daughter of Edward and Hannah (Brown) Cogswell, sister of his brother Daniel's wife Lucy. Martha was born 11 Nov 1728 in Ipswich MA. It would not be a good idea to relate very much Cogswell family history at this point, since there will be a separate Cogswell family sketch presented separately, but enough has already been told about Edward that it is plain to see that he was of the entrepreneurial ilk. Cogswells in Wiltshire England had been manufacturers and merchants for centuries before the immigrant John Cogswell, a Puritan, sold his holdings to come to New England, only to lose the bulk of his wealth in a shipwreck, and ever since his descendants had been endeavoring to recoup their losses. And as our Averill Family history proceeds, perhaps you will notice some of Edward's genes popping out in Moses's son Philo, our ancestor.

As for iron-works, Cogswells had their fingers in the Saugus (now Lynn) MA works before, which probably gave our ancestor the idea to extract bog iron at Glasgo, and that worked out fine at first, though it is good the family had farming and other activities to fall back on. How well the extraction of iron succeeded in the Waramaug Lake area is a matter of conjecture, since the Litchfield County history tells little about it--there was some ore present but government interference and other sources of revenue seem to have diverted their attention.

Moses owned land by 1748 or before, and it is believed he was associated with Samuel in the successful October 1748 petition to the Connecticut General Assembly to hire a minister for six months of the year, on the ground of their living from seven to ten miles from their places of worship in Kent and New Milford.*

A 7 Dec 1748 entry in the Proprietors' Records for Kent shows, "Wee the subscribers Mutely agree and Do freely give to have an open high way Laid oute four Rods wide Begining att the 4 Rod

---

*History of Litchfield County, Connecticut by page 652 (1880)

> "highway Between Woodbury and Kent south westerly from Moses averills Hows att a Black oack Stakes and stons about it and Runing a North Easterly Corse through each of our Lands In the Mostte Convenant place agreed upon by us: Edward Cogswell Matthew Beallis Benjamin Darling John Cogswell Daniel averill Moses Averill"

The same page of the county history gives us some very valuable information about who among the relatives was there and whom their neighbors were. It says,

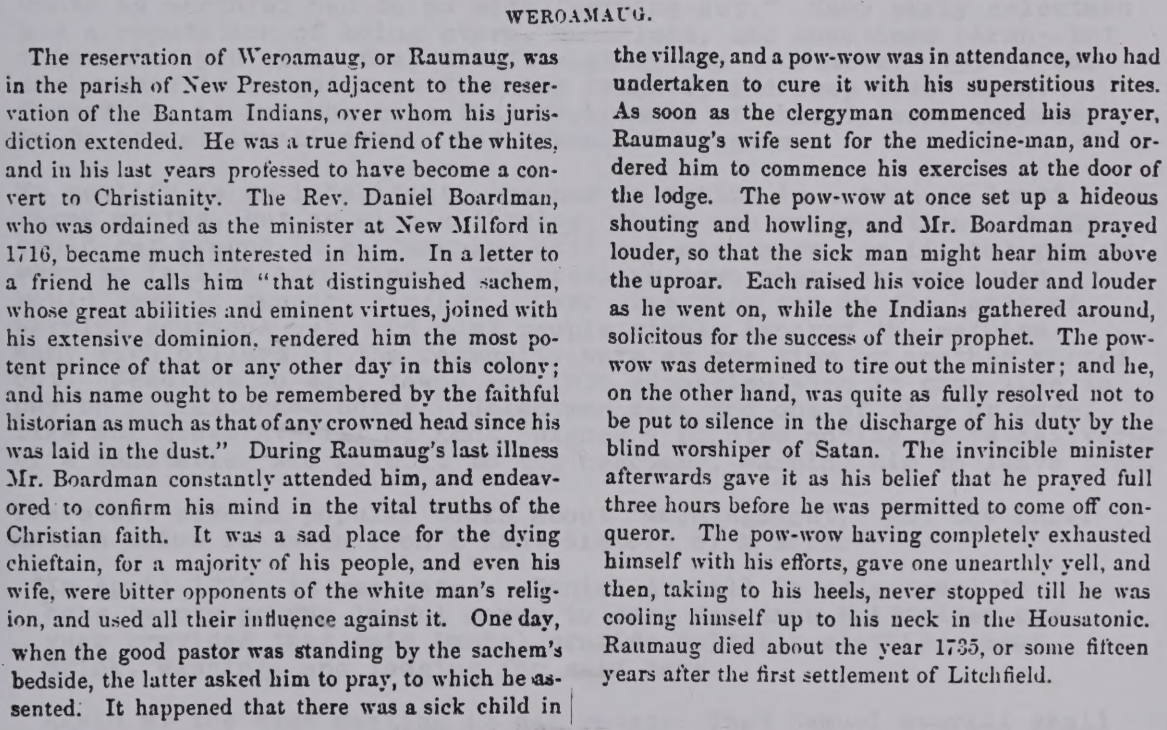
> "In May 1752, the following persons petitioned the General Assembly for a new ecclesiastical society: Samuel Averill, Caleb Rude, Samuel Lake, Moses Averill, Henry Davis, Jehial Murray, Isaac Averill, Joseph Carey, John Guthrie, Daniel Averill, Zebulon Palmer, Jacob Rinney, Samuel Cogswell, Thomas Hodgship, Thos. Morse, Benj. Darling, Samuel Waller, Nathaniel Dewine, Enoch Whittlesey, Jolmjah Jons, Stephen Bosworth, Thos. Beeman, John Benedict, Stephen Noble, Gillead Sperry, Elnathan Curtis, John Bostwick, Benajah Bostwick, Nathan Beale, John Cogswell, Zepheniah Branch, Edward Cogswell, Josiah Cogswell, James Terrill, Jos. Miles, Nathan Hawley, Samuel Cogswell, John Cobb, and Benjamin Capuen.
>
> "The societies of East Greenwich (now Warren), Kent, and New Milford opposed the application mentioned above, and it failed, but was granted in October. In December 1753 it was voted to lay a tax of twelvepence on the pound to hire a minister for a season, and to build two school-houses by subscription for the use of the society.
>
> "November, 1754, it was voted to build a meeting-house thirty-six by twenty-six feet, with five windows of twelve lights each, one hundred rods west of the present stone meeting-house. December 1766, it was voted to build another meeting-house fifty by forty feet. This house was inclosed three years later, but was not entirely finished until 1798. In 1806 a permanent fund of five thousand dollars was raised...."

The above shows us that our forefather, Isaac Averill, was still living in 1752, that Zephaniah and Sarah came along and wanted the meetinghouse, lists others who later married into the family, and demonstrates a different ethnicity in a new area. Many of those names above were Dutch and Scotch, perhaps a spillover from the adjacent colony of New York--the border was close and had been contested. It also shows that, as was often the case, nearby--if you call ten or twelve miles nearby--ecclesiastical societies, wanting their dues money, resented the competition.

Perhaps one of the five windows with twelve panes was behind the pulpit to help the minister read his text, but candles would have helped on cloudy days. The interior must have been dim with only five windows in that first building 26x36 feet wide. By 1806 our Philo was gone, so no more was copied here. Some early pastors were Noah Wadhams, who served from 1757-1768, when he left to lead a CT congregation on the Susquehanna River (Now PA). Jeremiah Day came in 1770 and died in 1806. Our Moses was a deacon in that church, like his great-grandfather Walker before him. People looked up to deacons in those days. This also shows he was pious.

AVERILL FAMILY

When the Averills first came there, they were considered to be in the town of New Milford, the first wilderness town in the area, on the Ousatonic River, commenced in 1713. When Rev. Daniel Boardman first came there, and for nearly 30 years later, the "Weroamaug" Reserve was still home of the Bantam Indians. I strongly suspect, but cannot yet prove that this minister was kin to Betsy Bordman, first wife of Moses' son Philo, our ancester. Chronologically, this is the best place to tell about that kindly and pious old man, deeply concerned about the souls of the Indians as about his own congregation, and learn a little about the early Indians there. This is copied from the county history.



WEROAMAUG.

The reservation of Weroamaug, or Raumaug, was in the parish of New Preston, adjacent to the reservation of the Bantam Indians, over whom his jurisdiction extended. He was a true friend of the whites, and in his last years professed to have become a convert to Christianity. The Rev. Daniel Boardman, who was ordained as the minister at New Milford in 1716, became much interested in him. In a letter to a friend he calls him "that distinguished sachem, whose great abilities and eminent virtues, joined with his extensive dominion, rendered him the most potent prince of that or any other day in this colony; and his name ought to be remembered by the faithful historian as much as that of any crowned head since his was laid in the dust." During Raumaug's last illness Mr. Boardman constantly attended him, and endeavored to confirm his mind in the vital truths of the Christian faith. It was a sad place for the dying chieftain, for a majority of his people, and even his wife, were bitter opponents of the white man's religion, and used all their influence against it. One day, when the good pastor was standing by the sachem's bedside, the latter asked him to pray, to which he assented. It happened that there was a sick child in the village, and a pow-wow was in attendance, who had undertaken to cure it with his superstitious rites. As soon as the clergyman commenced his prayer, Raumaug's wife sent for the medicine-man, and ordered him to commence his exercises at the door of the lodge. The pow-wow at once set up a hideous shouting and howling, and Mr. Boardman prayed louder, so that the sick man might hear him above the uproar. Each raised his voice louder and louder as he went on, while the Indians gathered around, solicitous for the success of their prophet. The pow-wow was determined to tire out the minister; and he, on the other hand, was quite as fully resolved not to be put to silence in the discharge of his duty by the blind worshiper of Satan. The invincible minister afterwards gave it as his belief that he prayed full three hours before he was permitted to come off conqueror. The pow-wow having completely exhausted himself with his efforts, gave one unearthly yell, and then, taking to his heels, never stopped till he was cooling himself up to his neck in the Housatonic. Raumaug died about the year 1735, or some fifteen years after the first settlement of Litchfield.

After the Assembly approved the new church society in the Averills' neighborhood, the settlement was named New Preston in honor of the former residence of some of the most prominent members. During Moses' lifetime, though he did not move at all, he lived in New Milford, then in Kent until after the War, when it was called Washington in honor of their hero who had spent so much time in western Connecticut. The village of New Preston and its environs could never have comprised the whole Reserve, for Raumaug's successor, Chief Cheerie Waramaug, the sachem who deeded the area to white speculators, would not still have been around to sign those releases of land to our family members in 1749.

AVERILL FAMILY

According to Cothren, Moses lived "on the borders of the Judea Society. which, simply put, would mean that he wasjust inside the northern boundary of the newly-purchased part of the Reserve. He was "rated" for ₺51.16 in 1750, for ₺52.4 in 1752, and for ₺58 in 1753--those were the years they were striving so hard to raise money to start the new church, though it does show increasing value of his assets. Most records show him in Kent.

All three brothers served numerous times as selectmen. Countless decisions had to be made by the "town fathers," and they pondered them at length. One centuries-old duty that strikes their modern descendants as mirthful had to do with "warning-out." Many early selectmen had a reputation of being stern, humorless, and sometimes harsh--but think what you will, they didn't want anyone to starve! Yet it was their duty to budget town finances frugally and keep taxes down. Therefore, it was the rule that recipients of charity were supposed to be actual inhabitants, not transient beggars.

To qualify as an inhabitant, one had to reside in a town at least three months; but as with all rules, there was an exception. Towns could get around it by "warning out" all newcomers, so if that person were to fall on hard times, the previous town where he had lived would have to support him/her. Over time they got in the habit of warning everyone out, and most people simply ignored the warning. Many rich pillars of the community were at one time or another warned out. Needless to say, towns got into squabbles when it came time to pay up for extended doles. Selectmen met, and one of them or more, like our Moses Averill of Kent, signed a printed notice to be delivered by a constable, who gave it to the newcomer, warning him to leave town.

There are several popular books about "warnings-out," but the information below is taken from a Kent history of a sort.*

> "In April 1772, it was voted: Daniel Averill (a selectman) to have twenty pounds lawful money to care for Amos Whittelsey one year provided that said Daniel provide suitable clothing, meat, drink, washing, and lodging for said Amos.
>
> "Again at the same meeting it was voted: That Samuel Averill shall make provision for Robert Dickerson during his present sickness and bring his account to town for the same."

Other cases were cited, including a case of a Phineas Palmer ordered back to Woodbury, considered an indigent transient. But if the Selectmen could order a Phineas Palmer to "depart the limits of Kent," they also had to receive back their own Kent wanderers.

> "Whereas Rhoda Clark, an impotent person and inhabitant of Kent was transferred to Wallingford in an illegal manner, we command you to carry her back to Kent." This writ bears the writing of Amos Clark on the bottom, noting that "I took her and delivered her to Moses Averill, Kent Selectman."

---

*Democracy in the Connecticut Frontier Town of Kent by Charles Grant, pages 93-4 (1961)

AVERILL FAMILY

To give you an idea of the terrain in the town of Kent, Connecticut, here is a photograph of the grist mill of Joseph Pratt Jr., built in 1743, waterpowered. (photo about 1976)

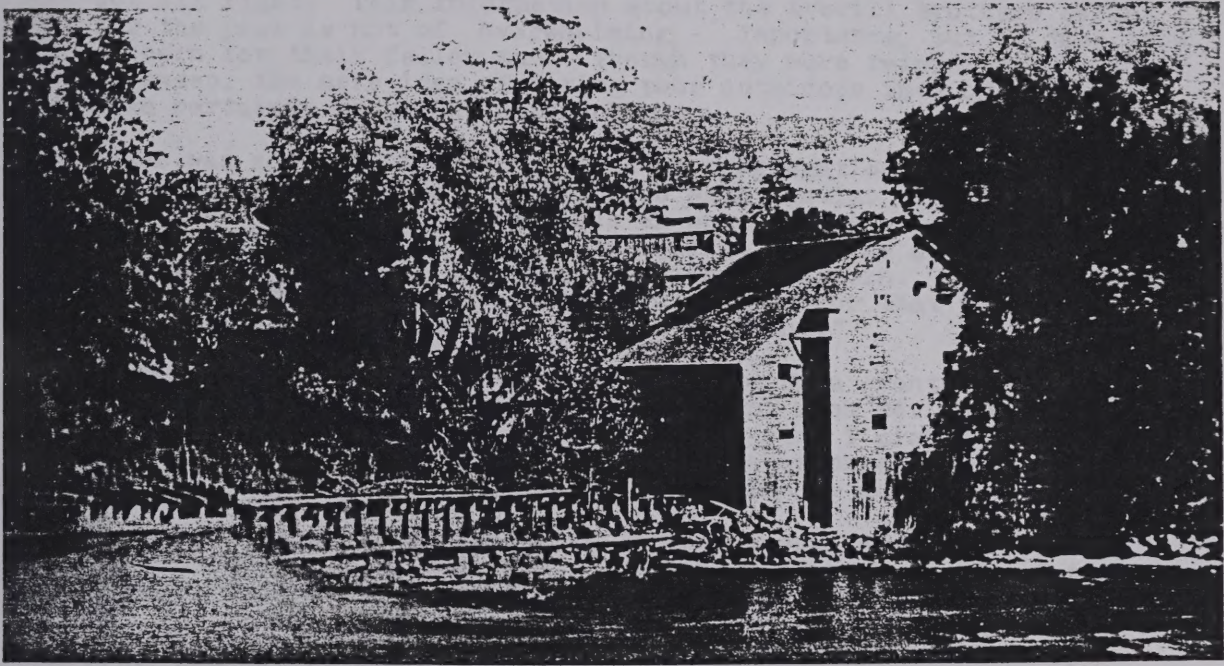
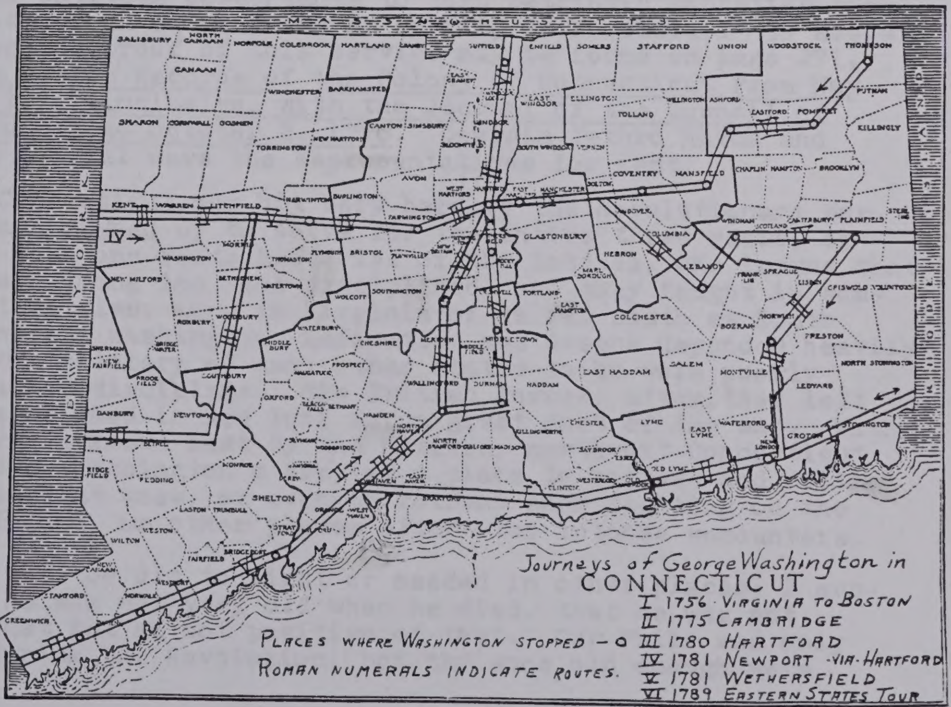


Diagram at Right - from History of Kent, Connecticut by Francis Atwater (1897) section by Ann Soper Davis

Gen. Washington spent one night at the home of Major Wm. Cogswell, Mrs. Martha Averill's brother, on his way to Hartford during the War.


MASSACHUSETTS
NEW YORK
RHODE ISLAND
KENT
HARTFORD
Journeys of George Washington in CONNECTICUT
I 1756 Virginia to Boston
II 1775 Cambridge
III 1780 Hartford
IV 1781 Newport -via- Hartford
V 1781 Wethersfield
VI 1789 Eastern States Tour
Places where Washington stopped — o
Roman numerals indicate routes.

There was also the case of a David Cogswell, an inhabitant of New Milford who had come to Kent in poor circumstances, evidently seeking work to support his family. They decided to let him stay, provided he not be a charge to the community. Evidently he turned out all right. This information about the Averill brothers caring for the poor is not of overwhelming importance, but it does show concern for their fellow man. Though they were reimbursed for their expenses, the mere idea of taking poor outsiders into one's own home certainly shows Christian charity.

Moses was a deacon in the New Preston congregation. He was for many years a town constable prior to 1770 when heavier duties fell on his shoulders. His older brother was an ensign in the local train band as early as 1752, and Moses later joined. He was an ensign himself in 1760, and as of 1763 he was promoted to Captain. Colonial Records of Connecticut, Assembly at Hartford records for that year list him as "Captain of the 3rd Company, 12th Regiment."

Clara Avery states that "Mr. Averill was also a grantee with his brothers in early grants of land in Vermont from Gov. Benning Wentworth," but she gave no specifics, or else I missed them. This certainly has the ring of truth, for as later pages show, a number of his children lived in Vermont at one time or another.

Avery says he was Representative to the General Assembly from Kent in 1770, 1771, 1772, and 1776. The Kent History says that Captain Moses Averill was Representative in 1770, 1775 and 1776.

As most everybody knows, the Revolutionary War was going on in 1776, and having an ancestor who was a member of a state legislature during the war entitles descendants to join patriotic societies based on that service on an equal basis as serving as a soldier. To assist anyone interested, proof of this service may be found on page 271, May 1776, The Public Records of the Colony of Connecticut From May 1775 to June 1776, inclusive, With the Journal of the Council of Safety from June 7 to October 2, 1776. Captain Jethro Hatch and Captain Moses Averill were the Representatives for Kent.

The State of Connecticut was hit very hard by the Revolutionary War. A great many men signed up to serve for the entire three years, or even longer. When one reads histories of the battles, one learns that their units were among the most disciplined, and they fought in some of the hardest battles, many in Virginia or as far south as South Carolina. Generals Washington, Lafayette, and Greene depended heavily on them, for the soldiery of many other states-to-be were poorly trained and lacked discipline. The British Forces, after they left Boston, were stationed in New York for a great part of the war. With it's hilly terrain known best by the natives, northwest Connecticut was often used by Washington's Army as a place to retreat and drill and regroup to fight anew, or even to retreat when fighting on the Hudson, Long Island, or other places after too intense encounters.

Moses himself was too old to fight or needed in other places; I suspect, because he was not very old when he died, that he was not especially robust but am not positive of that. Our Philo was only a little boy during the Revolution, but the sons old enough were

among the New York troops rather than those of Connecticut, and will be told about later. I hope you enjoy the little sketch showing some of Washington's journeys through Connecticut.

Our foremother Martha (Cogswell) Averill died 30 July 1781 while the Revolutionary War was still going strong and she had sons fighting. She was only 54 years old. Her headstone is beside her husband's, inscribed, "In Memory of Mrs. Martha, wife of Capt. Moses Averill," and he died 22 Jan 1784, aged 60 years. They are buried in the graveyard on his brother Samuel's farm--a part of the house shown in the snapshot a few pages back. Samuel and Patience are also, and their parents, Isaac and Esther. In the short interval between Martha's death and his, he had been married to a lady named Sarah, though no one seems to know whom she was, most likely an elderly widow.

Patriotic societies often request copies of wills. His follows:

At a Court of Probate held at Litchfield in and for the District of Litchfield, May 4th 1784

Present, Oliver Wolcott Esq. Judge

The last Will and Testament of Moses Averil late of Washington in the District of Litchfield, was exhibited to this Court by the Executors therein named, who accepted the Trust, which will being proved was approved of and ordered to be recorded and kept on file.

(Copy of Will)

In the Name of God Amen I Moses Averill of Washington, in the County of Litchfield and State of Connecticut being sick and weak in body but of Perfect Mind & memory, Thanks be to God Calling unto my mind the Mortality of my body and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die do make and ordain this my last Will and Testament that it is to say Principally and First of all I give and recommend my soul into the hands of Almighty God who gave it and my Body I Recommend to the Earth to be Buried in a decent Christian Burial at the Discretion of my Executors Nothing Doubting but that I shall at the General Resurection Receive the same againby the almighty Power of God—and as Touching my Worldly Estate wherewith it hath Pleased God to bless me in this Life I give Devise and Dispose of the same in the Following Manner viz

Imprimis I give and bequeath to my Beloved wife Sarah the sum of Thirty Pounds Lawful money together with the House Hold Furniture which she brought with her when she was married to me and Two Cows on Condition of her giving an acquitance to my Heirs of the use of one Third part of my Estate which by Law she may be Intitled to as widow's Dower.

2d I Give and bequeath unto my beloved son Isaac Averill the sum of Twenty Pounds Lawful money which makes his full portion of my Estate

3d. I Give and bequeath unto my beloved Children Elisha Averill Moses Averill Jr Philo Averill and Calvin Averillall my Real and Personal Estate which shall Remain to be Equally Divided between them after the Legacies appointed and ordered to be paid to my beloved Wife and my Children as is mentioned in this my Last will and Testament Together with my Just Debts & Funeral ChargesPaid which Debts and Legacies I Do hereby Order my Executors to Discharge and Pay out of my Estate Real and Personalat Their discretion.

4ly. I give and bequeath unto my beloved Daughter Lois Clark the sum of Three Pounds & Ten shillings Lawful money to be Paid by my Executors as afore Described which shall be the whole of her Portion of my Estate.

5ly. I give and bequeath unto my Beloved Daughter Amy Caswell the sum of Six Pounds Lawful money to be paid by my Executors as before Described which shall be the whole of her Portion of my Estate.

6thly. I Give and bequeath unto my beloved Daughter Martha Murray the sum of Three Pounds Lawful money out of my Estate which shall be the whole of her Portion out of my Estate to be paid by my Executors as above.

7. I Give and Bequeath unto my Beloved Daughter Currence Averillthe Sum of Thirty Pounds Lawful money to be Paid by my Executors as above which shall be the whole of her Portion out of my Estate.

8th. I Do Constitute and Ordain my beloved Sons Elisha Averill Moses Averill Junr. and my Nephew Samuel Averill Jur. to be my Executors to this my Last Will and Testament.

In Witness whereof I have hereunto set my Hand and Seal this 20th Day of January A. D. 1784

In Presents of
John Calhoun
Saml. Averill
Daniel Averill **Moses Averill** **(Seal)**

N. B.—In the foregoing Instrument the words Paid and Averill were interlined before the signing & sealing of this Will

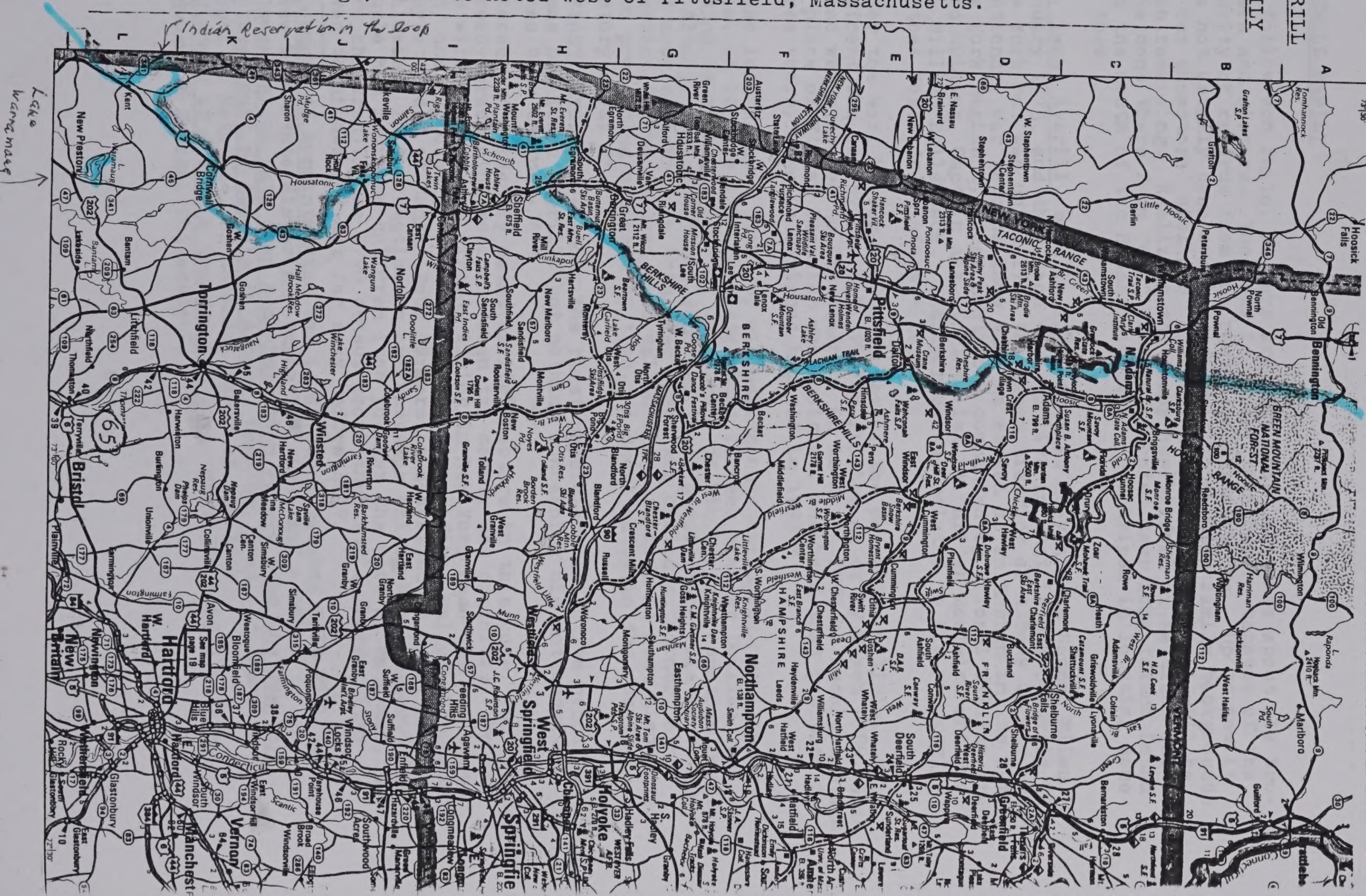
Litchfield County ss Washington Jany. 28th 1784

Personally appeared John Calhoun Saml. Averill & Daniel Averill Evidences to the foregoing Will and made oath that in their opinion the Testator was of sound mind and memory and that they see the Testator sign and Seal the foregoing instrument in their presents the day and date above personally agree the same (not certain as to the last four words G. M. W.) and made oath to the foregoing before me Wm Cogswell Just of Peace

Children of Moses and Martha (Cogswell) Averill:

Isaac	(25 Jun 1750-30 Jul 1815)	m. 25 Jan 1775	Hannah Miles
		17	Mrs. Beach
Lois	(1752- 1830)	ca 1769	Lemuel Clark
Elisha	(24 Feb 1754- 1821)	?ca 1782	Mary ( )
Amy	(ca 1759-)	28 Oct 1779	Julius Caswell
Martha	(ca 1762 1805)	14 Aug 1782	Solomon Murray
Currence	(12 Feb 1764- 176_)		infant
Moses	(12 Jun 1766-04 Oct 1811)	ca 1786	Cynthia Russell
+Philo	(03 Mar 1768-22 Oct 1844)	ca 1788	Betsy Boardman
		ca 1791	Charlotte Baker
		16 Apr 1808	Rebecah Rice
Calvin	(14 Dec 1770- ca 1840)	ca 1796	Salome Clary
(twins)	(	18	Sarah Gunn
Currence	(14 Dec 1770-after 1784)		no further record

This modern road atlas illustrates the route of the Appalachian Trail from Kent, Connecticut to the Green Mountains of Vermont. Canaan and New Lebanon, New York, still in the Taconic Mountain Range, will be noted west of Pittsfield, Massachusetts.


Indian Reservation in the loop
Lake Waramaug
Kent
New Preston
Cornwall Bridge
Housatonic
Sharon
Salisbury
Torrington
Winsted
Bristol
Hartford
New Britain
Sheffield
Great Barrington
Stockbridge
Lenox
Pittsfield
Dalton
Adams
N. Adams
Bennington
Canaan
New Lebanon
NEW YORK
TACONIC RANGE
BERKSHIRE HILLS
APPALACHIAN TRAIL
GREEN MOUNTAIN NATIONAL FOREST
VERMONT
Northampton
Holyoke
West Springfield
Springfield
Westfield
Greenfield
Shelburne Falls
HAMPSHIRE
FRANKLIN
Connecticut
Brattleboro

AVERILL FAMILY

We follow son Philo, so here are some short sketches about his brothers and sisters. The task is harder than before because of the paucity of records from the post-Revolutionary era. Up to now it has not usually been overly difficult to surmise family backgrounds of our ancestors' siblings' spouses, but now such efforts will be less rewarding. Realizing that many New Milford CT settlers must have come there from "old" Milford, located near Long Island Sound and the mouth of the Housatonic River, has helped in locating some of them.

Dr. Isaac Averill, born in 1750, married 16-year-old Hannah Miles in January 1775, and they soon went to live in what is now Columbia Co. New York but was until 1786 the Kings District of Albany County. Revolutionary War records show that he served as an Ensign in the 17th New York Regiment, Kings District, commanded by Colonel William Bradford Whiting, Captain Asa Douglas, 1st Lt. Elijah Bostwick and 2nd Lt. William Hallenbeck. (Hallenbeck was related to his younger brother Moses Jr's future wife.)

After the War, he remained a member of the peacetime militia. The regiment was led by Lt. Col. Philip Frisbee as of 17 March 1788, when Isaac was promoted to lieutenant. On 12 March 1790 he became captain in place of Elijah Bostwick who resigned, and held that position for three years, when he resigned himself in 1793.*

Isaac left a paper trail by witnessing numerous documents. Among them, on 02 June 1784 he posted bond for one Wheeler Douglas, who was acting as administrator of the estate of his brother Jonathan Douglas of Albany, innkeeper--one supposes these people were related to his old army captain. In this case Isaac was called a "farmer, Kings District." Though that deed called him a farmer, he must also have been practicing medicine by then. A short entry in the county history says, **

> "FIRST PHYSICIANS--Among the first physicians in active practice was Dr. Isaac Averill, but nothing concerning his antecedents has been learned."***

Antecedents evidently meant earlier doctors in this case, for he was already practicing medicine when the county was organized. He and his wife Hannah were already living in New York when the War broke out, one supposes in "New Canaan" as it was first called. The church they attended at Canaan Four Corners is described on pages 82 & 84 following, in the section on our ancestor Philo, his brother. The couple had fourteen children (the younger the wife at marriage, the more children). The 1790 census shows them still there. They moved to Kinderhook not far away before 1797.

---

*Council of Appointments, Vol I, Military Records 1784-1821 by New York State Historian, pages 144, 173, 198 & 264.

**Genealogical Data from Administration Papers from the New York State Court of Appeals in Albany, page 95, abst. Dr. Kenneth Short. publ by Nat. Soc. of Colonial Dames of New York

***History of Columbia County, New York, page 326 (1890) publ by Everts & Ensign, Philadelphia.

By 1804 they were living in Flatbush, Kings County--this is in the Brooklyn area of metropolitan New York City, where business must have been brisk. Hannah died there on 06 Feb 1813. After that he married a widow Beach. (Even her first name was not given, and we assume her first husband was one of the Beaches in New Milford, of whom there were several.) He died 30 July 1815 in Whitestown, Oneida Co. NY, now situated between Rome and Utica near the headwaters of the Mohawk River and the (then future) Erie Canal.

Clara Avery quoted three New Milford deeds which give insight into Hannah (Miles) Averill's ancestry. (1) In July 1789 James Camp of New Milford "for good will and esteem that I have for my well-beloved friend Isaac Averill of New Canaan...bequeath...15 acre tract..in New Milford." (2) "I, Isaac Averill of Canaan...for cons. of Ŀ69 rec'd of Capt. Abner Gunn & Epenetus Gunn ..sell them land in New Milford being the piece I had of James Camp..dec'd." He acknowledged the sale as Doctr. Averill. (3) We Isaac Averill & Hannah Averill both of Kenderhook in the State of NY for Ŀ125 rec'd of Stephen Miles of New Milford...quit claim...right...to the Estate of Hannah Miles late of New Milford dec.." The witnesses were Samuel Miles and D. Gardenier, justice of the peace.

(Records show that Camps and Gunns often intermarried.) No genealogy of this family has been found, but our Hannah would have been daughter of Joseph Miles, one of the 1753 petitioners for a new church. One of his other daughters married a Cogswell. It appears as though they were descendants of Richard Miles (1598-1666/7) a 1630's settler of old Milford. A later Samuel Miles (1672-) married Sarah Gunn and had a child in 1699, so since the Milford genealogies do include Gunns, we switch to them and discover that two Gunn descendants, Nathaniel and Abner, went to New Milford, and there we have it.

Milford genealogies are for that locality only, but occasionally do mention a child born in New Milford. They mention that Captain Abner Gunn had a daughter Mary Gunn who married Stephen Miles: "and probably other children." (Epenetus was one of them.) Mary died 18 May 1782.

The New Milford History says many of the Gunns were especially skilled in the shoemaking business, and we will mention Gunns again, for Isaac's youngest brother Calvin married Sarah Gunn as his second wife. As to the Miles family, they were millers--usually prominent people in frontier settlements.

Lois Averill born 1752 in New Preston but before the church was built, grew up and married Lemuel Clark about 1669. The Averill genealogy misses the two children who were born in New Milford. They were Sarah, born 1 July 1770 and Martha born 6 Sep 1772, named for her grandmother. It would thus seem that they moved to Pawlet Vermont about 1774, where town records list six more children from Dec. 1776 to May 1785. Being there so early, it has been suggested they were instrumental in land development. After the War her brother Moses brought his family to this same town and was a prominent citizen, but she and Lemuel moved on to Crwell in the NW corner of Rutland Co.

now Addison. Their tombstones are still standing there. He died 3 Dec 1825 and she in 3 Oct 1830, ages 82 and 78 years, according to their stones. The accompanying map of southern VT may help explain this.

A Litchfield CT genealogical register mentions two other Clarks about Lemuel's age. They were James Clark who married Rhoda Gibbs 21 Dec 1772 and had four children and a William Clark who married Jerusha Church 27 June 1771 and had one child, but no evidence if they were related. Way back in old Preston, a John Clark (1673-1708+) married Deborah Parke (1680-) but there is no evidence they came west. Clark is a very common name, so that makes it hard, but one of those Milford ancestries suggests a possible lineage, just in case:

1. Deacon George Clarke (c.1611-1690) an early settler m.______
2. Thomas Clark (c.1636-1719) m. 1663 Hannah Gibbard (1641-1703)
3. John Clark (1671-1704) m. Lydia Kellogg (1676-1742) who married secondly 7 June 1705 Thomas Oviatt, and they moved to New Milford
4. John Clark Jr. bapt 08 Sep 1700 was not followed, no longer being in Milford, but was of an age to have been Lemuel's father, and he was in the right place. But there is no proof.

Our Lois (Averill) Clarke is another 17-year-old bride, much younger than in previous generations, possibly a frontier trend.

(General) Elisha Averill Bapt 24 Feb 1754 was an awfully young Deputy Commissary General in The Revolutionary War in 1776, and for some reason generally called "Avery" in the records, but was definitely our man. He entered the service from Connecticut, but New York is where the War was going on, and where you generally find him in the records. General Washington and others called their officers "Mister"- just so you will understand the following quotes, not of very great importance, but they do give one an idea of the difficulty of procurement of supplies for the American Army, which is what a commissary did. *

> "Albany Cte of Corres. Meeting 7 Sep 1776. One of the members, Mr. Philip Frisbe from Kings District expressed concern about the uneasiness of the public respecting 'the sale of hides to the people...in consequence that People (in Phila & NJ) refuse to sell cattle for the use of the Army...Mr. Livingston informed them that the matter was conducted by Mr. Elijah Avery (who) had contacted a Mr. Ogden of NJ for all the Hides the public might have at Ticonderoga." (This goes on to say that Avery was acting under the chief commissary general, to whom he was alone accountable. Prices were discussed, and Livingston wrote regarding wagons which could be procured gratis to carry goods.)
>
> "31 Oct 1776. ' Resolved that Mr Elisha Avery Deputy Commissary General be requested to furnish Collo. Peter Van Ness's Regt of Militia with Provisions during the time they are stationed in this city.'"

---

*Minutes of the Albany Committee of Correspondence 1775-1778, Vol I by James Sullivan (1923) pg 545, 592, 596 & 597

"1 Nov 1776.'Received following note from Elisha Avery, Esqr., Dep. Com. Gen. dated this day-----(message not printed)'"
"2 Nov 1776. 'Ordered that an order issue to the Deputy Commissary General Mr. Avery for 49 Rations for the Keeper of the Tory Gaol & 5 of his prisoners.'"

The genealogy says Heitman's history of Rev. War officers states he was from CT, and that he was "Deputy Commissary-General of Issues during the Amer. Revolution from 18 June 1777 to August 6 1777 when he resigned." That does not make much sense in light of other documents. She also mentions a 5 July 1777 record of the trial of Gen. Arthur St.Clair in which "Mr. Avery, Deputy Commissary General of the Northern Department" being sworn, testified to the quantity of provisions at Ticonderoga and Mt. Independence and its dependencies and that on 10 June 1777 preceding, General St. Clair complained because "Mr. Avery does not appear to properly attend to Army supplies" She also quotes New Hampshire State Papers dated Dec'r 15, 1777 order to General Avery for supplies, which was important only in showing he was still active after August 1777 when he was supposed to have resigned. Maybe he threatened to resign after St. Clair's abuse--if so he was not alone, as St. Clair, an imperious sort, made enemies wherever he went. As later governer of Ohio territory he had far more enemies than friends, and his army record was a fiasco--but that's whole separate subject.

With his prominence, it is strange that more is not known about when he married or the name of his wife, called Mary. Some of the oldest children were evidently born in CT before March 1785, when some land was conveyed to him by a William Fitch. The history of Pawlet VT says he came there from New Milford CT in 1787 and was one of the most prominent of the early settlers. He was first local captain of the Light Infantry (peacetime) and first constable for 4 years, 1795 through 1798. The family moved west in 1803, and may have been at St. Johnsville, Montgomery Co NY. They were in Farmington (near Manchester) Ontario Co. by 1815, and he died there age 67 in 1821. Mary died there age 63 in 1823. There were 11 children.

Amy Averill born about 1760, married Julius Caswell on 28 October 1779. The genealogy does not follow her except to say (based on her father's will) that she married a Caswell, and puts her in the wrong order, behind her sister Patty (who named a baby daughter Amy Caswell Murray). Only a little more has been learned, the marriage from Washington church records, and whom Julius's parents were from Orcutt, who gives his birth date as 19 Sep 1759, the youngest of five known children of Josiah and Abigail (Kinne) Caswell. The others were Ann 1752, Daniel 1754, Mary 1755 and Eli 1757.

New Milford Deeds V14:115 say that on 16 Dec 1776, Josian Caswell sold her uncle Daniel Averill land "lying west of the Weraumagne Iron Works & West Pond, bounded westerly of Wm. Cogswell, Esq's land." Signed Josiah Caswell, recorded 27 Oct 1779 by Wm. Cogswell, Justice.

Though Caswell was not a common name, a search for Julius's grandparents has been unavailing. There seems to be no Caswell genealogy, but there are clues. Torrey's marriages prior to 1700 lists only 11 Caswells, most of whom lived in Taunton, Plymouth Colony, evidently descended from Thomas (-1697) and Mary, one of whose sons, William Caswell (1660-) married Mercy Lincoln (1670-) daughter of Thomas and therefore another great aunt of Abraham Lincoln. Is this a strange coincidence, or were Josiah Caswell and Zephaniah Branch who married Amy's Aunt Sarah (Averill) Branch related? Josiah married a Kinne, and Zephaniah's stepmother was a Kinne.

And after this Julius and Zephaniah just disappear--to New York or Vermont, I suppose. The 1790 Vermont census shows a Josiah Caswell with three females; and a Beal Caswell with 1 boy, 3 men over 16, and three females living at Middletown, Rutland Co. VT, not far from Moses and Elisha Averill at Pawlet. I'd be willing to bet they were related to Julius and Amy in some way. See Vermont map page 75.

Martha Averill Jr. "Patty" born about 1762, was married to Solomon Murray on 14 August 1782. She wore a sky blue silk dress with fleecy white clouds on it, and short sleeves. With it she wore elegant long gloves with link buttons reaching clear to the sleeves. Up to 1900, the buttons were still in the possession of descendants.

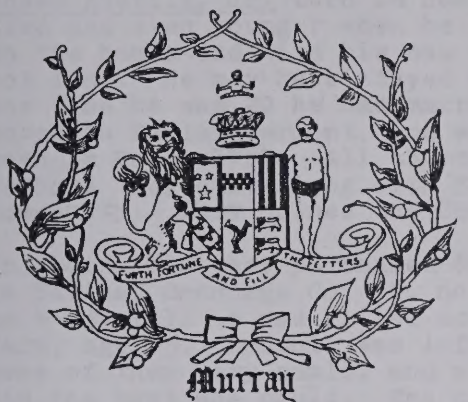
Solomon Murray, the bridegroom, was born 17 August 1758 in the Merryall neighborhood, clearly visible in gazetteers, about 4 or 5 miles SW of New Preston or about due west of Marbledale, where they quarried all that marble. (see Litchfield Co. map). There is a Murray Genealogy, and their great grand-daughter wrote, "Solomon Murray was the youngest of the eight sons of Jehiel and Mary (Way) Murray...Like all his brothers he served in the Revolutionary War but at first not being old enough, he went as a servant to one of his brothers who was an officer. Later he had one year's actual service, for which he was allowed a pension. At the time of his discharge he served in Capt. Swift's Co. of infantry in Col. Charles Burrill's Regiment."

In 1787 Solomon and Patty Murray and their little ones left their home near Washington TWP, going on horseback with their goods following in an oxcart for Canaan, Columbia Co. NY where two of his brothers lived. From there they moved to Claverack where Solomon served as sheriff about 1798. "Solomon Murray was quite prominent and well-to-do for that day, and a gentleman of the old school, possessing keen judgment, independence and dignity." according to the book.

Martha (Patty) died in 1805 at Claverack, according to her granddaughter, at the age of 42 years, as she told Clara Avery and I believe, though the other book makes it a little sooner. She had eight or nine children but only 4 lived to marry.

---

*Descendants of Jonathan Murray of Guildford Connecticut by William P. Murray



Above: Murray Coat-of-Arms
Right: This portrait of Solomon Murray was painted in 1797, when he was 39 years old, soon before he and Patty moved to Columbia County, New York.

Solomon Murray 1758-1822

Solomon never remarried after Patty's death. He continued on in the homestead many years, but after Elizabeth born in 1789 was married he lived a while with her and her husband Samuel Chase who earned the name "Wild Goose Chase" because they moved so often--at least 7 wide-flung cities, including Baltimore and Richmond VA. Rev. War pension papers say he died at Taghkanic, just west of Copake where he lived with their son, William Cogswell Murray, in Jan 1822.

Solomon's grandfather, Jonathan Murray (1669-1747) came to Guildford CT at age 20 from Perthshire? Scotland, and married 1688 Ann Bradley whose father, of West Riding Yorkshire had been an officer in Cromwell's army and fled to CT after the restoration. They had nine children, the youngest of whom was Jehiel (28 Mar 1708-17 June 1798).

On 12 Nov 1733, Jehiel married Mary Way (1715-1806) dau. of George & Lydia (Sprague) Way, and was the only one to "go West." He settled at Merryall, and his name is on the list of those petitioning for the new church at future New Preston. Even that would have been far! The couple had eleven children, including eight sons, most of whom fought in the Continental Army. Everyone knows the Scots make fine military men, and if you add an officer in Cromwell's army into the gene pool, what do you get? Solomon Murray, of course. And statesmen, maybe. His brother Reuben Murray was great-great grandfather of Sir Winston Churchill.

AVERILL FAMILY

Moses Averill, Jr. born in June 1766, was only 17 when his father died and even younger when he lost his mother. How long he remained in the homestead with his new stepmother is hard to say, but it was not long. He may have stayed with Isaac or Elisha for a while. By the time he was 20 he had married young Cynthia Russell, born in 1770, moved to Pawlet Vermont, and was still 20 when the oldest son was born in March 1787. All thirteen of their children were born there. Perhaps they came along with Elisha, who was a prominent man in that community. They joined the Congregational Church in 1805.

In about 1810 they purchased 640 acres of land in the Military Tract in Salina, Onondaga Co. NY, now a northern suburb of Syracuse. But on 4 Oct 1811 he was killed accidentally when felling a tree on his farm, age 45. Cynthia was left with a large family to care for, some of them very small, and a large farm still unpaid for, but she did the best she could. The older children had received good educations--including another Dr. Isaac Averill. But times were harder for the younger ones, some of whom became early Michigan pioneers, struggled to earn a living, and were so pitifully poor they nearly starved in the cold at first. Descendants say they were all tall, straight and muscular with light hair, blue eyes, and wonderful musicians. Cynthia, who did not migrate, died 7 Aug 1823 age 53.

Cynthia's paternal ancestry is hard to figure out, because we do not know whether she was from CT or NY. The only Litchfield Co. Russells mentioned were Stephen who married there in 1772 and his younger half-brother John, and they came there not long before, from Wethersfield on the CT River just south of Hartford. They would have been descendants of John Russell (1595-1680) a Wethersfield first settler; but we don't know that they had any sisters or not.

It seems probably more likely that her father was an unknown man from New York. Cynthia's mother was a Hallenbeck, presumably related to Lt. William Hallenbeck who served in the Revolution alongside Moses' brother Isaac. And Hallenbecks tagged along when they went to Vermont, then Michigan. We do know where the Hallenbecks came from. *

This family, descended from the very prolific Casper Jacobsz Hallen beck, came to the Hudson Valley around 1651 from the hamlet of Halenbeck near Kiel in Holstein and took up farming. In 1687 he was approached by Mrs. Maria Van Renssalaer to purchase some extra pasture land his son had been leasing, "because the old man cannot manage it" and she had debts to pay. He and son Jan bought lands west of the Hudson in the Coxsackie area. This is across the river from Kinderhook, where Moses' brother Dr. Isaac lived for a while. There were three sons, Isaac-probably not ours, this Jan, and Jacob. Either of the last two could have been Lt. William's grandfather. They multiplied so rapidly that even the source I quote could not figure it all out. In their effort to get out from under the old established patroon system, they succeeded in buying a lot of land & prospered, becoming part of the local government themselves.

---

*Dutch Uncles & New England Cousins by Wilson Clough (1954)

The son Jacob bought land around Claverack around 1694 and began an estate called Klinkenberg. Claverack, which means Clover-reach when translated from the Dutch, was very fertile. This is where Moses' sister Patty (Averill) Murray lived.

To this I can only add an excerpt from a March 1757 Indian deed to what is now Copake, New York, purchase from Stockbridge Indian chiefs Benj. Kohkewenaunant and Mohkkauwauweek by John Hollenbeck, William Hollenbeck, Michael Hollenbeck, Andreas Rees, John Reas, William Reas and the Rest of the Persons above Named.* (There was a very long list of names including a Joshua Boardman and a **William** Noble, possibly New Milford CT men.) I have been unable to find our ancestor Captain George Rice, Philo Averill's father-in-law, and this may or may not be a clue if he was Dutch instead of Welsh, but more about that later. Strangely, this was a Massachusetts deed, registered by Edward Pyncheon, Registrar, Hampsire Co. Perhaps the Stockbridge tribes holdings extended past the state line into New York.

The price of the land was "Five Hundred & Sixty one Pounds New York Money." "William Hollenbek" was son "to sd John Michel Hollanbeek." John is translated "Jan" in Dutch. Perhaps that is a clue. A glance back to the little map of early New York land patents--area around Kinderhook--in the previous chapter about the children of Isaac and Esther Averill, may make all this easier to visualize. (page 53)

Currence Averill, named for a previous sister who died as a baby, an old New England custom, was her brother Calvin's twin. They were only 14 when their father died, younger still when their mother passed away. Currence was probably short for "Concurrence," a Biblical-sounding name. We know she was living in 1784, but no further mention was made of her. We would like to think she grew up and married a nice man. Records are so hard to find for that point in time that we probably will never know for sure.

Calvin Averill, the youngest son, may have been one of the males over sixteen in his brother Elisha's household when the 1790 census was taken in Vermont before he reached his 20th birthday. His descendants were of the opinion that he lived in Rutland County during the early part of his first marriage though the children (13 of them) were all born in New York. His wives were Salome Clary and Sarah Gunn. He long outlived them both, but no dates were given, and discouragingly little about his life. His grand-nephew reported him visiting his brother Moses' children when he was 70 years old, at which time he was "tall, straight as an arrow, still able to jump over a fence without minding it, and musical, singing well to give pleasure to others and playing a flute." He stayed with relatives at Salina, Geddes, and Van Buren for visits (all in the Syracuse area) and died at Rome NY in the 1840's.

---

*Indian Deeds of Hampden County, Massachusetts (Being Copies of all Land Transfers from the Indians Recorded in the County of Hampden, Massachusetts, Together with Notes and Translations of Indian Place Names) edited by Harry Andrew Wright. (pages 165-6)

AVERILL FAMILY

Evidently Calvin and Salome moved from Vermont to Lorraine, in Jefferson Co. NY, over near Lake Ontario, quite some distance almost due north of Syracuse, where their first daughter was born, and maybe the oldest son, Benjamin Franklin Averill, who later settled in Louisville, Kentucky. They moved back eastward to Saratoga Co. NY where their daughter Amy was born 10 January 1800 at Hadley Township. She was the only one whose birthdate was given.

My own notes show him and older brother Philo, our ancestor, acting as chain carriers for a surveying crew at Hadley in 1802, and Philo later lived at Greenfield, just south of there. The town of Corinth now separates the two townships, but was not created until later, so they may have been living closer than it seems. The children later spread out. It appears most of them went back to different towns in Jefferson Co NY, though one daughter moved to Philadelphia.

It is possible that Calvin's wives were distant cousins, but it is hard to say without more evidence. Clary, at that that time, was a very unusual surname, all descended from one man, who had a great-great grand-daughter named Salome the right age to be Calvin's wife. It does not say whom she married, but she had a brother living near the Vermont border and a cousin in Columbia Co. NY. Salome Clary was a rare name indeed. I strongly suspect she was Calvin's wife, though it has not been proven. Here is her lineage, just in case: *

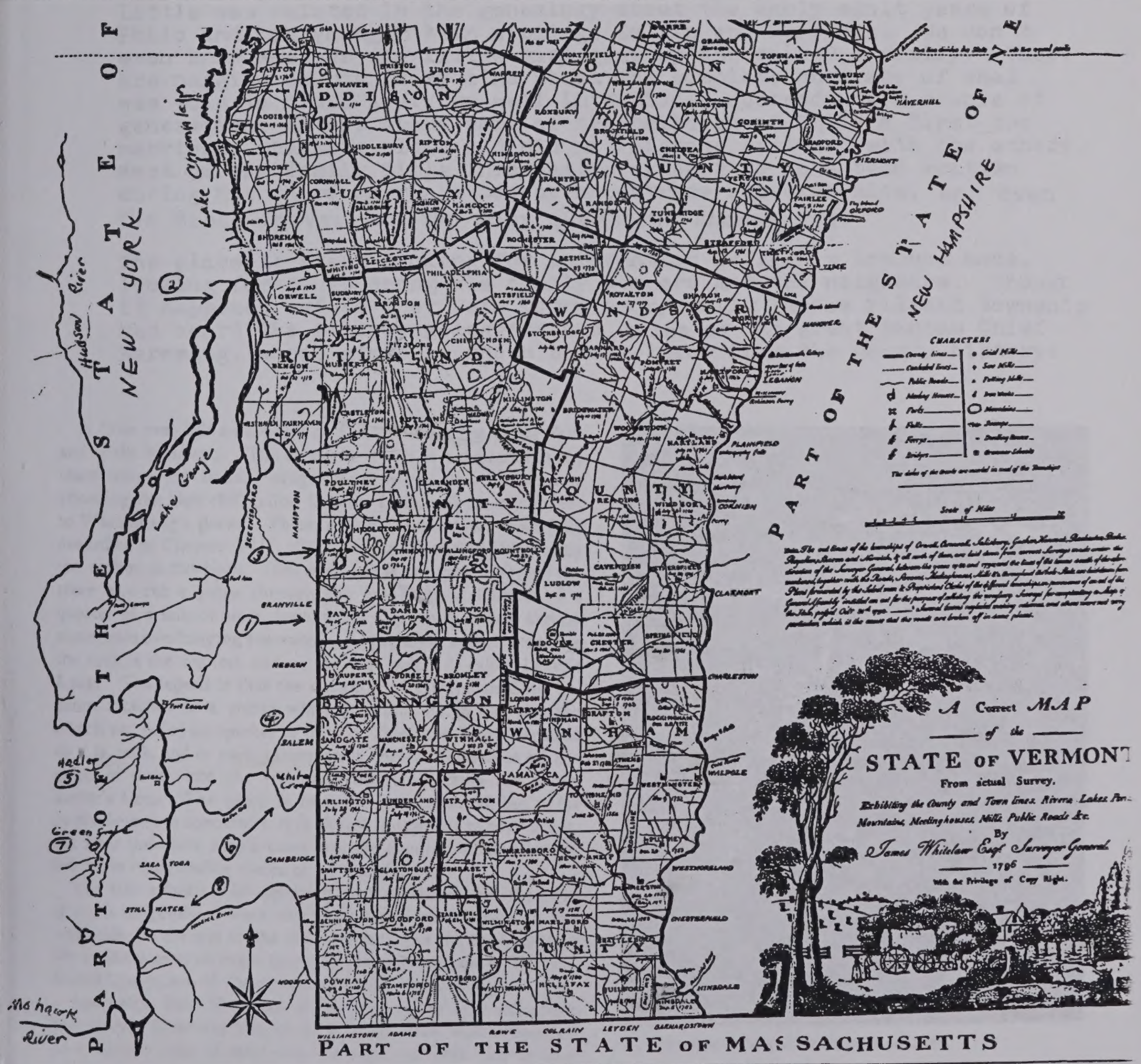
1. John Clary born about 1615 in England? migrated to Watertown MA where he married 05 Feb 1643/4 Sarah Cassell. They moved to Hadley MA established as one of the earliest trading towns with the Indians on the upper Connecticut River by the Mass. Bay Co. He was a miller. This town was hard-hit by the Indians in the King Phillips War, scene of many massacres, and a garrison was established there. She d. 1681 and he 1691.
2. John^{2} Clary, eldest son (c1645 born at Watertown) married 1670 in Haverhill Ann Dickinson, dau Nathaniel and Ann (Gull) Dickinson and lived in Hatfield and Northfield MA, same area He died 15 Aug 1688 and she m. 2) Enos Kingsley.
3. Joseph^{3} Clary (b. 1677 Hatfield d 1748 Sunderland MA) m. 19 Nov 1702 Hannah Belding, dau. Samuel. She d. July 1747. They moved up the River to Sunderland in northern MA where he became prominent.
4. Joseph^{4} Clary (b 1705 Hatfield d. Leverett) m. 25 Dec 1729 Sarah Gunn b. 1711, dau Samuel and Elizabeth (Wyatt) Gunn. How these Gunns were related to Calvin's second wife or the Gunns in Litchfield Co CT is presently unknown. This family lived in Amherst & Leverett MA in northern MA (Franklin Co.)
5. Joseph^{5} Clary (b. 1737 d. 1780 in Leverett) m. 17__ Sarah Ward (b 1738- d. 1816) dau. Isaac Ward. They had six children. After his death his widow m. a Mr. Ball & moved to Deerfield. Their father having died early, the children spread out.
6. Salome^{6} Clary, third child, was born 15 April 1768. She would have been a year or two older than Calvin Averill, which is appropriate. Her oldest brother Isaac moved to White Creek NY, near the VT border, and later to Ohio. Her youngest brother Elihu also moved to Ohio. Her cousin Arad Clary b. 1769 at Sunderland moved to Columbia Co. NY.

---

*Clary Genealogy - 4 Early American Lines pages 494-8 by Ralph E. Rowland et al

AVERILL FAMILY

Below - 1796 map of the southern half of Vermont. Several Averill brothers and sisters-5th generation-lived in Rutland County.
Elisha, Moses, Lois, and probably Calvin lived at Pawlet - #1
Lois moved farther north to Orwell - #2
Amy may have lived at Middletown--Caswell relatives did - #3
Various Cogswells and Hurds lived at Sandgate - #4
In nearby parts of New York, Calvin lived at Hadley - #5
Calvin's wife, Salome Clary, probably lived at White Creek - #6
Philo lived at Greenfield - #7 and Stillwater #8



PART OF THE STATE OF NEW YORK
NEW YORK
Lake Champlain
Hudson River
Lake George
Hadley ⑤
Green field ⑦
Mohawk River
White Creek
②
③
①
④
⑥
⑧
ADDISON COUNTY
ORANGE COUNTY
RUTLAND COUNTY
WINDSOR COUNTY
BENNINGTON
WINDHAM
COUNTY
ORWELL
MIDDLETOWN
PAWLET
SANDGATE
GRANVILLE
HEBRON
SALEM
CAMBRIDGE
SARATOGA
STILL WATER
PART OF THE STATE OF NEW HAMPSHIRE
NEW HAMPSHIRE
PART OF THE STATE OF MASSACHUSETTS
CHARACTERS
Scale of Miles
A Correct MAP of the STATE OF VERMONT
From actual Survey.
Exhibiting the County and Town lines, Rivers, Lakes, Ponds, Mountains, Meetinghouses, Mills, Public Roads &c.
By James Whitelaw Esqr Surveyor General
1796
With the Privilege of Copy Right.

PHILO - THE EARLY YEARS

Philo^5 Averill (Moses^4 Isaac^3 William^2 William^1) son of Moses and Martha (Cogswell) Averill, was born 03 March 1768, in the frontier village of New Preston Connecticut in the township of New Milford-Kent-Washington, where he spent his minority. The family didn't move, the boundaries did. His childhood was cut short by the early deaths of both parents before he was sixteen years old.

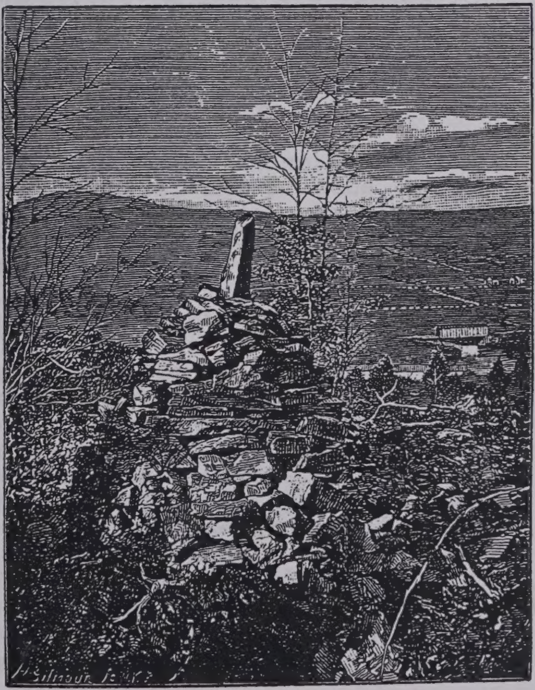
Little was related in the genealogy about the early adult years of Philo and his younger twin siblings Calvin and Currence. We don't even know whether the little girl grew up and raised a family. There are nagging doubts in my mind about the complete accuracy of what was told to Clara Avery by well-intentioned descendants a couple of generations later, about some of the children of Philo's first two marriages who were older and did not migrate westward with the others. Most of the family Bible information appears to have been written during his third marriage to our ancestress Rebeckah Rice, and even the Bible leaves far too many questions unanswered.

The place to start looking for information is in his boyhood home, looking for clues among his family members and the neighbors. Though it happened before they were born, every child in New Milford township had heard the following legends and tales of the great Bantam Chief Waramaug, whose grave is shown below, taken from the county history:

A little over half-a-mile east of Lanesville are the Great Falls and Falls Mountain. The former of these is celebrated as the place where the Indians caught lamprey-eels, and the latter as affording the high cliff, called Lover's Leap, and the monument to Waraumaug's grave. These natural wonders are more fully described in Chapter VIII, of the Indian History published by the author of this book. The mountain is not very high, but the river has cut a gorge through the mountain, a distance of a quarter of a mile or more, leaving the rock on each side abrupt, sometimes overhanging the water. At the lower end of the gorge the rock is the highest, and on the east side it is called Lover's Leap. The legend is that the daughter of the Indian Chief became attached to a young white man and he to her, and the match not being acceptable to the old Chief, the lovers repaired to this rock, and in each others' arms threw themselves off the point of rocks into the river, and from this came the name, Lover's Leap. The place is romantic and beautiful, but so far as the legend is concerned, it is almost impossible to have occurred after the white people came into the country without having left more recognizable traces of its truthfulness.

The falls afford a wild-appearing rush of waters, but the hand of art is diligently at work erecting a large manufactory on the west side, on the site of the old grist-mill, and the bustle of city life is likely soon to begin there, on the site, perhaps, of the celebrated tent-palace of the renowned Chief Waraumaug.

Just below Falls Mountain at the Cove, on the west side of the Housatonic River was located the Fishing Place, which consisted of a narrow strip of land with the right to catch fish at that place.



WARAUMAUG'S MONUMENT, NEW MILFORD.

[illegible]

A little over half-a-mile east of Lanesville are the Great Falls and Falls Mountain. [illegible] of these is regarded as the place where the Indians [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible]

We may be sure all the local children gazed at Waramaug's monument and marveled at the white youth's devotion to the pretty Indian princess. And since the Indians had reserved the right to continue using their favorite Fishing Place at the Falls of the Housatonic, they must have been a familiar sight, at least seasonally. Two centuries later, we forget how much contact there was among the races. Though the settlers certainly could have done much of their own fishing and seining, one supposes the Bantams earned extra revenue by selling lamphreys and shad to them. Seafood must have been a staple in our young hero's diet. To get a better idea of the terrain, consider that presently the Appalachian Trail loops near Kent (map pg. 65) to avoid crossing a reservation where descendants of Weramaug's tribe still live, and continues northeast passing the Falls where they fished when Philo was a lad, and on towards Cornwall Bridge close to where the Allen Brothers spent their childhood years--growing up in such a place, it it is no wonder they felt such an affinity with the Green Mountains of Vermont later on.

The land in Litchfield County would have been forced to yield some grain in spite of the rocky, sloping terrain of low fertility, because the resourceful Yankees needed it, but it was much more suitable for grazing. Hillsides were before long filled with sheep. Wool production was profitable, and cattle later on. Ironworks and mining of other ores including silver paid off well once Parliament could no longer meddle in American affairs, but by then Grandpa Ed Cogswell was in heaven. Marble quarrying was common, and even the granite which underlay the whole region. Connecticut Yankees are famous for their resourcefulness. As one book says,

> "Litchfield County, Connecticut is hilly, rocky, and of limited fertility--and yet this small area has produced more notable citizens than almost any other place in the United States."*

Wanting to lead a good life in a place like that, those people had to come up with innovative schemes and gadgets, and produce useful products or utensils which they peddled far and wide. Sample lists of New Milford businessmen (Kent & New Preston would have been similar) circa 1790-3, who may or may not have had some connection to our family, were merchants Daniel & Elijah Boardman, tavernkeeper Sherman Boardman Esq., shoemakers Epinetus & Captain Abner Gunn, silversmiths John Beach & William Clark, millers Stephen Miles & John Murray, joiner Hinman Hurd, and cooper Daniel Comstock. Those surnames were associated with our family members at varying times. Back in the French & Indian War a few of the many who served from there were Lowell Hurd (one of Philo's daughters married a Hurd later on), Sgt. John Murray, and Drummer Edward Cogswell (Jr?). Phineas Hurd and Remember Baker (Ethan Allen's cousin) were among those who invested in Vermont land through the assistance of the New York governor in 1760. In 1776 Elijah Boardman, age 16, served several months in the Revolution. Key names to keep in mind during our search for information are Bordman and Baker, Philo's first and second wives. The genealogy does not tell whom their parents were. We would like to know if we can.

---

*The Yankee Exodus, Stewart Holbrook, page 13. (McMillan 1950)

AVERILL FAMILY

Perhaps a short review of Moses Averill's will will provide clues to what happened later: first, the new stepmother Sarah, probably in accordance with a premarital understanding, was willed £30 and certain goods to relinquish the 1/3 of his estate dower that she was entitled to by law. One imagines she attempted to console her teenaged stepchildren, and later waved a fond farewell when things were settled. In accordance with the customs of the times, the married daughters would have been provided with generous doweries at the time they were wed, and now receive token bequests. Lois Clark of Vermont got £3,10s. Amy Caswell, also owner of Vermont land, got £6. Martha Jr. (Patty) Murray, the young socialite, got £3. We have read about her colorful departure for Canaan NY a couple of years later. Teenage Currence's £30 would have been to finance her future marriage.

Oldest son Isaac, already owner of Canaan NY land and practicing as a physician, was given £20 as the balance of his share and may have helped some of his youngest siblings get situated temporarily. The other four sons, Elisha, Moses Jr.,Philo and Calvin, were to receive equal shares of the balance of their father's estate to enable them to finance their own homesteads. Elisha and Moses (the latter evidently rather mature for an 18-year-old) were to be executors with the assistance of their older cousin Samuel Jr. So, when Sarah moved away and the estate was sold, all of the children left Connecticut. We know that Elisha and Moses went to Vermont. Where did Philo and the twins go? We don't know. I only surmise that Philo probably went to Canaan, because he shows up there in 1800, and lived near Isaac and/or Patty.

Consider also Philo's family background. His Grandpa Isaac had been a successful builder, his Grandpa Ed Cogswell an industrialist, his father Capt. Moses a community leader and legislator. His brother Elisha became a general, his brother Isaac a physician, and his uncle, Col. Bill Cogswell, so politically prominent that George Washington spent the night in his home. This orphaned youngster had much to live up to, and was expected to do his best! He would have been taught to be a young gentleman, and received the best local education available. True, his ancestors had migrated some distance in each generation, but they had married into upwardly mobile families considered the cream of the local social circle. But his upbringing was as an English Colonist and his adult life as a United States citizen, and as years went by living conditions were far different, but he never gave up trying. And he told his children and grandchildren about the Cogswells and his brother the general, so they could also be proud of their heritage.

Perhaps we can fill in some of the gap in our knowledge of how he spent his early years by reminding ourselves of his place in history. True, he had received an inheritance of an unknown amount, to purchase or at least put down on his own land, but he came of age with a disadvantage none of the ance stors had faced. Life after the Revolutionary War was different for most citizens, as a period of deep financial depression and social unrest set in. Eight long

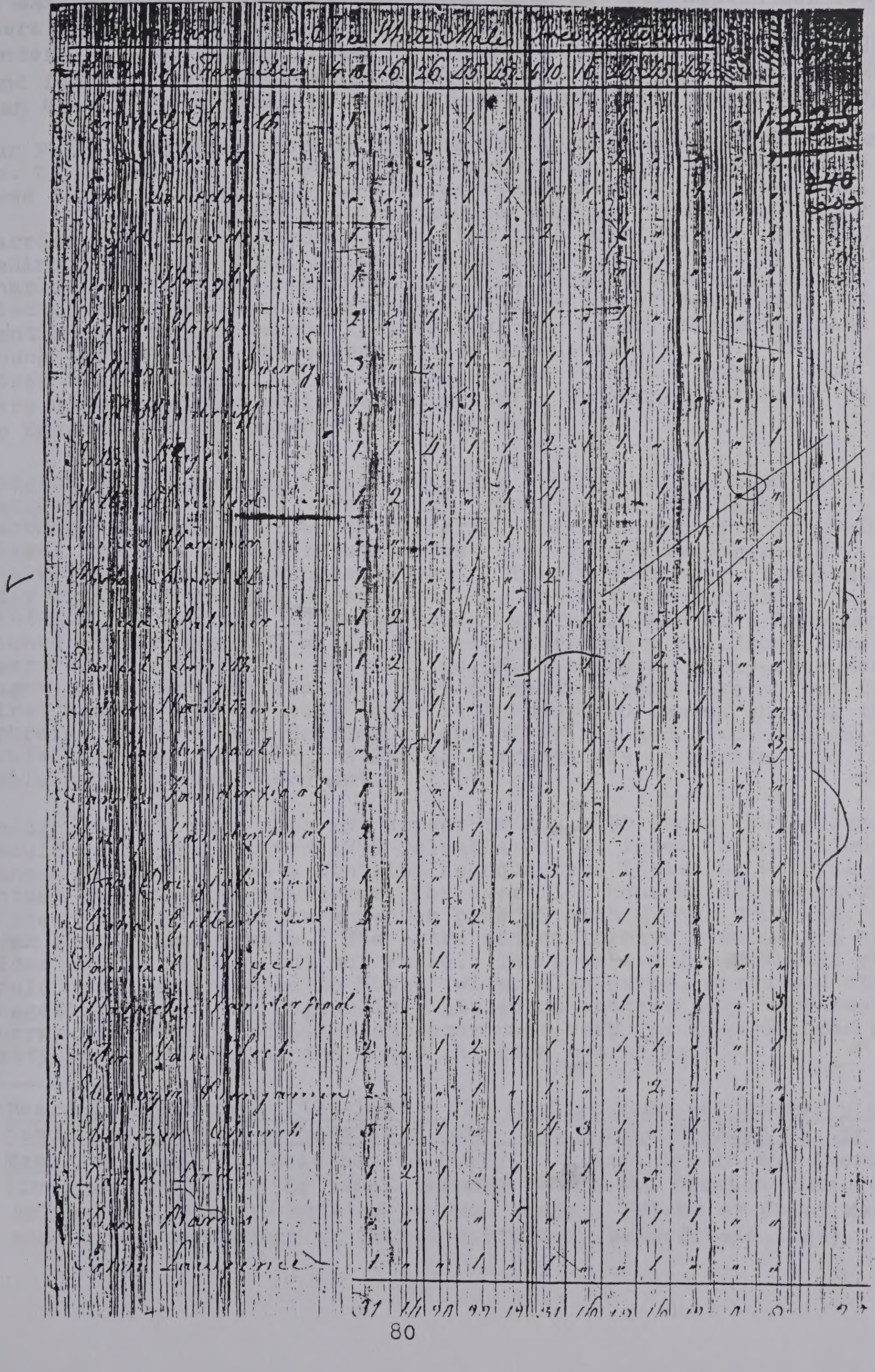
years of war had depleted the young nation of its economic stability. Perhaps we can illustrate the situation with an event all of us have read about in our history textbooks, that happened when he was twenty years old, just entering manhood. He was not a participant, and the scene of the action was mostly in western Massachusetts, but that was not all that far away, and the conditions that brought it about applied to all the surrounding states, including eastern New York if that was where he was.

Shays Rebellion broke out when a group of former soldiers, led by Daniel Shay and Luke Day, having spent years fighting to defend our country, found their homesteads being foreclosed because they could not repay debts and taxes accumulated during the years of their sacrifices. After looking in vain for relief from an unsympathetic state legislature, mob violence ensued, put down by General Lincoln under government orders. Several ringleaders were sentenced to death but public outcry forced their release in 1788. George Washington, then a leader of proceedings of the Constitutional Convention, was troubled by the occurrence and it influenced him to favor a stronger federal government to prevent such problems.

In the following year, 1789, Washington became the first president, and Philo Averill turned 21. In 1790 the first federal census was taken, and he probably should have been listed on it. It must be an error that he was not, for I believe, in spite of what the Averill Genealogy implies, that he was already a young married man with at least one child, maybe two, at age 22--following his brother Moses' example. But we are grateful to Clara Avery for every word she wrote, for many people seeking their ancestral roots get hopelessly stuck "somewhere in New York" during the era into which our story is leading us, when families leaving New England and the problems just mentioned, in hopes of improving their conditions, milled about here and there before getting established, perhaps farther west. Records during these confusing times were poorly kept, some perhaps not at all, vital records often not required or people living too far from local seats of government or too exhausted from clearing woodlands to take the effort to record things. At least we know who we are, even if a few details are out of context, like exact ages and such.

Please be warned that part of the following pages is research data and, as such, may or may not have anything to do with our family but is written here 'just in case.' This includes mention of people named Boardman or Baker or Rice (surnames of Philo's wives) or people, like Comstock, with whom they had business connections and perhaps more. There is no evidence, for instance, that Philo was ever in Vermont; but, since there is an unproven tradition by some of younger brother Calvin's descendants that he was there for a while, census statistics follow. We know that Elisha and Moses Jr., both married, moved to Pawlet VT between 1785 and 1787. The printed VT 1790 census index shows a little wiggle-room in Elisha's household with 3 men over 16, one boy and 5 females. Moses had

AVERILL FAMILY Page 202A, line 12, 1800 US Census, Canaan TWP, Columbia Co. New York, shows Philo Averill, age 26-45, a boy under 10, a boy 10-16, two girls under 10, a girl 10-16, no women.



1 man, 2 boys & 3 females. By 1800 (when neither Calvin nor Philo were there and the census-taker called them Avery) Elisha had 2 boys under 10, 1 boy 16-25, 1 man 45+, 2 girls under 10, 2 girls 10-16, and female 26-45. Moses had 2 boys under 10, 1 boy 10-16, man 26-45, man 45+. 3 girls under 10, girl 10-16, woman 26-45 and woman 45+.

Our Philo disappears for 16 crucial years, then shows up in Columbia Co. NY in 1800 as a 32-year-old widower with five young children (see illustration), two young wives having died in the meantime. sons in Kansas and Oregon a century ago reported that he married first Betsy Bordman, who died as a young mother, leaving behind two little ones, Melissa and Orilla. After that he married Charlotte Baker, who had three children, Rowlen Green, Betsy and Electa, and then she died as well. The causes of death were not mentioned, and one cannot help feeling sorrow for these two nice young ladies whose lives were cut so prematurely short. One supposes they both died of childbirth, so common before germs were discovered and medicine rudimental. We wish, at least, that we knew whom their parents were. We don't.

Judging by the census, Philo, like his brother Moses, must have been married by age twenty. Even today, young people who lose their parents prematurely often marry early, seeking stability in their lives. Wife Betsy (Elizabeth?) must have been a teenager also. There is a fine Boardman Genealogy.* I've poured over it repeatedly trying to determine her ancestry, but without success. The probably because, dying so young, she would not have been mentioned in her parents' wills. Unless Betsy was a childhood sweetheart from Connecticut, Columbia Co. NY history or early censuses ought to mention her family. They do mention some Bakers, but the first mention of Boardmans there is in the 1800 census showing three Ephraims and one Levy Boardman, long after she had died, though they could have been her kin. A Daniel Boardman was in Saratoga Co. but Philo hadn't moved there yet.

Though Philo's name does not appear in any 1790 index (but probably should have) the printed 1790 Columbia Co. NY index is enlightening. Canaan must have been a district headquarters including several nearby actual or potential townships, for over 1100 households are enumerated there. Brother Isaac is shown on page 59 with 2 boys under 16, 2 men over 16, and one female. The extra man could have been Calvin or an older son or helper, but not Philo. There were a few Russells who could have been related to Moses' wife, also Hurds, Rices and other suggestive names, no Cogswells. Listed on another page were Reuben Murray (Winston Churchill's ancestor) not very far from Solomon and Patty (Averill) Murray and their children but no men.

---

*Boardman Genealogy, 1525-1895 - The English Home and Ancestry of Samuel Boreman of Wethersfield Conn. and Thomas Boreman of Ipswich Mass. by Charlotte Goldthwaite (1895). Though not in the Averill line, my own family is twice descended from the Ipswich line. I think Betsy was distantly related to Rev. Daniel, friend of Chief Weramaug, possibly a descendant of Daniel's brother (Wetherfield line).

Because two doors from Patty dwelt a Stephen Baker -2 men, a boy, and 6 females, and thus a likely candidate, we will use him as an example of what Charlotte's family probably was like, though he was slightly younger than one would expect her father to be; in fact two years younger than Dr. Isaac Averill, also a physician, and obviously well acquainted with our family. Though Isaac had served in the War as an ensign, Stephen, like most soldiers regardless of family background, was a private. They both served in Col. William Bradford Whiting's 17th Regt., albeit under different captains. It is even possible that they received medical training from the same source. Records say he was buried in the area:

> "Name: Baker, Stephen, born 1752, died 29 Aug 1831. Spouse:(blank) Cemetery: Wadsworth Farm, County Route 9. Town: New Lebanon. County: Columbia. State: NY. Tombstone Inscription: Dr. Stephen Baker, died 29 Aug 1831 in the 80th year of his age. Service: (listed in) Fernow, New York Archives. Private in Whiting's 17th Regiment, Herrick's Company, Albany Co." *

A little map on next page shows that there was a Shaker community equidistant from the residences of the Averill and Baker families. This is mentioned because Clara Avery reported a family tradition that two of Philo's older children became Shakers "probably in New York." We have not yet learned what became of "Orilla," his second-eldest who, if the tradition were true, would likely have joined that community or the one at Watervliet, NY. Stephen, if truly related to Charlotte, could have been her uncle, cousin or brother.

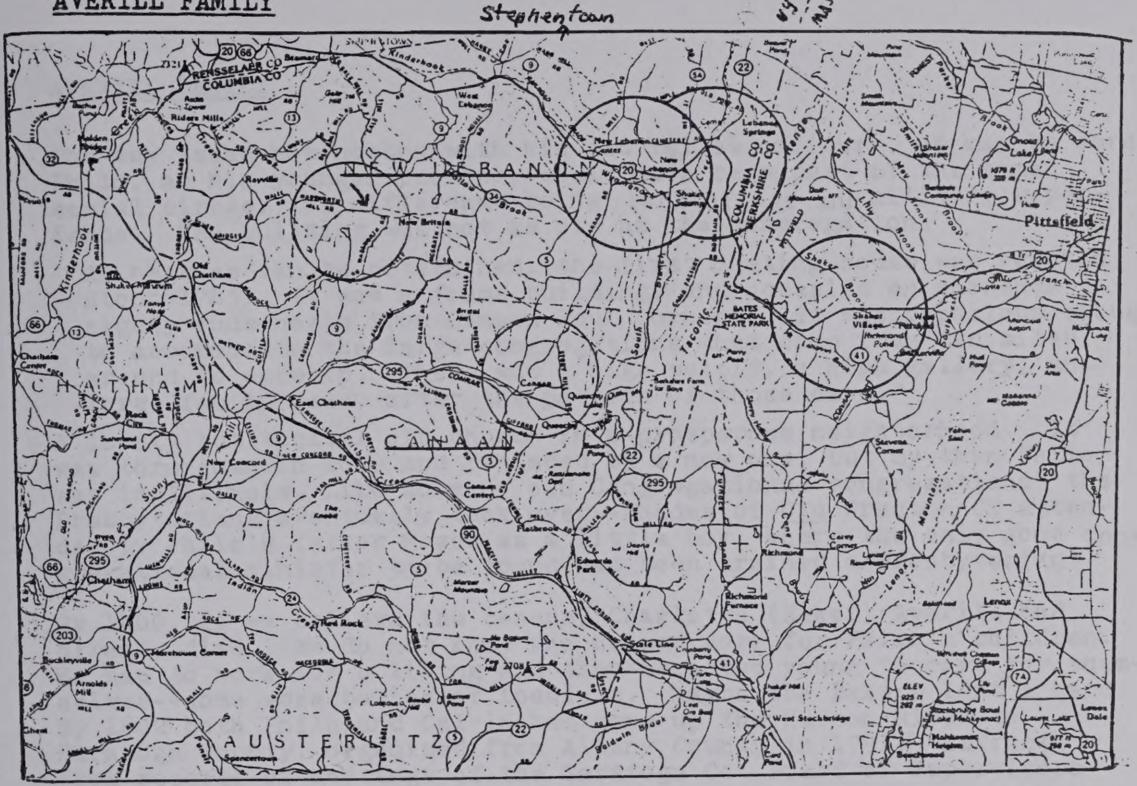
But Baker is a common name. The next (1800) census index shows nine Baker families in Canaan TWP. William lived near Stephen of whom there were now two), also there was Josiah, Christian, Daniel x2, Enoch and Ezra. And going back further, when Grandpa Cogswell bought land in "Woodbury North Purchase" (New Milford) in Sept 1745, it was from a John Baker. James Jr. and Jesse Baker resided a little later in Washington CT. Our search has only scratched the surface, but we have tried. The Columbia Co. history does mention Dr. Baker as being an early practitioner at New Lebanon; also prominent very early NY Bakers, one of whom bought land there from the Indians a century before! With the doctor's social connections, he may have attended the church not far away,

If Philo went to stay with his oldest brother after his parents died, they would have attended the First Congregational Church at Canaan, located at Canaan Four Corners. The county history says the church was organized "as early as 1772" and "It is believed that Col. William B. Whiting and Elijah Bostwick were the first deacons of the church." (Bostwick had been Isaac's first lieutenant.**)

---

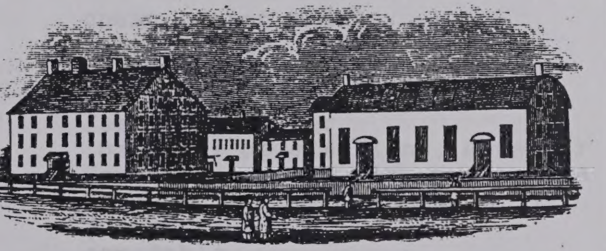
*Revolutionary War Veterans Buried in Columbia County, New York Vol II, page 31. Compiled by Esther Griswold French (DAR)

**Note: The wife of Hon. Sherman Bordman, son of Rev. Daniel, was Hannah Bostwick, dau. of Capt. Nathaniel Bostwick (m. 1755) This couple had 7 children, no Betsy listed. Their grandson, Henry M. founded the town of Boardman, Mahoning Co., Ohio.


Stephentown
NY | MASS.
NASSAU
RENSSELAER CO
COLUMBIA CO
Kinderhook
West Lebanon
NEW LEBANON
New Lebanon Center
New Lebanon
Lebanon Springs
Shaker Museum
Shaker Village
COLUMBIA
BERKSHIRE
Pittsfield
BATES MEMORIAL STATE PARK
Taconic
Old Chatham
Chatham Center
CHATHAM
East Chatham
Canaan
Queechy Lake
CANAAN
Canaan Center
New Concord
Chatham
Flatbrook
Edwards Park
Richmond
Richmond Furnace
Lenox
Red Rock
State Line
West Stockbridge
AUSTERLITZ
Spencertown

The Columbia Co. NY 1800 Federal census shows Philo and Dr. Isaac Averill and their sister Patty Murry living in Canaan Township. Isaac's colleague and possible relative of Philo's second wife, Dr. Stephen Baker, was in nearby New Lebanon. If you look closely at this section from a modern atlas, you can see where Rt. 9 crosses Wadsworth Hill Road, where he was buried. Both families were fairly close to the original Shaker Community, established in 1787, when the building featured in this 1841 woodcut was built.

Perhaps an older Averill child became a Shaker, at a site not known but probably either here or at Watervliet, New York. Article at right from Historical Collections of New York by John Warner Barber, pg 120 (1841)



Shaker Buildings in New Lebanon.

New Lebanon, Shaker village, called by its inhabitants the village of the "*Millennial Church*," is two and a half miles S. of the spring, on the western side of the Taghkanic mountain, and contains about six hundred inhabitants. The annexed view shows one of their dwellings (containing a *family* of 150 persons,) and their meeting-house, which was erected in 1823. This place of worship is somewhat singular in its construction. It is eighty feet long by sixty-five wide, all in one room, without beams or pillars, having a domical roof covered with tin; and a porch thirty-four by twenty-seven feet, roofed and covered the same way. The building is of wood, but the foundation and flights of steps are of marble.

"This edifice," says a visiter, "stands in a beautiful grass plat, in the centre of the village. There are no seats in the house, except for spectators of their worship. Their stone walls and other fences are constructed with the utmost regularity and precision, and their gate-posts are of massive marble columns, of many tons weight. They manufacture a great variety of articles for sale, which are remarkable for their neatness and durability.

The way Isaac hob-nobbed with his old fellow officers, we may be sure Philo, as his younger brother, would have been part of the same social circle, the difference being lack of age and military experience. The building was not as old as the congregation:

> "As near as can be determined, the first meeting-house was erected about 1785. It was a frame building, and occupied an eminence eighty rods north from Canaan Four Corners. It was capacious enough to accommodate the large congregations that came from ten miles around to worship. There was a high pulpit, a high gallery, and large family pews, after the pattern of those days."

A lovely but typical old church in a prosperous neighborhood. It was torn down in 1829 and replaced by a new one, but by then Philo was in Illinois. Like so many old Congregational congregations, the Presbyterians eventually took over--shades of Old Preston CT attended by Philo's father Moses as a little boy, where the only good Congregational minister to be found had been trained a Presbyterian!

By 1800, if we believe the census, Charlotte (Baker) Averill had already died. We do not know who helped care for Philo's children. He had to work for a living and they were too young to care for themselves--some were babies or toddlers. Maybe the Bakers lent a hand. By 1802 both Philo and Calvin had gone up the Hudson River to Saratoga County, organized from Albany County in 1791. Extracts from records of meetings of the Saratoga Co. Board of Supervisors mentioned hundreds of names. Among them were: *

"1802	Averill, Calvin	chain bearer, Hadley
1802	Averill, Philo	chain bearer, Hadley
1793	Baker, Henry	juror, Half Moon
1794	Baker, William	juror, Milton
1795	Baker, Edy	feeding prisoner
1792-1802	Boardman, Daniel	inspector of elections, assessor Saratoga, Greenfield, Hadley
1793	Cogswell, Christopher	attending general sessions
1797	Cogswell, Samuel	juror
1796	Cogswell, Reuben	constable
1800	Cogswell, Stephen	juror
1797-1798	Cogswell, Elisha	juror
1791-1802	Comstock, Adam	assembly
1791-1802	Comstock, Aaron	census
1793-1799	Comstock, Gideon	clerk election,Saratoga&Greenfield
1792	Rice, John	supporting pauper, Stillwater
1791	Rice, John	road thru land, Stillwater "

Calvin and Philo, wanting land, were helping a surveying crew. The other names were extracted solely because he or one of his three wives had relatives or business associates with those surnames and were in Saratoga Co. when he got there. We don't know if he was related to those particular Cogswells. His dealings with Comstock will be told later. The county history, telling about Greenfield,

---

*The SARATOGA a quarterly publ. of Valley Quarterlies for the county of Saratoga, Arthur M. Kelley, Rhinebeck NY. The names are taken from a list in a serial article beginning in Vol. 10 (said to be from a Nov 1946 typescript by Martha K & Henry C Ritchie)

lists Stephen and Captain Adam Comstock among those living there before 1800; and under Corinth (created from Greenfield in 1818;

"The next earliest settler (1786) was Adam Comstock, who was a Colonel in the Revolution, serving in Washington's Army at Valley Forge...He built the first frame house in 1788, which still stands. Prominent in public life, he served as Justice of the Peace, Associate Judge-Ct. of Common Pleas, member of Assembly 12 yrs, State Senate 4 yrs; 1804 elector from the Town of Hadley."*

The Comstock Genealogy** says the first immigrant William Comstock bought land from Richard Miles in Wethersfield CT in 1641. A much later Peter Comstock of Stillwater NY received his land 25 Oct 1765 from his brother Stephen of Norfolk CT. Their relative Aaron "settled at Half Moon NY soon after the Revolution...was a farmer & kept a public house on the bank of the Hudson. He had been Quartermaster of Col. Chandler's CT Regt in 1777, was Captain of Albany Co. NY 1786, Major Saratoga Co. 1793, Col. 1799."

Daniel Boardman settled at Jessup's Landing at Corinth (see Saratoga p81 Co. map) in 1790, site of the bateaux of an Adirondacks logging operation where the Jessup brothers had floated logs down to the river to market. During the War the brothers, who were Tories, fled to Canada to join the British Army and harrass their former neighbors. "Boardman built a gristmill and had a store by 1793. He was energetic and soon the most wealthy man in town. He furnished most of the money to build the Baptist Church." The Boardman Genealogy is a little confused about him (his being so prominent, this is odd) but one can figure out that He was the Daniel Boardman Jr born 1762 in Sheffield MA (map page 65) descended from Rev. Daniel Bordman's brother. "Most of the early settlers of Corinth came from the Connecticut Valley."

It was stated that one James Baker, who came to Stillwater before 1800, had 18 sons and 200 descendants during his lifetime."He was a firm believer in the preservation of the species." No wonder it is so hard to sort the Bakers out!

Based on recollections of Philo and Rebecca's sons Henry and Norman long after the fact, passed on to Clara Avery by their own sons, she conjectured that the much older half-brothers and sisters of the first two marriages were younger than they possibly could have been when one adds in additional factors. It is understandable when one considers that those two boys were so much younger that they may not have even remembered most of the older ones. My table here, which certainly could stand revision, is based on two factors, the 1800 census and the fact that Rowlen Green Averill died in 1816 in Indiana leaving a widow and young son who went back to New York State, thus must have been at least 20 or more at the time. But if he married super-early and/or the census-taker put Charlotte's age in the wrong column that would change everything--though he could not have been

---

*Saratoga County Heritage by Violet B. Dunn et al, pp.369, 284, etc.

**Descendants of William Comstock of New London, Connecticut by Cyrus B. Comstock (1907) pages 53, 60, etc.

born in 1806, as suggested. It is unfortunate we cannot find Philo in the 1810 census to shed more light on the subject. Another discrepancy is that the census lists one of the older children, maybe Orilla, as a boy. Perhaps the name was actually Orville or Orwell or some such name which would look about the same in faded old handwriting. Or that could have been another census error. There were some Orillas in the Boardman Genealogy.

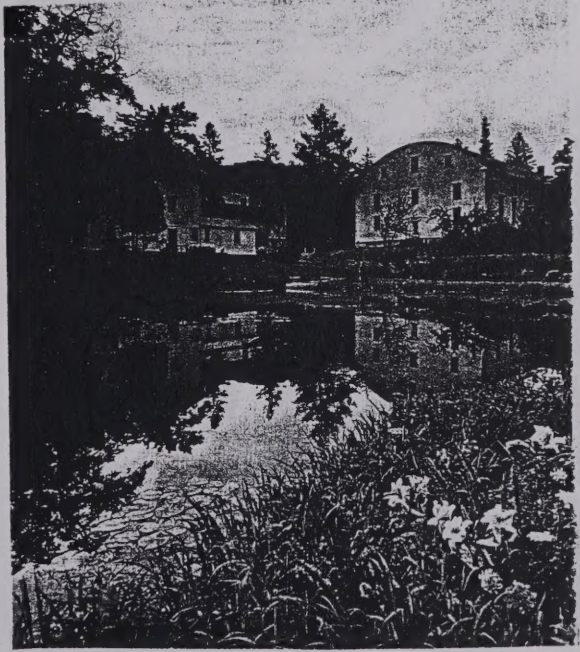
Children of Philo and first wife, Elizabeth (Boardman) Averill:

Malissa	bca 1789?	m. Timothy Haskell & went"to IL then MI then South"
Orilla	1790?	"joined the Shakers"--"in New York?" (they took both men and women) This needs verification!

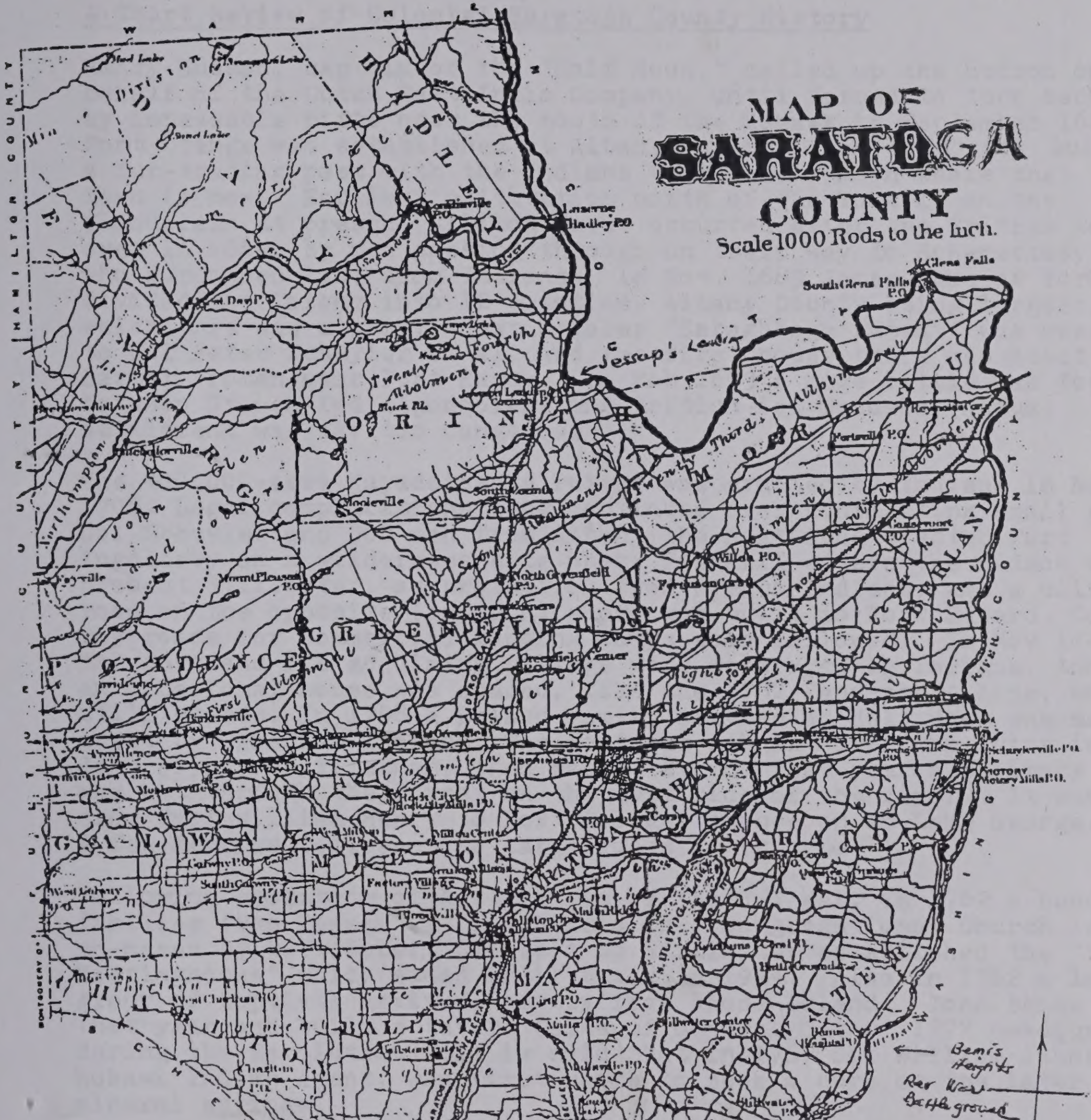
Children of Philo and second wife, Charlotte (Baker) Averill:

Rowlen Green	ca 1792?	m. (name unknown) He died 1816 in Indiana, leaving widow and baby Charles Averill
Elizabeth B.	1794?	m. John Gilliland 14 Dec 1818 in Vevay IN
Electa (really eldest??)	1795?	m. Nehemiah Hurd in NY, lived in PA, d. in Tennessee IL ca 1833/4

Betsy Averill, born during the second marriage to Charlotte Baker, was named for the deceased first wife. The first child of the third marriage to our ancestress Rebecca Rice, was named Henry James Cropsey Averill in honor of her deceased first husband, and the next child was named Charlotte Baker Averill in honor of his deceased second wife. As remarkable as that sounds in today's world, it shows love and respect for lost family members, and also mutual understanding between Philo and Rebecca.



At right - modern photograph of the 1786 first meetinghouse of the Shakers at Mount Lebanon New York (same as the woodcut on page 83). No photograph has been found of the meetinghouse at Watervliet founded the same year but that, also, would have been a lovely site. Most accounts say Shakers were not only pious but serene and industrious. Coincidentally, a Hannah Cogswell was head of a different early New England motherhouse, but it is thought that she was only an extremely distant relative.


MAP OF
SARATOGA
COUNTY
Scale 1000 Rods to the Inch.
HADLEY
DAY
EDINBURGH
CORINTH
MOREAU
NORTHUMBERLAND
PROVIDENCE
GREENFIELD
WILTON
GALWAY
MILTON
SARATOGA SPRINGS
SARATOGA
CHARLTON
BALLSTON
MALTA
STILLWATER
CLIFTON PARK
HALF MOON
WATERFORD
Jessup's Landing
Twenty Fourth Allotment
Twenty Third's Allotment
Bemis Heights
Rev War Battleground
Engraved and Printed by
H.J. TOUDY & CO.
505 CHESTNUT ST PHILADELPHIA
1860

AVERILL FAMILY

A Short Review of Colonial Saratoga County History

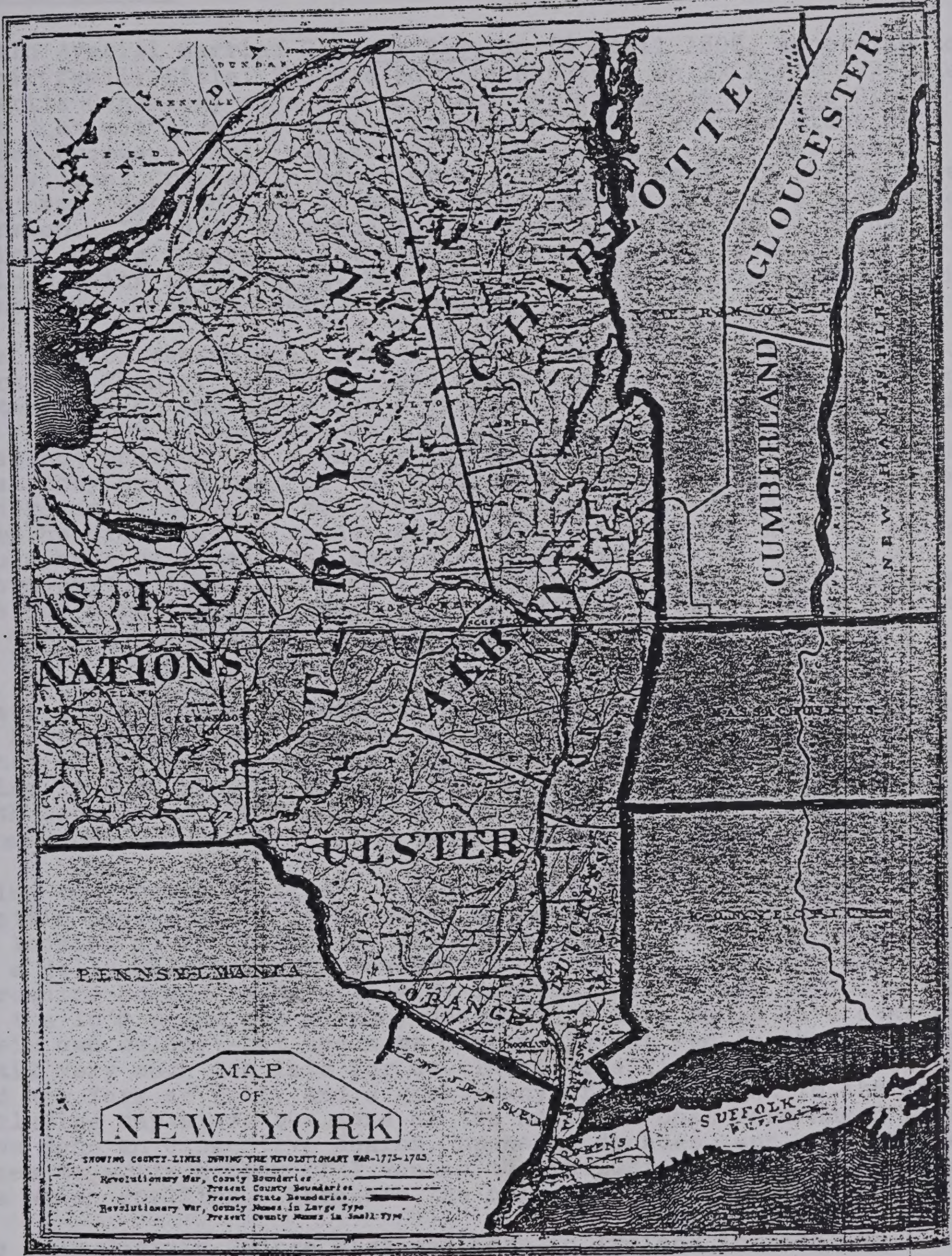
Henry Hudson, captain of the "Half Moon," sailed up the Hudson on behalf of the Dutch East India Company, until forced to turn back by impassable rifts near the mouth of the Mohawk in September 1609. Fort Orange was established at Albany in 1623, and the Dutch built a fur-trading post with the Indians called Half Moon where that town is now. Earliest cultivation north of the Mohawk, on the floodplain at present Clifton Park, occurred after the British took over in 1664, by men passing through on their way to Schenectady, who purchased land from Indians. In Nov. 1683 James Duke of York divided the Colony into 12 counties, Albany County being largest, of which this was a part. Next October "Saraghtoga Patent" was awarded to Col Peter Schuyler et al, and the first house there was built by Bartel Vroman near Fort Hardy. In Feb 1693 a huge battle was fought between French-led Algonquians and British-led Mohawks. Actual settlement was far too dangerous.

The 400,000-acre Kayaderossas Patent was granted by Indians in Nov 1708. Legal complications long continued over conflicting small grants. Col Schuyler and 300 men from Albany the next June erected Fort Ingoldsby on a wilderness site where Fishkill enters the Hudson at present Stillwater, as protection from French/Indians, and a military road on the opposite (eastern) shore was built to Fort Edward. Corduroy roads for commercial logging camps soon followed. In Nov 1745 the fort and its adjoining village were destroyed by Indians, though an occasional house was spared, like the 1732 Vandenberg home, which still stands. In 1748 a Leland Family settled at Half Moon was massacred by Canadian Indians. The fort was rebuilt over the ruins in 1756. John Flynn, an Irishman, then ran a tavern. That year a military road was cut through the forest on the west side of the river. It went from Fort William Henry to Fort George, thence on to Lake George. A few ferries followed, no large roads or bridges.

Following cessation of hostilities of the F/I War, in 1762 a hundred families from Canaan CT (Litchfield Co.) Congregational Church led en-masse by Rev. Robert Campbell to Stillwater established the "Yellow Meetinghouse" which stood until razed in 1924. Also in 1762 a large group of Baptists arrived, partly from Rhode Island. John Bemis came that year and built a tavern (site of General Gates' 1777 headquarters during the Revolution). It is said that in 1767 Sir William Johnson, Mohawk Indian Agent, was first white to seek a cure at the later famed mineral springs.

The county history names a few who came after, but population was rather static and hugged the two large rivers until after the Revolution, for though the more cleared land in future Greenfield-Corinth-Hadley would have been better for farming it was still too infested with tribes fighting each other to be safe. In 1775 the 12th & 13th State Militia were organized, backed enthusiastically by most residents. Tories were few, including a certain Freeman whose abandoned farm at Stillwater "Battle of Saratoga" is well publicized & need not be repeated. Settlement was rapid after that.

Rebecca Rice was born in New York in 1775. Question: Was she born here or in another part of New York? Where were her parents from?


TRYON
CHARLOTTE
GLOUCESTER
CUMBERLAND
SIX NATIONS
ALBANY
ULSTER
PENNSYLVANIA
ORANGE
NEW JERSEY
SUFFOLK
MAP OF NEW YORK
SHOWING COUNTY-LINES DURING THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR-1775-1783
Revolutionary War, County Boundaries
Present County Boundaries
Present State Boundaries
Revolutionary War, County Names in Large Type
Present County Names in Small Type

Boundaries of New York Counties during the Revolutionary War.

This map might help later in this chapter. Six Nations was essentially Indian lands. Tryon and Charlotte were very sparsely populated. New York claimed possession of Vermont, divided into counties as indicated, disputed with New Hampshire. Ulster Co. where the Cropseys lived, was bounded NW & SW by the Delaware River. Albany County then included what became Saratoga and Columbia Counties.

AVERILL FAMILY

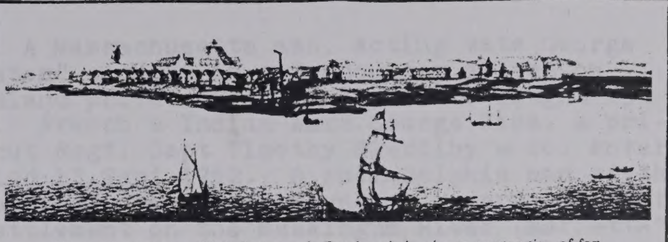
Philo Averill married Rebecca Rice on 16 April 1808, according to their family Bible. She was born in New York on 27 April 1775.The Averill Genealogy says she was daughter of Captain George Rice, but does not give her mother's name, and that she was widow of James Cropsey. Their oldest son, born the next July, was named Henry James Cropsey in honor of Mr. Cropsey. Most old records spell her name "Rebekah," so it may be that Rebecca is just a modernized version. It would be wonderful to know more than we do of her life which, going through all the experiences she had, could not have helped being interesting. She must have been good natured, sturdy, adaptable, a sweet lady. And smart.

The 1800 US census does show a "James Cropsy"family in Greenfield, Saratoga County, New York, (see illustration) with a man and a woman between 26-45 and a boy and a girl under 10. Rebecca would actually be 25, but as censuses go this is close enough. The genealogy does not mention Philo having any stepchildren, but it seems to me that they were a part of the household, and there could have been others as well--we do not know when James died--unless they died when he did, which I rather doubt. The Cropsey and Averill children would have been near the same age. Most of them would have been grown by the time of the move west. It is interesting to speculate whether more family members than we realize became Shakers. Philo is missing again in the 1810 census, so it is hard to verify any of this.

There is no Cropsey genealogy that I know of. The name was uncommon in New York in 1790, confined (spelt variously) to the Marlboro Precinct of Ulster Co. and the NY metropolitan area--four or five families in each place. The names James and Henry or Hendrik were in both localities. A Jacob and a John Crapsie were in Stephenstown NY, just north of Canaan. A few more details follow later. All Dutchmen?

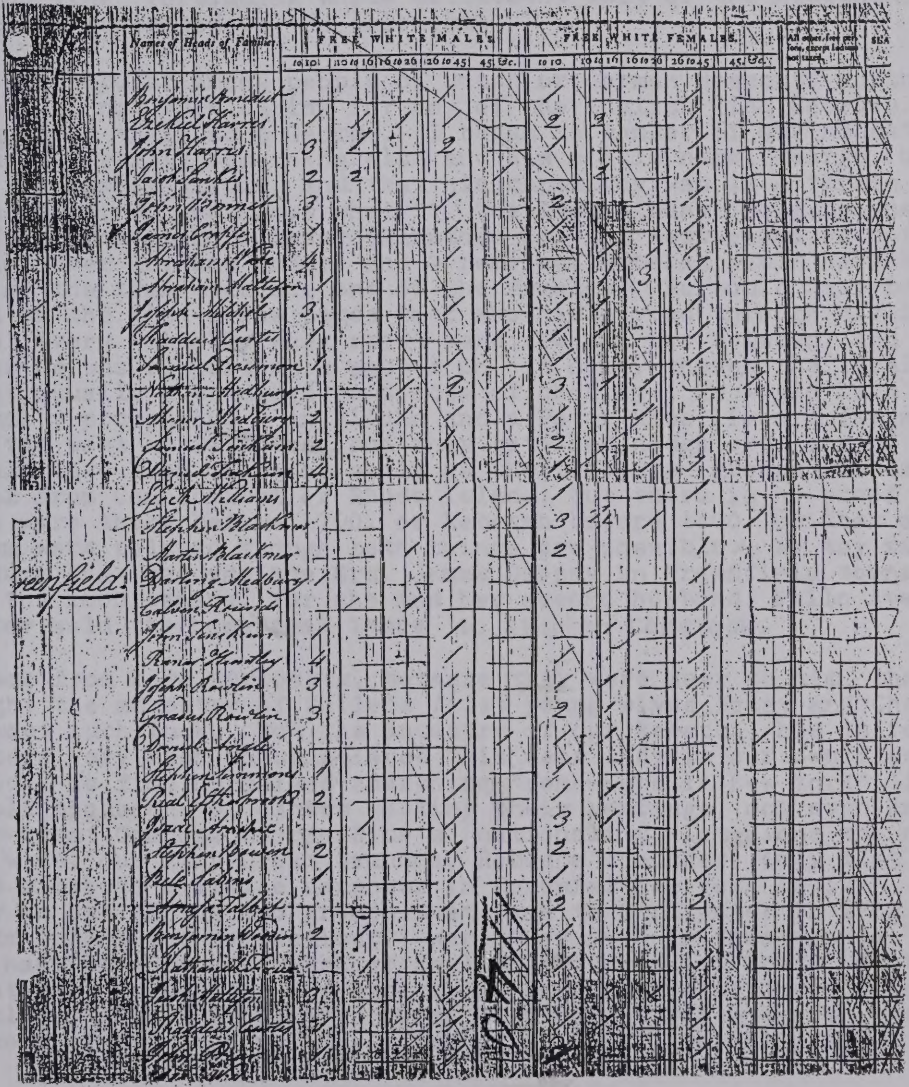
Being very naive at first, I had assumed that, with a name like Captain George Rice, it would be a breeze to find our ancestor, just by looking at Revolutionary War rolls. Perhaps he would turn out to be a jolly Welshman or a descendant of the very prolific Suffolk/Hertfordshire Edmund who, with wife Tamazin Frost, came to Sudbury MA in the 1630's and had so many descendants they could have started their own colony--but the name George did not run in their family until very much too late for us. There were Rices all over New England and New York as well, and a great many of them fought in the War, including captains, but none of the northern ones were named George. I've done an exhaustive search, spanning decades, and collected enough Rices to write a book if I wanted to, including Royces and Rhys(es) the Welsh spelling. Here are the only Georges remotely the right age:

The only Captain George Rice was born in Ireland in 1748. He lived in Winchester, Frederick Co. VA, where he died in 1800. He enlisted in 1775 and was captain in 1778 in the 11th VA Regt. under Col. Daniel Morgan. If he was one of Morgan's famous rifle corps it is possible he was one of those who fought in the "Battle of Saratoga," actually at Stillwater, a turning-point in the war, in 1777, but our Rebekah would have been 2½ by then. He could not have been her father.



View of Battery area of Manhattan early Dutch period, prior to construction of fort.

US Census - Greenfield TWP, Saratoga County NY - 1800. (Xerox copy of microfilmed page) James Cropsy is listed with his family, 6th family from top. Note the use of an old-style "s" in Cropsy.



Names of Heads of Families.

FREE WHITE MALES.

FREE WHITE FEMALES.

All other free persons, except Indians not taxed.

Greenfield

Benjamin Benedict
Ezekiel Harris
John Harris
James Cropſey
Joseph Mitchel
Thaddeus Curtis
Samuel Jenkins
Daniel Jenkins
Seth Williams
Stephen Blackmer
Martin Blackmer
Calvin Rounds
John Jenkins
Joseph Rowlin
Daniel Angle
Stephen Simmons
Stephen Bowen
Joseph Talbot

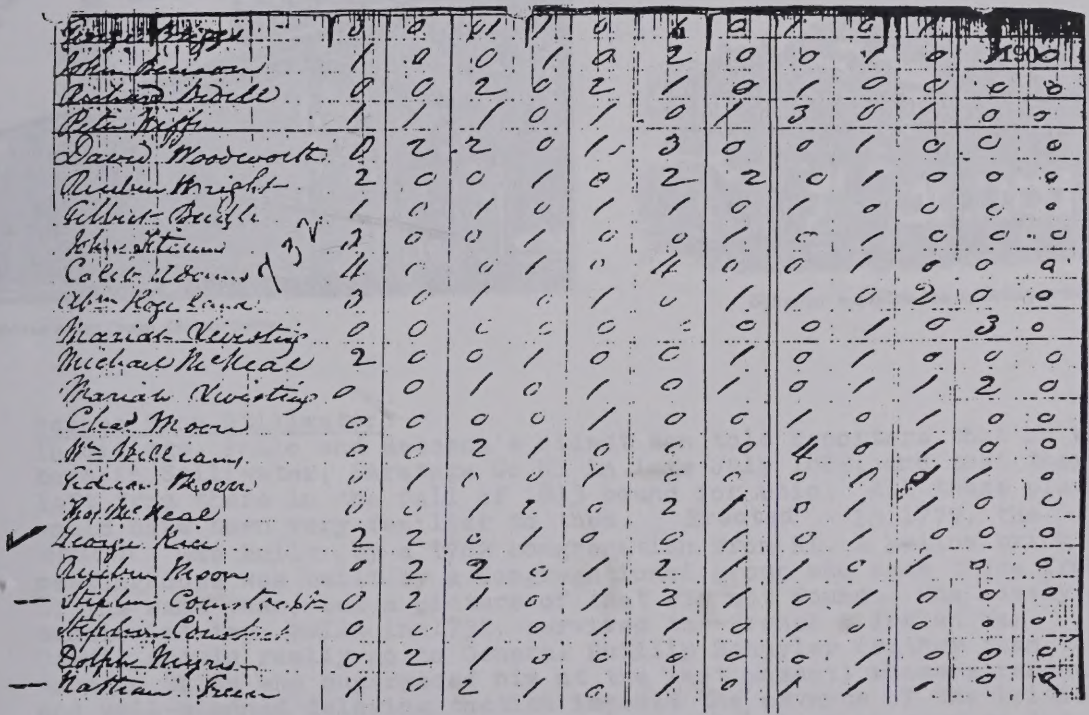
How about a sea captain? A Massachusetts man, Acting Mate George Rice of the Frigate "Boston" engaged in an encounter at sea on 30 July 1779. In Rhode Island private George Keith Rice fought 13 days in July/August 1780. French & Indian War? George Rice, a private in the 1st Connecticut Regt, Capt Timothy Hierlihy's Co. entered service March 22 was killed 13 Sept 1762. A Philadelphia man of the name stayed there. No connection has been found to a very early-after-the-war captain in the settlement on the Muskingum River (Marietta?) in Ohio. A man who never came to America but is often quoted in NY Colonial Records, George Rice of Carmarthenshire Wales, "Commissioner for Trade and Plantations," an offshoot of Parliament, wrote several times to Sir William Johnson (of the Mohawks) Royal Agent of Indian Affairs of the Northern Department, in favor of the 1763 "proclamation line" forbidding white settlement west of the Alleghenys, so bitterly resented by the colonists.

Though popular among people of Dutch or German descent, northern Yankees, not much caring for any of the English king Georges, seldom named their sons George. I began to wonder if our ancestor's name was really something else and his middle name, George, used in the family circle, and that his captaincy was in a "train band" somewhere, or who knows what??? The 1790 Albany Towns census shows a John Rice at Stillwater (Saratoga Co. the next year) with two males over 16, one under, and 4 females. Rebekah would have been 15 at the time--was she one of the females? He would have been the man on the list a few pages back who had a road through his land in 1791 (very valuable when roads were few and far between) and next year he was supporting a pauper in his home, though the local government usually subsidized such acts of charity. He would have been locally prosperous. An Elisha and a Peter Rice lived a few miles to the west at Ballston, and they both had daughters. Any of them could have been there as early as the two large groups who came in 1762 from Connecticut or Rhode Island, but there is no proof those men were there before 1790, or Rebekah before 1800, or that any of them were related though both things are possible. We may safely assume that she was the Mrs. James Cropsy in Greenfield township in the 1800 census, for she and her second husband, Philo Averill, later sold the homestead there to Stephen Comstock.

It was from mere curiosity, because they were dear to him, that we sought the ancestry of Philo's first young wives Betsy and Charlotte, without much luck. But the ancestry of our Rebecca, his third wife, matters very much to us because this dear lady is our own flesh and blood. We find ourselves searching "somewhere in New York" like untold thousands of others seeking their heritage, not even knowing Many-Great Grandpa George Rice's nationality, let alone the name of his wife, our Many-Great Grandma, Rebecca's mother, only that she gave birth to a little daughter in Colonial New York in 1775. Were they in one of the two groups that came to Stillwater in 1762 from Rhode Island and Connecticut? Were they even in Saratoga Co. at all? The name Rice sounds Welsh or English, but was it? Scots, Scots-Irish, Palatines, Huguenots, and especially descendants of the original Dutch settlers, like the Cropseys, were all there. These are the very dimmest of the obscure "Early Years" of Philo Averill's life.

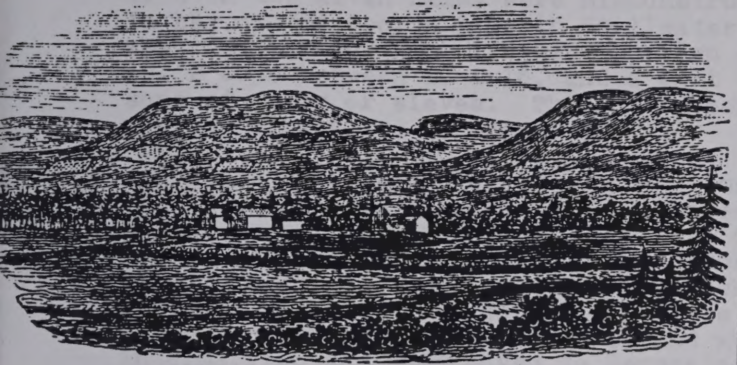
The Averill Genealogy mentions deeds showing that Philo and Rebecca once owned some land in Cicero, Onondaga Co. NY (which was in the middle of the Military Tract set aside for Rev. War veterans). Was it inherited from her father, or did they purchase it because one or both of them had kinfolk there? Philo did. This data may be inconsequential, but in 1806 a certain George Rice living there was appointed Cornet of a new company of Cavalry, 2nd Squadron, 9th Division.* Perhaps he could have become a captain later. Her father would have been over 50 by then. Much later some George Rices received War of 1812 pensions, but he would have been dead by then. (Washington's popularity had by then started many namesakes.) But Henry, the oldest of George Rice's Averill grandsons to come west, was so little at the time that he probably could not remember his grandparents, and our Norman was not even born. There were so many captains in Philo's close family that his children, hearing of it, could have become confused about just whom the captains were. (Was "George Rice" a captain at all?) And we must remember that it was the sons of these sons who corresponded with Clara Avery. Circumstantial evidence, however, does indicate that Rebecca had a brother George.

1810 Federal Census, Stillwater TWP, Saratoga Co. NY

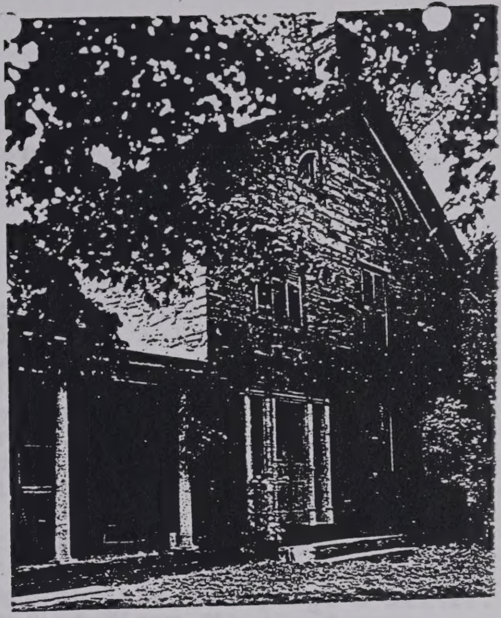


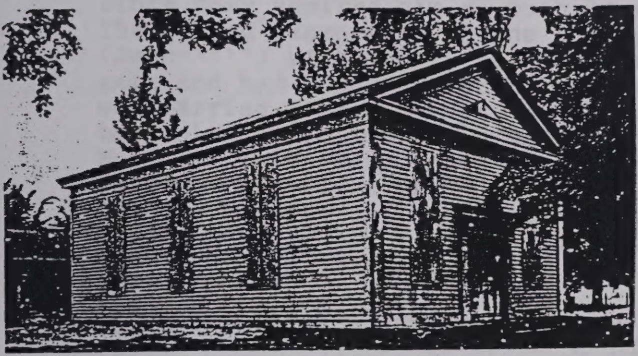
---

*Council of Appointments Vol I (Military Records 1784-1823). Annual Report of the New York State Historian

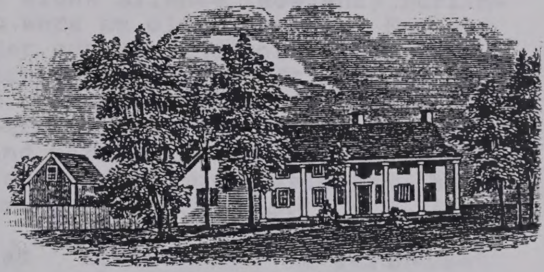


Western view of the battle-ground, Stillwater.





1779–1850 First Baptist Church, Stillwater Center



Schuyler mansion-house, Schuylerville.

Scenes from Stillwater.
In old age, Philo and Rebecca's oldest son told reporters that he was born in Stillwater, Saratoga Co NY in late July 1809, and that they left from there in the fall of 1813 bound for Ohio. All these places would have been very familiar to them. Erected in 1779, the church was built by a 1762 congregation from RI. A yellow brick meetinghouse was built by a Congregational group who came there from CT the same year, but a picture of that was not found. The lovely old mansion at top, built in 1732, survived the French & Indian War. Credit should really go to General Phillip Schuyler (rather than to Horatio Gates who superseded him at the last moment) whose strenuous and well-planned delaying tactics impeded the advance of the British Burgoyne until supplies ran out, resulting in final victory at the "Battle of Saratoga," which was really in Stillwater. This was a turning-point in the Revolutionary War. An 1832 woodcut shows his home.

If even the given names were misconstrued, John Rice could have been father of the George Rice in Stillwater at the time of the 1810 census. George and his wife were between 26 & 45 and had 2 boys under 10, 2 boys between 10 & 16, and a girl between 10 & 16, no free persons of color or slaves. This does seem to be Rebekah's brother, and not likely the Onondaga man.

Two doors from George dwelt Stephen Comstock Jr next to Stephen Sr, one of whom on 20 Aug 1808 had purchased the Cropsey homestead from "Philo Averill of Greenfield, Saratoga Co NY and wife Rebekah," according to records. The enumerator's handwriting is a little hard to read but shows neighbors of mixed ethnic background. Between Rice and Comstock and elsewhere on the page were Moon families and a Nathan Green, some perhaps from Rhode Island where Baptist Moons and Greenes intermarried and some moved to Rensselaer Co. NY. * This brings up another subject, for Philo and his second wife, Charlotte (Baker) Averill had named their first child "Rowlen Green Averill."

Dwelling overlong on Rowland Greene (the correct spelling) is not warranted unless it should turn out he was Baker-related; but since they admired him so much it seems appropriate to explore a little. The second example is in the family of Baptist Elder Timothy^4 Greene (John^{3,2,1}) of Coventry RI who married widow Silence (Rowland) Burlingame and had eight children among whom were an older daughter Enfield who married Stephen Baker, and a younger son Rowland^5 born 1766. The book did not follow these two and perhaps they never left the area. But if like so many other Greenes from overpopulated little Rhode Island, they moved to Rensselaer Co--perhaps the Stephentown area, perhaps Enfield could have there met and married Dr. Stephen Baker (see pages 82-3 this book) suspected relative of our Charlotte. But don't bet the family farm this case isn't a coincidence.**

A Quaker, Rowland^{6}Greene (Philip^{5}William^{4,3}Edward^{2}John^1 of Quidnesset RI) whose ancestors had moved to NY very early, was raised in Nine Partners, Dutchess Co NY not far from Philo's Aunt Abigail (Averill) Kinne (see page 53 this book). Unless there is another Baker connection I don't know about, it is difficult to figure out how else Philo and Charlotte could have met him, but apparently they did. His father Philip served in the 6th Regiment, Dutchess Co. Militia, during the Revolution and settled in Ballston (later Saratoga Co) by 1787 or earlier (tax rolls) and his Uncle Augustus was in that county a decade before that. Aunt Mary drowned in Saratoga Lake in 1802, Uncle Augustus died in 1824 at the home of son Philip of West Troy (Watervliet). Rowland's nephew Rowland (son of oldest brother Wilson) was said by the book to have been born in 1791 in that area, but either he was older or yet another Rowland is shown in the 1800 census index. Unless that was Enfield's brother?? ***

---

*Greenes of the East Branch, William Bartram Greene, pg 35.(1966)

**Suppl--Greene Family of St. Albans VT, Walter &Ella Greene, pg S17

***Settlers of the Beekman Patent Vol. V, Frank J. Doherty, pg 762 et seq.

Selected Data from Printed 1790 First Federal Census-New York State

Head of Family	Town - County	Males +16	Males -16	Fe-males	Slaves
Jonathan Race	Hudson-Columbia	2	3	6	
Philip Race	"	1	2	3	
Henry Race	"	1	1	2	
Josiah Race	"	2	2	3	
Thomas W Race	"	1	0	2	
Benjamin Race	Kinderhook "	1	1	3	
William Race	"	1	0	2	
Samuel Reis	"	1	2	2	
Andrew Rice	Hillsdale "	1	2	1	
Christopher Race	"	1	0	1	
Edward Crosbee	"	1	1	4	
Joseph Cropin	"	1	0	1	
Isaac Rice	Canaan-Columbia	1	2	1	
Solomon Murray	"	2	1	4	
Stephen Baker	"	1	2	6	
Nath'l Baker	"	1	1	1	
Isaac Averill	"	2	2	1	
John Frederick Rees	Claverack "	4	0	2	
Rowland Greene	Rensslaerville-Albany	1	0	0	
Jessie Greene	"	2	1	2	
John Rice	Rensslaerwick "	1	1	1	
Samuel Rice	"	1	2	3	
Mary Cogswell	"	0	4	4	
Ruben Cogswell	Ballston-Albany	1	3	3	
Elisha Rice	" (became Saratoga	1	1	3	
Peter Rice	" county in 1791)	1	1	3	
* John Rice	Stillwater "	2	1	4	
* George Rees	Watervliet-Albany	1	4	3	
Philip Rees	"	1	4	4	
John Bullock	"	2	4	4	
Comer Bullock	Washington-Dutchess	1	1	4	
Matthew Cropsie	Marlborough-Ulster	1	1	3	
Andrew Cropsy	"	1	2	2	
Henry Cropsey	"	1	2	1	
Adam Cropsey	"	1	3	3	
Casper Cropcy	New Utrecht-Kings	1	2	4	4
James Cropcy	" (this is the	1	3	3	
Andrew Cropcy	" metropolitan	2	1	4	2
Harman Cropcy	" area)	1	2	0	2

This list is confined to Hudson River counties. It includes all Cropseys in the state, but not all of the other surnames.

Rowland Greene himself, with a Levi Greene, leased a 155-acre farm in lot #166 in Rensselaerville 29 Nov 1787, according to the manor rolls, and is most likely the man in the 1790 census. This was not in the county of similar name, but a village on the Schoharie border. The 1800 census index shows these two actually in Schoharie Co. Jessie, obviously a relative, was by then already west of them in Otsego Co. Probably in those places they could buy instead of rent, though terms were generous. I did not follow the Greenes any further, but they must have been very nice people. Philo Averill, though raised in the Congregational Church, did not adhere to it later in life. Whether his wives influenced that is impossible to say. As the story unfolds you will see that he was an idealistic and somewhat spiritual man. An especially devout and good-natured Quaker would have made quite an impression.

Now back to the search for Many-great Grandpa Rice. It could be that the real George Rice led a train-band most anywhere in the 1780's and died before 1790 by which time Grandma Rice had remarried and all clues vanished, but that sounds like a stretch. But supposing he were still living in 1790 and not the Stillwater John Rice (a good candidate!) we are forced to expand our vision, perhaps to some variant spelling of Rice. What can Rebekah tell us about her father? What do we know about her before 1808 when she married Philo? She was born 27 Apr 1775 in New York. She was a widow, having been married to a man named (Henry) James Cropsey, a man of Holland Dutch descent, who was now deceased, and they had resided in Greenfield, Saratoga Co. NY, where they owned a home. Whoa! Since Rebekah's first husband was Dutch, why do we assume that she was not at least partly Dutch, herself? Before the Revolution broke out in 1775, the majority of the people living near the Hudson were of Dutch descent, especially those north of Albany, though the Yankees had started moving in.

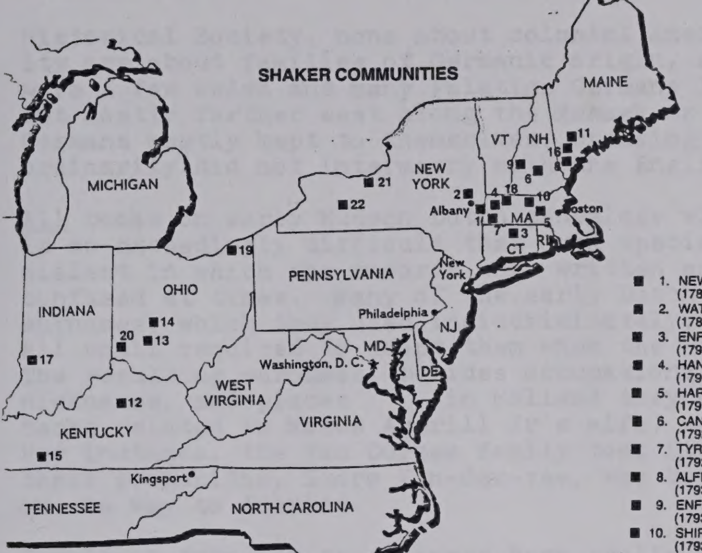
The only person in the 1790 census of New York whose name even faintly resembled George Rice was George Rees of Watervliet. This book would not be complete without at least considering the possibility that he was our ancestor. If Rebekah were his daughter, she would perhaps have been the oldest child. He sounds like a nice man from the scant data available.

The Dutch pronunciation of Rees resembled "Race," often gradually anglicized to that spelling and other variants so much like Rice that many would have settled on Rice. With the limited space in this book, it is a problem deciding what to include, especially because it is questionable whether George Rees was really our ancestor. Materials to make the determination are very skimpy and, except for the census, usually refer to him as George Reese.

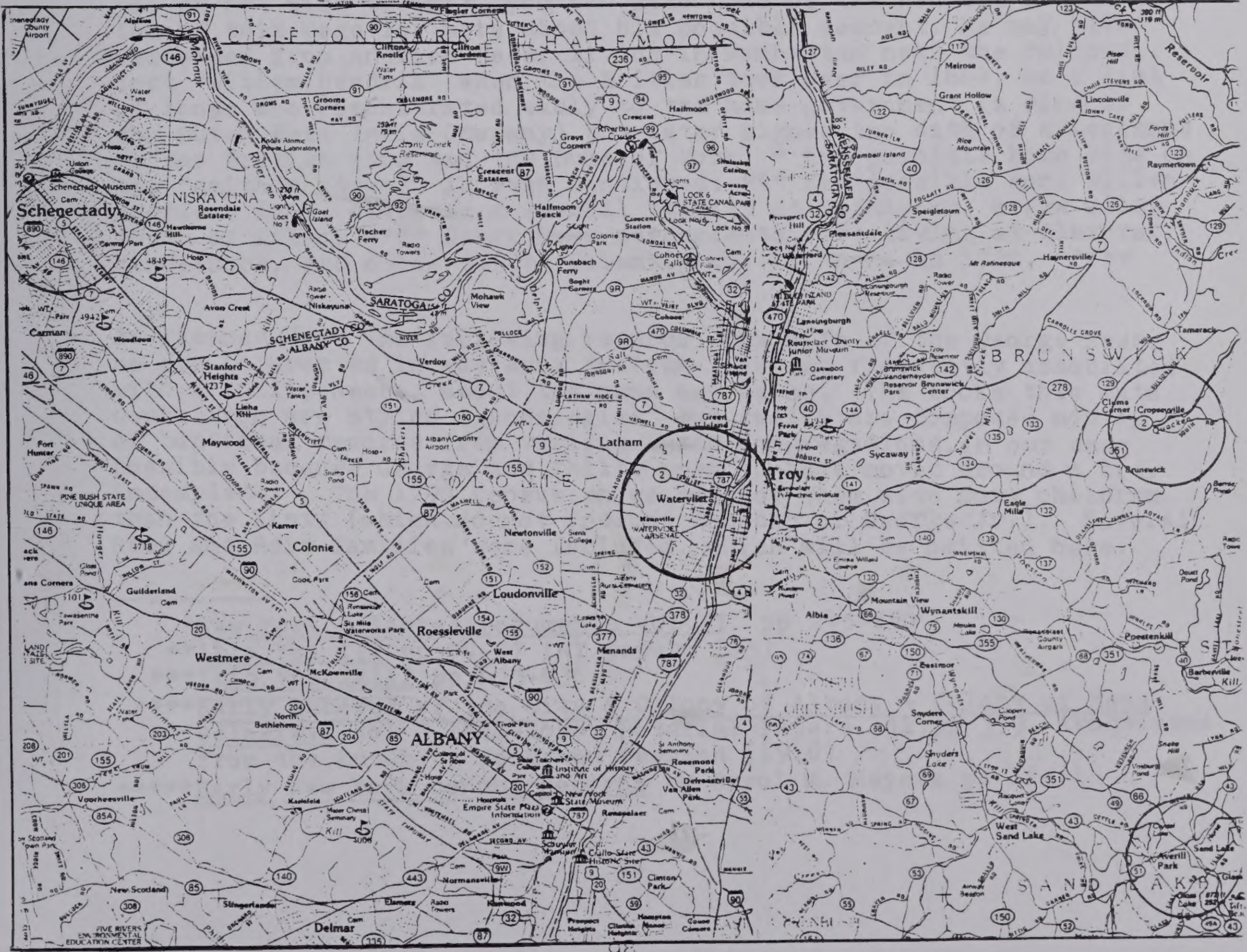
Reese was not usually a Dutch spelling, but could have been. The suffix "se" meant "son of," used commonly during Colonial times to mean "son of Rees." but that custom was falling into disuse by the time of the Revolution. Reese is definitely not a New England name. Nearly a dozen Reese genealogies are on the shelves at Wisconsin State

AVERILL FAMILY

This section of a modern atlas shows Watervliet NY where George Rees (Rice) lived, very near Saratoga Co. As also shown by the data here, a Shaker Community was in existence there from 1787 to 1938.


SHAKER COMMUNITIES
MICHIGAN
NEW YORK
VT
NH
MAINE
MA
CT
RI
Albany
Boston
New York
PENNSYLVANIA
Philadelphia
NJ
MD
DE
Washington, D. C.
OHIO
INDIANA
WEST VIRGINIA
VIRGINIA
KENTUCKY
TENNESSEE
NORTH CAROLINA
Kingsport

- ■ 1. NEW LEBANON, NEW YORK (1787-1947)
- ■ 2. WATERVLIET, NEW YORK (1787-1938)
- ■ 3. ENFIELD, CONNECTICUT (1790-1917)
- ■ 4. HANCOCK, MASSACHUSETTS (1790-1960)
- ■ 5. HARVARD, MASSACHUSETTS (1791-1918)
- ■ 6. CANTERBURY, NEW HAMPSHIRE (1792-PRESENT)
- ■ 7. TYRINGHAM, MASSACHUSETTS (1792-1875)
- ■ 8. ALFRED, MAINE (1793-1931)
- ■ 9. ENFIELD, NEW HAMPSHIRE (1793-1923)
- ■ 10. SHIRLEY, MASSACHUSETTS (1793-1908)
- ■ 11. SABBATHDAY LAKE, MAINE (1794-PRESENT)
- ■ 12. PLEASANT HILL, KENTUCKY (1806-1910)
- ■ 13. UNION VILLAGE, OHIO (1806-1912)
- ■ 14. WATERVLIET, OHIO (1806-1901)
- ■ 15. SOUTH UNION, KENTUCKY (1807-1922)
- ■ 16. GORHAM, MAINE (1808-1819)
- ■ 17. WEST UNION, INDIANA (1810-1827)
- ■ 18. SAVOY, MASSACHUSETTS (1817-1825)
- ■ 19. NORTH UNION, OHIO (1822-1889)
- ■ 20. WHITEWATER, OHIO (1824-1907)
- ■ 21. SODUS BAY, NEW YORK (1826-1836)
- ■ 22. GROVELAND, NEW YORK (1836-1892)


CLIFTON PARK
HALFMOON
Schenectady
NISKAYUNA
SARATOGA CO
SCHENECTADY CO
ALBANY CO
RENSSELAER CO
Mohawk River
Latham
Watervliet
Troy
Cohoes
Lansingburgh
COLONIE
Colonie
Loudonville
Newtonville
Menands
ALBANY
Rensselaer
BRUNSWICK
Cropseyville
Brunswick
Sycaway
Eagle Mills
Wynantskill
Poestenkill
Averill Park
Sand Lake
SAND LAKE
West Sand Lake
Delmar
Slingerlands
Westmere
Guilderland
Roessleville
Stanford Heights
Halfmoon
Crescent
Melrose
Grant Hollow
Speigletown
Pleasantdale
Haynersville
Raymertown
Lincolnville

Historical Society, none about colonial American families. The majority are about families of Germanic origin, and a few Welsh. There were a few Welsh and many Palatine Germans living in New York in 1775 but mostly farther west along the Mohawk or its tributaries. Those Germans mostly kept to themselves, speaking their own language, and ordinarily did not intermarry with the English or Dutch until later.

All books on early Hudson Dutch genealogy will tell you that that it is so exceedingly difficult that even specialists in the archaic Dutch dialect in which the records were written admit to being hopelessly confused at times. Many of the early Dutch colonists had several surnames, which they used indiscriminately; most had no surnames at all until required to adopt them when the British took over.
The resulting surnames, besides occupational names, descriptional nicknames, and places in Holland they came from (like the Halenbecks related to Moses Averill Jr's wife) are sometimes entertaining. For instance, the Van Durzee family took its name from the fact that their progenitor, Storm Van-der-zee, was born during a storm at sea on the way to America.

Should it turn out that George Rees really is ours, and that he was indeed a Rees descendant, I will write a supplement later. In case you do not wish to wait, you can read some of the sources on the bottom of this page for more about his possible descent. He may have descended from Andries Rees, living in Manhattan near the ruinous fort "Willem Hendrik" when the British took over in 1664, on a list of those who remonstrated sadly to the home government (a wing of the Dutch West India Company) but later signed the oath of allegiance to the British king and the Duke of York. * His possible home site on the "smith's street" is even mentioned. *** His possible son, Willem Andriese Rees, operated a sawmill briefly at Bethlehem, a few miles south of Albany.**** Other Rees descendants were living at Claverac, Kinderhook, and other future Columbia Co. NY towns in 1720. *****

As gleaned from the following records, the wife of the George Reese we are interested in was Anna Bullock. He was frequently associated with a Philip Reese, about the same age as he. The books this data comes from are styled "genealogies" but really are composed mostly of baptismal records from various Dutch congregations,in our case possibly because George and Philip seem to have moved around a bit, incomplete. The 1790 census shows both of them with more children than the lists (which do not include Rebecah or George Jr.). Several Rees and Reis families were included, which will be omitted here.

---

*New York Colonial Documents Vol II, pp 245-250

**ibid Vol III pp 74-77 (NY papers I:5)

***ibid Vol XXIII pp 633-636

****Early Records of the City & Colony of Albany & Colony of Rensselaerwyk Vol 3 1660-1696, Notarial Papers 1&2,pg 393, translated from the Dutch by Jonathan Pearson (1918)

*****Early New York Census Records by Carol M. Meyers pp 10-11

The very first Dutch settlers established Albany as the upstate government center, though the exceedingly fertile site of Schenectady was a natural portage site above the falls of the Mohawk River, used by Indians. Fur-trading Dutchmen from Albany purchased land there from them in 1661. At the takeover soon afterwards, Englishmen moved in and also farmed. In 1690 French & Indians killed many people and burnt most homes. By 1700 the survivors were augmented by English colonists, to form a flourishing frontier trading center. It may be thus assumed that, though nominally Dutch, Reformed Church members must have included many who were at least part English. Literacy had never been one of the highest priorities of Dutch officials, and those pastors had a hard time with spelling. English last names baffled them. On any page you will find the same individuals' names spelled so many ways that it is impossible to be sure which, if any, are correct. * The books cited below show:

Genealogies of the First Settlers of Albany, page 91

Reese, Philip and Eleanora Calligon/Calligan - Child: John, bapt 21 July 1779
Reese, George and Anna Bullocks - Child: Nicholas bp 27 December 1779

Genealogies of the First Settlers of Schenectady, page 149

Reese, Philip and Eleanor Callener. Children: Elisabeth 2 Mar 1782, Robert 10 Oct 1784, Anna 20 Mar 1801
Reese, George and Anna Bullock. Children: Martinus 17 Feb 1799, Anna 19 Nov 1802.

Though George and Philip's occupations are not stated, when you add the above data to the 1790 census, one can surmise quite a bit about them. They probably were brothers and, moving to Albany then Schenectady then to Watervliet, and later to Schenectady, they may have been in some sort of trade. Both towns (only 12 miles apart) were on big rivers. Could they have had some sort of boat or sailing ship to help carry on business? "Captain George Rice?" Their war records will be revealed later, and they were not captains in the Revolution. Church records and later censuses call them Reese. 1790 census and **SOME** records call them Rees. Whatever the correct spelling of Philip's wife's last name was, those pastors got it wrong. Caligan sounds Irish but Irish were scarce in that time and place. Callener may mean Callender, a name found in Rhode Island and Rehoboth.

According to the 1810 census index which does not include all females, just little girls, George Reese 01001-11, John 00100-20, Nicholas 20100-10 and Philip 00310-11 were then in Schenectady. George and Philip were no longer there in 1820 but Martin was. John, Nicholas, and Robert had moved to Herkimer Co. In Saratoga Co. were George and Daniel Rees in Ballston, John Rees in Charlton, and many Rices including George still in Stillwater. John Rice was no longer listed.

---

*Baptism Records of Schenectady Reformed Church (1694-1861) 1987 Ed. by Donald A. Keefer. A separate book by the same author gives marriages. These books and also Rev. War soldiers' indexes tell the reader to also consult "Race" when searching for Rees or Reese.

Until Anna showed up, the only other Bullocks found in Dutch records were "William and Christyn Bollick" who sponsored a Schenectady baptism in 1739. One assumes that John Bullock of Watervliet, who also had young children, was Anna's close relative. Perhaps she had a sister Elizabeth (Mrs. John Blanchard or Bradshaw) of Schenectady. On 09 Mar 1795, an Albany Co. Joseph Bullock was appointed ensign in Col Stephen Van Rensselaer's Regiment. In spring 1798 he was captain. *

The big unanswered question is: Was George Reese our Rebecca's father? Was Anna Bullock her mother? The 1790 census shows them with four sons and two daughters, yet only Nicholas born in 1779 shows up in records previous to that. If they married by 1774, Rebecca could have been their oldest child, in which case Anna would have been about 46 when Anna, Jr., was born in 1802--not unheard of in large families. The other possibility, and conceivably the reason Rebecca's mother was not mentioned in the Averill Genealogy, is if she was daughter of a first young wife who died.

John was the only Bullock west of the Hudson in 1790. Daniel was in Easton just east of Stillwater, Jacob in Cambridge, & Shubael in Kinderhook. The rest were in Nine-Partners, evidently descended from two Baptist preachers from Rehoboth (where Philo Averill's grandma Esther came from). Maybe they were not relatives of Anna, but it won't hurt to tell a little about them, from a history and the Bullock Genealogy which tells only about Rev. Comer, who was not her father. **

Rev. Elder Comer Bullock^4(Daniel^{3}Samuel^{2}Richard^1)b. Rehoboth in 1734 moved to Stanford, Dutchess Co. NY in 1755 where, with his cousin Rev. Ephraim they founded a branch of the Swansea MA Bapt. Ch. org Oct 1759 in the Stanford area (see map pg 53). A rift between the cousins developed in 1771 when the mother church in Swanzey adopted the singing of Watt's hymns in their services. Ephraim followed suit and moved on, for Comer insisted on singing by rote as before. They were equally devout and devoted men. Comer did some missionary work in Columbia Co. During his lifetime he baptized over a thousand people! Baptist ministers in those days earned their own livings; though they did not refuse donations they did not expect them. Ephraim and Comer were saintly men.

Though we do not know that those Bullocks were related to our Rebecah (Reese?) Averill, this does show something about the tribe in general. The Joseph Bullock who became a captain in 1798 (thus showing he had a good family background) was almost certainly related to Anna.

---

*Annual Report of the New York State Historian pages 300 & 409

**A Bullock Family History, pages 15 & 16, John Morgan Pierce (1976) and
The Settlers of the Beekman Patent Vol (1?) page 108 by Frank J. Doherty.

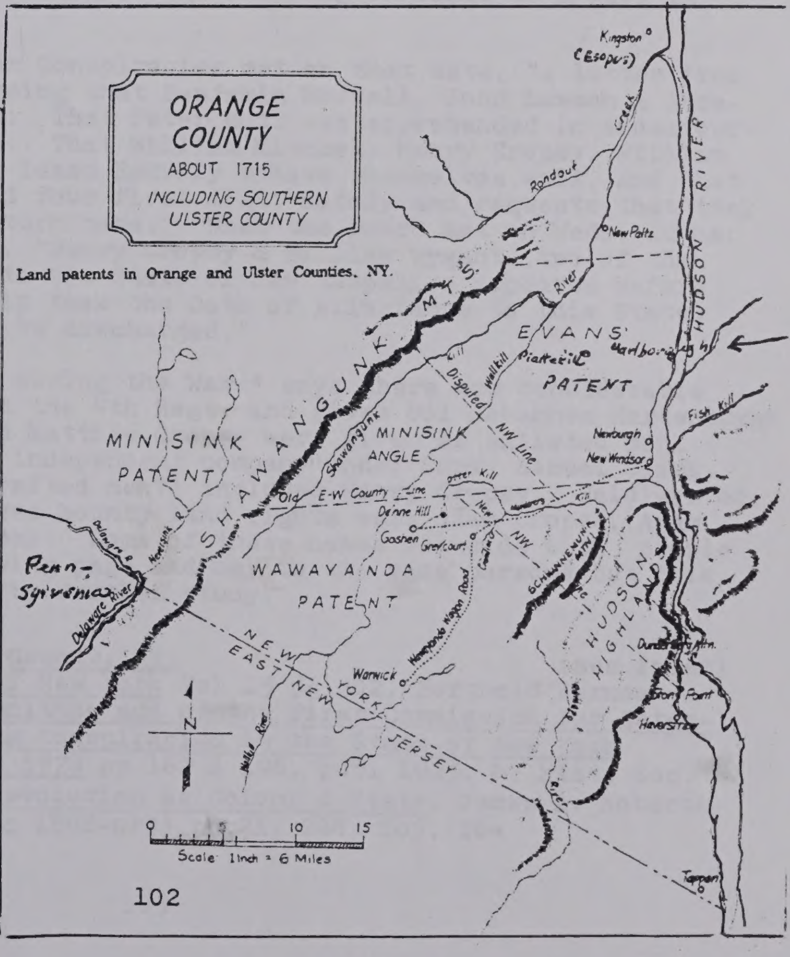
AVERILL FAMILY

More will be told about George and Philip Reese, but first it is only fair to relate the little that has been discovered about the early Cropsey clan, since Rebekah's first husband was the same kin to us as Philo's first two wives and several pages have been devoted to Bordmans and Bakers. The 1790 census of New York table on a previous page lists all the heads of families of the name, to which should be added Jacob and John Crapsie of Stephentown, adjacent to New Lebanon (map pg 83). A friend I go researching with, who had ancestors on the northern border of Pennsylvania, tells me she has frequently encountered the name, spelt with an "a," there. That was a logical place for many of our clan to go, since it is directly west of Ulster County NY.

Ulster Co. NY, created in 1683, was huge. Until well into statehood it encompassed all of present Sullivan Co. and parts of Delaware and Greene. The Delaware River formed the SW border. Settlement of "New" Marlborough, where the Cropseys lived, was a century later than old towns like Esopus (Kingston) and the Huguenot New Paltz. By 1760 a John Young had come up from Long Island, perhaps bringing others. Many

I suspect that Henry James Cropsey or his father was from the area shown here. The best illustration to fill our needs I could find was from an earlier era when the boundary with Orange County was still in dispute.

The locale of Marlborough, not then in existence, has been inked in. Looking at this may make the text easier to follow.


ORANGE
COUNTY
ABOUT 1715
INCLUDING SOUTHERN
ULSTER COUNTY
Kingston
(Esopus)
Rondout
Creek
New Paltz
HUDSON RIVER
River
EVANS' PATENT
Marlborough
Piattekill
Wallkill
Kill
Disputed
NW Line
SHAWANGUNK MTS.
Shawangunk
MINISINK PATENT
MINISINK ANGLE
Fish Kill
Newburgh
New Windsor
Otter Kill
Old E-W County Line
Dehne Hill
Goshen
Greycourt
Murderers Kill
NW
SCHUNNEMUNK MTN.
HUDSON HIGHLANDS
Delaware R.
Neversink R.
Penn-Sylvania
Delaware River
WAWAYANDA PATENT
Wawayanda Wagon Road
Warwick
NEW YORK
EAST NEW JERSEY
Dunderberg Mtn.
Stony Point
Haverstraw
Tappan
N
Wallkill River
0 5 10 15
Scale: 1 Inch = 6 Miles

Land patents in Orange and Ulster Counties, NY.

-Map taken from an Orange County History.

came from Dutchess Co. across the River. John Wood was a pioneer shipbuilder.* One surmises without proof that "our" Cropseys were an offshoot of the New Utrecht group (several miles north from Coney Island). The first notice of them says that in 1775 Isaac Cropsie of New Marlborough signed the Association Test and was a member of the local militia at the onset of the War. (Though I don't see him in the rolls) Others signing up as patriots were Alexander, Andrew, and Adam Cropsie. The Ulster Co. 4th Regiment of New York Militia was commanded by Col. Jonathan Hasbrouk, Lt. Col. John Hardenburgh Jr., Captain Jacob Conkling on 09 March 1778 when Ensign Alex Cropsey resigned and was replaced by Nathaniel Dubois, vice. As usual, his reasons for resigning were not stated.**

The Patriots achieved the ascendancy in New York, but just barely. Some historians say that after the British occupation of Long Island in 1776, the population was about equally divided. More battles were fought there than in any other colony. One way the hard-pressed Committee of Safety tried to prevent subversion was to round up those suspected of being dangerous Tories and confine them until the matter was resolved. Our source, which usually did not state where the suspects were from, reports that as of 28 Feb 1777 a certain Henry Cropsy, suspected of favoring the British, was being confined to a gaol in New Hampshire.***

When the Commission for Conspiracies met on that date, "A letter from Col. Welch of NH informing that Benjamin Morrell, John Lawson & Abraham Boyce are gone off. That Peter Mott was apprehended in endeavouring to make his Escape. That William Mitchel, Henry Cropsy, William Wygant, Gilbert Shaw & Isaac Eckerly behave themselves well. And that the Col: conceives that four first might safely and requests that they may be premitted to return home." When the Board met on Weds. 12 Mar 1777, the minutes said, "Henry Cropsy & William Wygant, two of the persons formerly sent to the State of New Hampshire appeared before this board & Voluntarily took the Oath of Allegiance to this State. Ordered, that they may be discharged."

A book about NY troops during the War * says there was considerable turnover of officers in the 4th Regt. and gives Col Johannes Hardenburgh as commander. Henry and Matthew Cropsy were given as enlisted men. A Jacob Cropsy was in an independent company under Capt. Samuel Clark. A company of Levies (drafted men?) included Henry Cropsy. Soldiers of the 4th Regt who received bounty land rights were Adam Cropse, Adam Cropsey and Henry Cropsey. Some of these names coincide with people above and on the following page and may be the same persons but this has not been confirmed by further study.

---

*History of Ulster County, NY. (see index)

**Colonial History of New York Vol 15 pg 302, Berthold Fernow

***Minutes of the Committee and of the First Commission for Detectiing and Defeating Conspiracies in the State of New York Dec 11 1776-Sep 23 1778 pp 162 & 196, publ 1925, NY Hist. Soc.

**** New York in the Revolution as Colony & State, James A. Roberts Comptroller (2nd Ed 1898-GPC) pp 71, 200, 203, 264

Jumping to conclusions without more documentation is always dangerous but, if possible, it might be investigated whether that Henry could have been the one mentioned below, and whether he was son of Adam Cropsey, and whether they were ancestors or otherwise related to "our" Henry James Cropsey.

The Ulster County history, page 78, says that as of 1779, "Ananias Valentine, Lewis DuBois, John Smith, Isaac Rowell, James Cropsey, Adam Cropsey, John Polhemus, Jacob Degroot, Andrew Youngs, James Van Blascom, John Quick, Nathaniel Beebe, Peter Quick, Lewis Quick, Thomas Quick Sr., were in the south part of the town" of Marlborough. From Colonial days up until almost this century, all over this nation, it was the custom for the citizens living along roadways to work so many days each year keeping them in repair--in fact it was the law, and noncompliance resulted in fines. One might be excused by old age or infirmity. The number of days varied by circumstances which in this case were not spelled out. Town records show that in 1788 23 road crews were mandated, each led by an overseer.

Crew #2 was overseen by John Polhemus in charge of 8 men including Adam Cropsy who owed two days (a year?). In 1779, in a slightly different part of town, were "Elisha Purdy, Samuel Merritt, Jacob Canniff, Isaac Lockwood, Henry Scott, Thomas Sithworth, beginning at the road at Alexander Cropseys, southwest to Jacob Russell's house." As of 1788 that was Crew #7 led by Humphrey Merritt. Alexander Cropsey owed 4 days work on the road. Substitutes could be hired. By 1799 some citizens had died or moved away. Crew #2 had a new overseer, Joseph Cromwell, who owed 6 days. Henry Cropsey owed two days. John Polhemus and Adam Cropsey (perhaps by then aged) each owed one day. Lewis DuBois owed 18. Nothing more was told of 18th century Cropseys, except that in modern times the author of the book viewed the oldest cemetery in town. Among many of the graves he viewed were those of John and Andrew Cropsey, neither mentioned above.

In 1827 a Jesper Cropsey was member of the New York Assembly. Jesper must have been an affluent man. As of 1802 he operated an inn in the southern part of Plattekill, where he also had a store in 1819. By then a Methodist minister named Rev. Daniel Bullock had moved to the far west mountainous part of the county and "was holding meetings in the schoolhouse in the Dry Brook part of Hardenburgh while it was still a part of Shandaken." This shows the pious Bullock clan still determined to save souls, and shows how some Bullocks and Cropseys might have met, but by then our Rebekah, Philo Averill's wife, was already a young matron.

In the early 1800's there were Cropseys living in Watervliet. It is probably a stretch of the imagination to suppose Gabriel Cropsey was Rebekah's son--he probably wasn't, but may have been her late husband's kin. By then West Troy and Watervliet were becoming populous as overflow from the booming fairly new city of Troy. Two items printed in the West Troy Advocate & Watervliet Adviser said,

"Clincher, Augustus, married 29 Feb 1848 Harriet Cropsey, daughter of G. Esq., of West Troy, perf. by Rev. T. F. Wykoff."
"Cropsey, William Henry, aged 2, only son of Gabriel Cropsey, died 24 August 1838 in West Troy." The child's name is very suggestive!

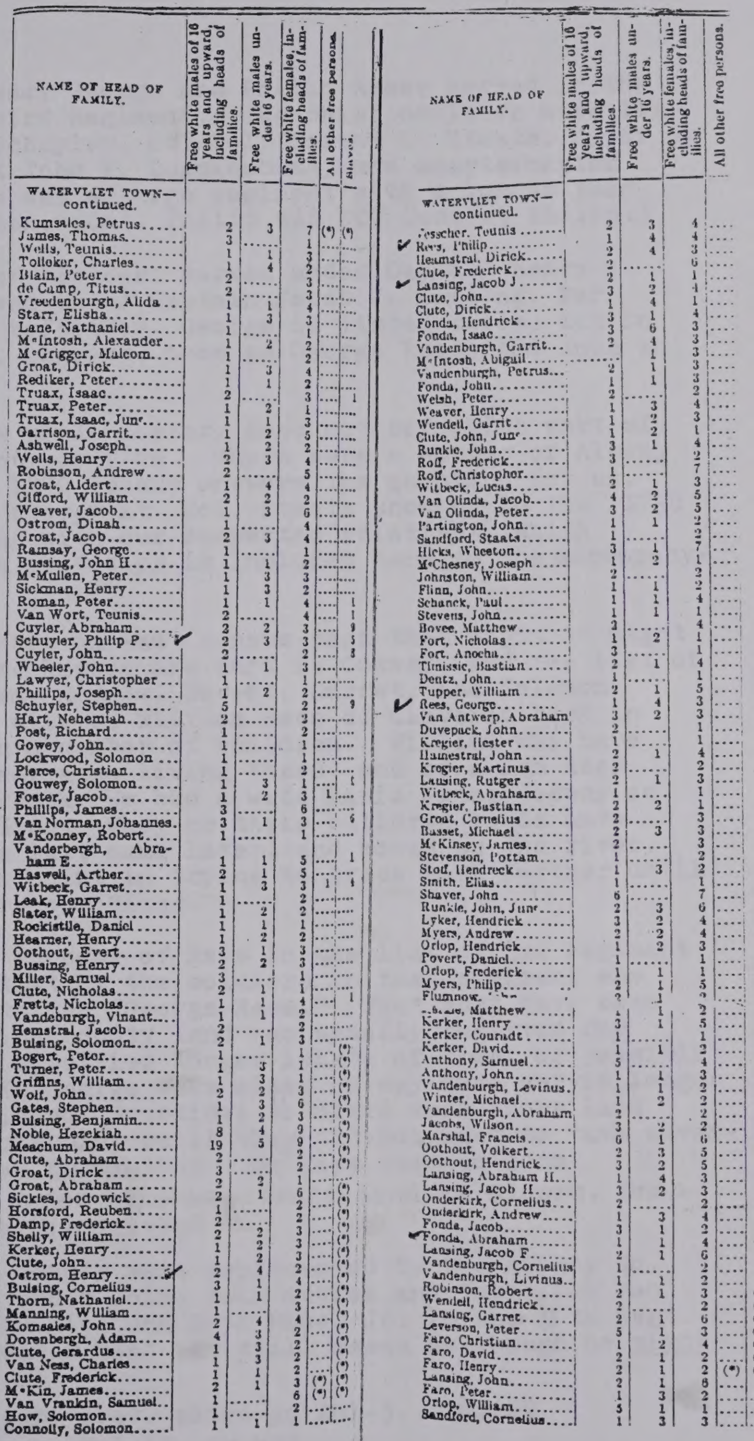
---

*7000 Hudson-Mohawk Valley New York Vital Records 1808-1850, pp 60,73

AVERILL FAMILY

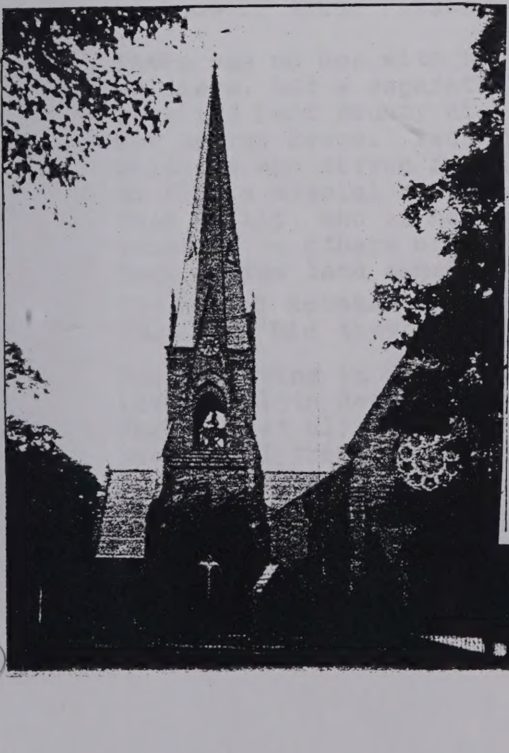
Right: Printed copy, First US Census, Albany Co NY, 1790 last column pg 52, first 53, Watervliet TWP, shows George & Philip "Rees" living near their old Rev. War officers. Philip was 3 doors from George's captain Jacob J. Lansing. His had been Henry Ostrom. Their Colonel, Philip P. Schuyler and Maj. Abraham Fonda are also shown. Quartermaster Christopher Lansing was in the previous column, not copied here.

Below: Photograph of the Dutch Reformed Church at Schenectady, attended by the Reese Family, where some of their children were baptized and married. Bullocks are also shown in the records.



NAME OF HEAD OF FAMILY.	Free white males of 16 years and upward, including heads of families.	Free white males under 16 years.	Free white females, including heads of families.	All other free persons.	Slaves.
WATERVLIET TOWN—continued.					
Kumsales, Petrus	2	3	7	(*)	(*)
James, Thomas	3	....	1	....	....
Wells, Teunis	1	1	3	....	....
Tolloker, Charles	1	4	2	....	....
Blain, Peter	2	....	3	....	....
de Camp, Titus	2	....	3	....	....
Vreedenburgh, Alida	1	1	4	....	....
Starr, Elisha	1	3	3	....	....
Lane, Nathaniel	1	....	1	....	....
McIntosh, Alexander	1	2	2	....	....
McGrigger, Malcom	1	....	2	....	....
Groat, Dirick	1	3	4	....	....
Rediker, Peter	1	1	2	....	....
Truax, Isaac	2	....	3	....	1
Truax, Peter	1	2	1	....	....
Truax, Isaac, Junr	1	1	3	....	....
Garrison, Garrit	1	2	5	....	....
Ashwell, Joseph	1	2	2	....	....
Wells, Henry	2	3	4	....	....
Robinson, Andrew	2	....	5	....	....
Groat, Aldert	1	4	4	....	....
Gifford, William	2	2	2	....	....
Weaver, Jacob	1	3	6	....	....
Ostrom, Dinah	1	....	4	....	....
Groat, Jacob	2	3	4	....	....
Ramsay, George	1	....	1	....	....
Bussing, John H	1	1	2	....	....
McMullen, Peter	1	3	3	....	....
Sickman, Henry	1	3	2	....	....
Roman, Peter	1	1	4	....	1
Van Wort, Teunis	2	....	4	....	1
Cuyler, Abraham	2	2	3	....	9
Schuyler, Philip P	2	3	3	....	5
Cuyler, John	2	....	2	....	8
Wheeler, John	1	1	3	....	....
Lawyer, Christopher	1	....	1	....	....
Phillips, Joseph	1	2	2	....	....
Schuyler, Stephen	5	....	2	....	9
Hart, Nehemiah	2	....	3	....	....
Post, Richard	1	....	2	....	....
Gowey, John	1	....	1	....	....
Lockwood, Solomon	1	....	1	....	....
Pierce, Christian	1	....	2	....	....
Gouwey, Solomon	1	3	1	....	1
Foster, Jacob	1	2	3	1	....
Phillips, James	3	....	6	....	....
Van Norman, Johannes	3	1	3	....	6
McKonney, Robert	1	....	1	....	....
Vanderbergh, Abraham E	1	1	5	....	1
Haswell, Arther	2	1	5	....	....
Witbeck, Garret	1	3	3	1	4
Leak, Henry	1	....	2	....	....
Slater, William	1	2	2	....	....
Rockistile, Daniel	1	1	1	....	....
Hearner, Henry	1	2	2	....	....
Oothout, Evert	3	1	3	....	....
Bussing, Henry	2	2	3	....	....
Miller, Samuel	3	....	1	....	....
Clute, Nicholas	2	1	1	....	....
Fretts, Nicholas	1	1	4	....	1
Vandeburgh, Vinant	1	1	2	....	....
Hemstral, Jacob	2	....	2	....	....
Bulsing, Solomon	2	1	3	....	....
Bogert, Peter	1	....	1	....	(*)
Turner, Peter	1	3	1	....	(*)
Griffins, William	1	3	1	....	(*)
Wolf, John	2	2	3	....	(*)
Gates, Stephen	1	3	6	....	(*)
Bulsing, Benjamin	1	2	3	....	(*)
Noble, Hezekiah	8	4	9	....	(*)
Meachum, David	19	5	9	....	(*)
Clute, Abraham	2	....	2	....	(*)
Groat, Dirick	3	....	2	....	....
Groat, Abraham	2	2	1	....	(*)
Sickles, Lodowick	2	1	6	....	(*)
Horsford, Reuben	1	....	2	....	(*)
Damp, Frederick	2	....	2	....	(*)
Shelly, William	2	2	3	....	(*)
Kerker, Henry	1	2	3	....	(*)
Clute, John	1	2	3	....	(*)
Ostrom, Henry	2	4	2	....	(*)
Bulsing, Cornelius	3	1	4	....	(*)
Thorn, Nathaniel	1	1	2	....	(*)
Manning, William	1	....	3	....	(*)
Komsales, John	2	4	4	....	(*)
Dorenbergh, Adam	4	3	2	....	(*)
Clute, Gerardus	1	3	2	....	(*)
Van Ness, Charles	1	3	2	....	(*)
Clute, Frederick	1	1	2	(*)	(*)
M·Kin, James	2	1	3	(*)	(*)
Van Vrankin, Samuel	1	....	6	....	....
How, Solomon	1	....	2	....	....
Connolly, Solomon	1	1	1	....	....

NAME OF HEAD OF FAMILY.	Free white males of 16 years and upward, including heads of families.	Free white males under 16 years.	Free white females, including heads of families.	All other free persons.
WATERVLIET TOWN—continued.				
[illegible]esscher, Teunis	2	3	4	....
Rees, Philip	1	4	4	....
Heamstral, Dirick	2	4	3	....
Clute, Frederick	2	....	6	....
Lansing, Jacob J	2	1	1	....
Clute, John	3	2	4	....
Clute, Dirick	1	4	1	....
Fonda, Hendrick	3	1	4	....
Fonda, Isaac	3	6	3	....
Vandenburgh, Garrit	2	4	3	....
McIntosh, Abiguil	....	1	3	....
Vandenburgh, Petrus	2	1	3	....
Fonda, John	1	1	3	....
Welsh, Peter	2	....	2	....
Weaver, Henry	1	3	4	....
Wendell, Garrit	1	2	3	....
Clute, John, Junr	1	2	1	....
Runkle, John	3	1	4	....
Roff, Frederick	3	....	2	....
Roff, Christopher	1	....	7	....
Witbeck, Lucas	2	1	3	....
Van Olinda, Jacob	4	2	5	....
Van Olinda, Peter	3	2	5	....
Partington, John	1	1	2	....
Sandford, Staats	1	....	2	....
Hicks, Wheeton	3	1	7	....
McChesney, Joseph	1	2	1	....
Johnston, William	2	....	2	....
Flinn, John	1	1	2	....
Schanck, Paul	1	1	4	....
Stevens, John	1	1	1	....
Bovee, Matthew	3	....	4	....
Fort, Nicholas	1	2	1	....
Fort, Anocha	3	....	1	....
Timissie, Bastian	2	1	4	....
Dentz, John	1	....	1	....
Tupper, William	2	1	5	....
Rees, George	1	4	3	....
Van Antwerp, Abraham	3	2	3	....
Duvepack, John	2	....	1	....
Kregier, Hester	1	....	1	....
Hamestral, John	2	1	4	....
Kregier, Martinus	2	....	2	....
Lansing, Rutger	2	1	3	....
Witbeck, Abraham	1	....	1	....
Kregier, Bastian	2	2	1	....
Groat, Cornelius	2	....	3	....
Basset, Michael	2	3	3	....
McKinsey, James	2	....	3	....
Stevenson, Pottam	1	....	2	....
Stoff, Hendreck	1	3	2	....
Smith, Elias	1	....	1	....
Shaver, John	6	....	7	....
Runkle, John, Junr	2	3	6	....
Lyker, Hendrick	3	2	4	....
Myers, Andrew	2	2	4	....
Orlop, Hendrick	1	2	3	....
Povert, Daniel	1	....	1	....
Orlop, Frederick	1	1	1	....
Myers, Philip	2	1	5	....
Flumnow, [illegible]	[illegible]	1	[illegible]	....
[illegible], Matthew	1	1	2	....
Kerker, Henry	3	1	5	....
Kerker, Counradt	1	....	1	....
Kerker, David	1	1	2	....
Anthony, Samuel	5	....	4	....
Anthony, John	1	1	3	....
Vandenburgh, Levinus	1	1	2	....
Winter, Michael	1	2	2	....
Vandenburgh, Abraham	2	....	2	....
Jacobs, Wilson	3	2	2	....
Marshal, Francis	6	1	6	....
Oothout, Volkert	2	3	5	....
Oothout, Hendrick	3	2	5	....
Lansing, Abraham H	1	4	3	....
Lansing, Jacob H	3	2	3	....
Onderkirk, Cornelius	2	....	2	....
Onderkirk, Andrew	1	3	4	....
Fonda, Jacob	3	1	2	....
Fonda, Abraham	1	1	4	....
Lansing, Jacob F	2	1	6	....
Vandenburgh, Cornelius	1	....	2	....
Vandenburgh, Livinus	1	1	2	....
Robinson, Robert	2	1	3	....
Wendell, Hendrick	2	....	2	....
Lansing, Garret	2	1	6	....
Leverson, Peter	5	1	3	....
Faro, Christian	1	2	4	....
Faro, David	2	1	2	....
Faro, Henry	2	1	2	(*)
Lansing, John	2	1	8	....
Faro, Peter	1	3	2	....
Orlop, William	5	1	1	....
Sandford, Cornelius	1	3	3	....



During the Revolutionary War, George and Philip Reese served in the Albany County Militia - Third Regiment. The chief officers were listed as Colonel Philip P. Schuyler, Lt. Col. Barent L. Staats, Major Abraham D. Fonda, Adjutant John F. Quackenbush, and Quartermaster Christopher Lansing. This was a large regiment with a longer than average list of enlisted men.*(Col. Philip WAS NOT General Philip.)

Philip, perhaps the younger brother, served under Captain Henry Ostrum. George Reese served under Captain Jacob J. Lansing. For some reason in our second reference. George is listed twice, but in both instances under Capt. Lansing, once as George Reese and once as George Reess. **

The first book, giving the whole roster, does not say which part of Albany County this regiment was from. There were a number of Albany County Regiments, but the 1790 census answers the question for us, For all of these officers except Lt. Col. Staats show up in the 1790 census at Watervliet, along with our suspected relatives, which seems so remarkable that a photocopy is included here on the accompanying page.

Incidentally, another surname on that census page that might or might not be significant if these Reeses are ours is Goewey. And the list of soldiers shows four of them--Andrew, Barent, Garret, and Solomon. A Maria Goewey was second wife of William Rees of Claverac back in 1720, and they had by then a number of children. William may have been related to Andries Rees also living there, and of a Jan Rees who came there from Kinderhook. He had a wife Maria Janse Goewey as of 1703, and several children. They or their children could have added another "e" to their last name later, and moved up the river. Just athought; there is no point in trying to trace back further until we know if those Reeses are our Rices.

There was no one with the surname of Rees in the list of 3rd Regiment soldiers, but a separate list of the soldiers in that regiment who received Land Bounty Rights as "George Rees." That must have been our George Reese. Receiving bounty land was usually reserved for soldiers who served for a specified longer length of time, or possibly to fill a special need. If George were older he may have served longer than Philip, who is not listed. Sometimes soldiers sold those land vouchers to others or to speculators if they did not want to take advantage of raw land somewhere, themselves. Or gave them to sons. Philo and Rebekah later owned military tract land at Cicero, Onondaga Co. Did they buy it themselves?

People living in Saratoga County were represented by the Albany Co. 12th and 13th Regiments. Under Cols. John McCrea and Cornelius Van Veghten, et al, were a John Rice and John Rice, Jr. in the 13 th Regt. Was one of them our Stillwater man? It still seems as though he might be our "George" Rice.

---

*New York in the Revolution, prev. cited pp 101-3, 124,224

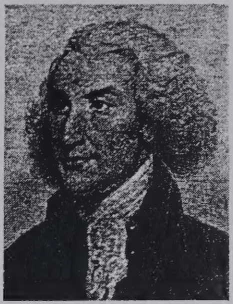
**Colonial Hist. of New York, Vol 15, pg 453

AVERILL FAMILY

Our Rice or Reese ancestor probably fought under Schuyler, and likely at the battle of "Saratoga" at Stillwater. Part of the campaign is told at right -from Battles of the Revolutionary War pp 141-3, W. J. Wood

Below: More about the general is told in The American Peoples Encyclopedia.

SCHUYLER, PHILIP JOHN, 1733–1804, American Revolutionary general, was born in Albany, N.Y., of a wealthy Dutch family. He served five years in the French and Indian War, becoming a major (1758). In the pre-Revolution period he administered his vast landholdings on the Hudson and in the Mohawk Valley and led Whigs in the Assembly (1768–75). Shortly after he was chosen delegate to the Second Continental Congress (1775), he became a major general in the Continental army, with the Northern Department as his charge. He planned the 1775–76 invasion of Canada (carried out unsuccessfully by General Montgomery and later General Gates), but retained only the supply department because of rheumatic gout. Returning to command in 1777, he found the army in poor condition, conducted a strategic retreat before Burgoyne's army, but was accused of incompetence after the loss of Ticonderoga and replaced by Gates (1777). He was fully acquitted by court-martial (1778), resigned his commission (1779) but remained active as adviser to General Washington on Indian affairs and as congressman (1779–81). A state senator (1780–84, 1786–90, 1792–97), he helped the Federalists to win over the New York convention to the Federal Constitution (1788); he served twice in the Senate (1789–91, 1797–98), where he supported the policies of his political mentor and son-in-law, ALEXANDER HAMILTON. See REVOLUTION, AMERICAN.



CHICAGO HIST. SOC.

Philip Schuyler

SCHUYLER, FORT. See STANWIX, FORT.

SCHUYLERVILLE, N.Y., historic village, 10 miles east of SARATOGA SPRINGS, scene of the surrender of BURGOYNE after the Battle of SARATOGA. Here on Oct. 17, 1777, General Burgoyne, defeated in two battles, surrounded by the American militia, and despairing of aid from Sir Henry Clinton, surrendered to Gates; this action was the turning point of the Revolution since it led to the French alliance. The original town, called Saratoga, was founded in 1689 but was destroyed by the Indians in 1745. The village was incorporated in 1831 and named for Gen. PHILIP SCHUYLER, patron of the community and predecessor of Gates. Pop. (1950) 1,314.

The terrain into which Burgoyne's army was now committed was a military nightmare. The "roads" were no more than crude trails hacked out of dense forests and running every which way, without plan or reason. The undergrowth was dense and broken only by countless fallen trees. The main route from Skenesboro to Fort Edward generally followed the valley of Wood Creek. In Christopher Ward's account: "It crossed no fewer than forty deep ravines over which high and long bridges had been built. There were also numerous swamps and bogs" (*The War of the Revolution*).

Such terrain was a godsend to a general who sought to delay an enemy while building up forces to fight him. General Philip Schuyler, commanding the Northern Department, was ready to make the most of the natural obstructions in the way of the advancing British. He sent out a thousand axmen to fell trees across the route and Wood Creek. They rolled boulders down the hills into the creek to make it impassable to boats. Some of the woodsmen destroyed bridges, while others dug ditches that drained rainfall into newly created quagmires.

Schuyler instituted a scorched-earth operation in which farmers were coerced into driving away their cattle and hiding their foodstuffs. They were even persuaded to burn their grainfields so that the British would have to advance across a wasteland when they were not struggling through the impasses of the forest.

From the British viewpoint, Burgoyne was as determined as Schuyle was obstinate. He sent sappers, soldiers, and Canadian woodsmen by th hundreds ahead of the army to clear the trails, drain the swamps, an rebuild the bridges—in short, to undo all that Schuyler's men had done They even constructed a causeway two miles long to pass the artiller and wagons. They made headway, but by 25 July Burgoyne's main bod had advanced only to Fort Anne. Four days later he was finally approaching Fort Edward. It had taken twenty-one days to move twenty-thre miles!

WHILE BURGOYNE'S COLUMNS WERE CREEPING through the wilderness Schuyler's delaying actions bought him the time and the reinforcement he so badly needed. By 12 July he was joined by St. Clair with his mai force, and Colonel Long had brought his detachment from Skenesboro When Brigadier General John Nixon came in with his 600 Continentals Schuyler's strength at Fort Edward came to 4,500, of which 2,900 wer Continentals and 1,600 were militia. But Schuyler was not about to defend so dilapidated a fort. Fort Edward's condition was so bad, indee that he had told Washington how he had jumped his horse over its ruine walls. Consequently, he left a small rear guard at Fort Edward and withdrew down the Hudson to Saratoga, and on 3 August back to Stillwate twelve miles farther south.

During the period of his retreat three events occurred that were t have a significant effect on Schuyler and the northern army. The fir was the arrival of Major General Benedict Arnold at Schuyler's headquarters on 24 July. The second was Schuyler's decision to dispatch Arnold, some three weeks later, with 950 volunteers to relieve Fort Stanwi already recounted. The third incident, on 27 July, was the murder an scalping of Miss Jane McCrae, which would have far-reaching effects o both armies and their commanders.

Despite Schuyler's wisdom in delaying Burgoyne and dispatching S Leger on his way back to Canada, on 3 August he was relieved of command of the northern army. His replacement was Major General Horati Gates. This congressional action spelled the culmination of months vicious factional fighting, during which the New England troops sprea stories that both Schuyler and St. Clair were traitors. And even the ridiculous story of the "silver balls"* gained credence among many of th Yankees.

Gates arrived to assume command on 19 August and was receive graciously by Schuyler, who put himself at Gates's disposal, beginnin with detailed briefings to familiarize the new commander with all aspec of the situation. Two generals more opposite in background and manner would be hard to conceive. Horatio Gates's lower-class beginnin haunted him all his life and made him what Hoffman Nickerson h called "a snob of the first water."

---

*Burgoyne had supposedly bought off both generals by firing silver balls into Fort Ticonderoga which St. Clair sent to Schuyler as payment for their joint treason!

PHILO AND FAMILY IN THE OLD NORTHWEST

It came as welcome relief to find documented proofs of our family's activities, much more abundant as they made their way along the old westward frontier! The meager data related in our previous chapter, still not proven as it relates to us, took so very long to unearth that it seemed imperative to record the high spots; but, sadly, the most important - whom Rebekah's parents were, remains just as mysterious as ever. We are left wondering whether some of our basic premises are flawed. For instance, what if Clara Avery had so much trouble trying to decipher the handwriting of Philo's grandsons in Kansas and Oregon that she just did the best she could with it? They got most of their information second-hand, generations later except for the family Bible. You will notice examples of that very thing later in this book (e.g., Guy Rathbone misread as Eugene Rathburn). It is slim consolation that many trained professionals are as baffled as we when researching ancestries in that time and place.

One author, writing about descendants of Isaac Averill, especially of those who remained in the old homestead (see pg 50) had only four words to say about our ancestor, disposing of him summarily with, "Philo settled in Ohio." Brief as that is, it is true up to a point. * There had been New Englanders in Ohio ever since General Rufus Putnam of the Ohio Company of Associates drove his shay across the Alleghenies to Marietta in 1788. With such terrain, how in the world did he do it? By 1813 there were routes to quite a few Ohio destinations, though for extended stretches most were but crude, gut-wrenching trails. The way our family probably chose is suggested on diagrams on page 111.

The Averill Genealogy states that Philo "is said to have been under General Harrison at Tippecanoe 1811; and in the War of 1812." This, I believe, is a myth. Avery covered herself with those key words, is said to have been. No proof of any such service has been found. There is no doubt at all that the then very popular Harrison was his hero, and it was at his suggestion that a baby grandson was named William Henry Harrison Averill. For what it is worth, my own feeling is that Philo described all the details of those events as he had heard them, so vividly and so many times that certain descendants began to assume he had been there personally. After the following short review, what do you think? At the risk of taking too much space in this book, it won't hurt because it helps to show what Indiana was like when they got there, and those conditions did affect their lives. But as you read it, keep in mind that in 1811 Philo Averill was 43-years old, with a wife and seven healthy children from the the three marriages, plus probably Cropsey stepchildren, to support, and whether he would have abandoned them temporarily to go fight at Tippecanoe. Chances of survival in Indian warfare were only 50/50, grim rather than glamorous. Stripping that conflict of the romanticism built up later, it was essentially about resistance of a Shawnee chieftan to Southern land-grabbing, not an issue to arouse sympathy in Saratoga County NY.

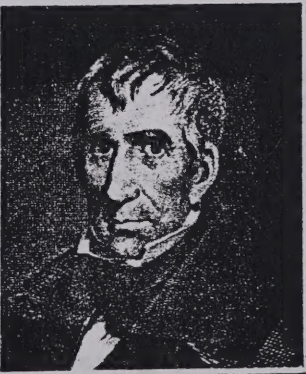
---

*History of Ancient Woodbury (1659-1854) by Cothren, pg 486. (but Cothren is one of those who claimed that Philo's Grandpa Isaac was one of three brothers who came from Milford Haven, Wales)

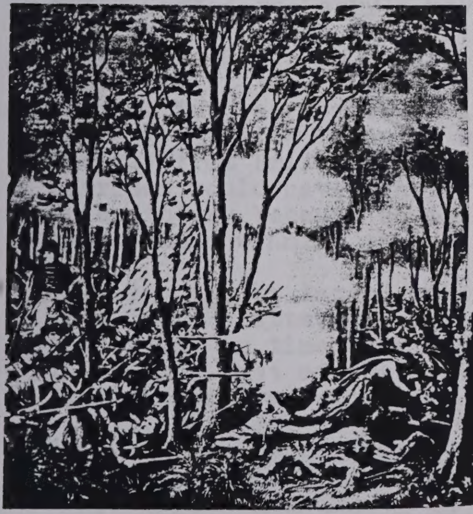
When Virginia-born Harrison was Governor of Indiana Territory, it included present Indiana, Illinois, Wisconsin and Michigan. The position carried with it the duties of Director of Indian Affairs and leader of the armed forces of that large area. In 1811, white settlement was confined almost entirely to the far south of Indiana and former French settlements such as Vincennes and Terre Haute on the Wabash, and Cahokia and Kaskaskia further west. Except for a small group of Swiss to be discussed later, virtually all the residents were southerners--exceptions were rare.

Most of Harrison's early activities were directed at getting Indian chieftains together and persuading them to make treaties selling land. He succeeded so well that by 1808 about 4/5 of Illinois and the southern third of Indiana had been acquired. Loss of so great a portion of native lands so alarmed the great Shawnee Chief Tecumseh that he commenced striving to unite all local tribes to stand together against further white encroachment, by war if necessary. He was emboldened by empty assurances of support by the British commander at the fort at Detroit. (That fort had not yet been surrendered due to reluctance to give up the fur trade, though that had been one of the conditions in the Revolutionary War peace treaty.)

In 1808, along with his brother The Prophet, Tecumseh's followers moved to a location west of the Tippecanoe River a few miles above where it empties into the Wabash, north of present Lafayette, Indiana, and there they built up a large Indian village surrounded by extensive farms patterned after those of white settlers. This seemed to them to be a strategic location from which to attack white settlements if war should come.

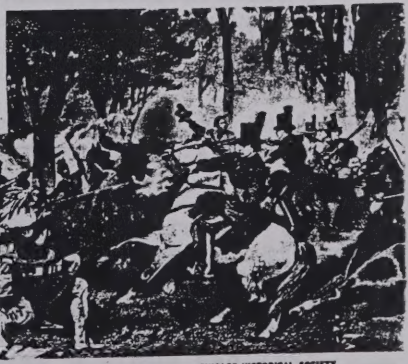


William Henry Harrison (1773-1841) General and later President, was a hero to Philo Averill and most of the country



CHICAGO HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Harrison Defeated the Indians led by Tecumseh's brother in the famous Battle of Tippecanoe in 1811



CHICAGO HISTORICAL SOCIETY

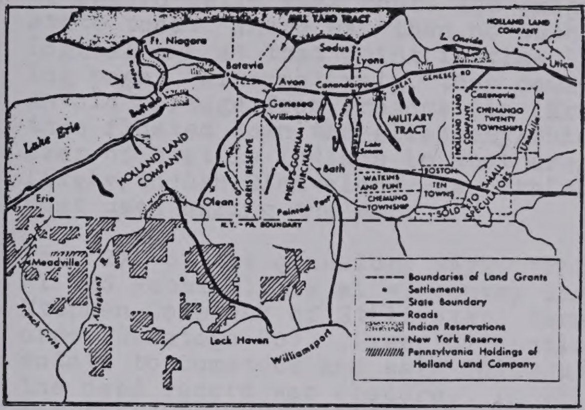
Harrison's Victory in the Battle of the Thames in 1813 broke British power in Northwest Territory

In late October 1811, an Indian was murdered by a white man in Terre Haute, enraging the tribesmen. In early November Harrison received intelligence that they were preparing to strike, and knew that he must do something to prevent destruction of the town. Though greatly outnumbered, he decided to act first with the 800 men then available, combined militia and US soldiers, some of them belonging to the New England 4th Regiment. After an exhausting march, they neared the Tippecanoe River at nightfall and planned a morning attack. The men were ordered to be on the alert, sleeping on their weapons, and guards were posted. Near dawn on 07 November 1811 they were aroused by an Indian attack led by the Prophet (Tecumseh being away on business). They lept to their feet and a sharp battle ensued, lasting only two hours. Harrison's forces lost 200 men but the Indians even more, and they drifted away, defeated.

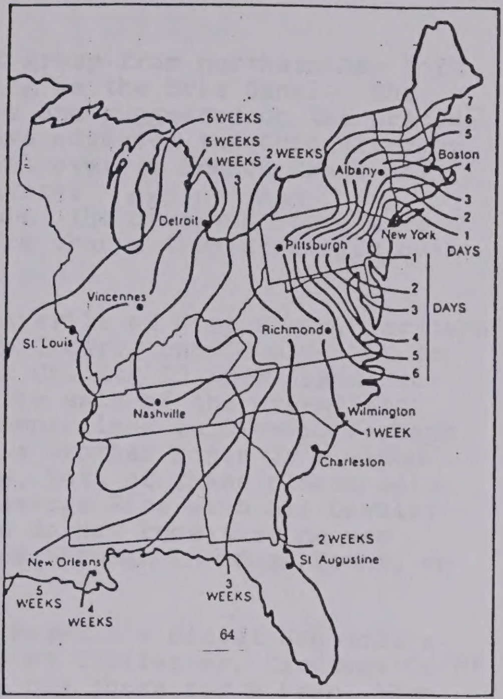
That was the Battle of Tippecanoe. Do you see room in this story for a New York family man? The conflict had not been planned but was a pre-emptive strike using the few men handy. The militia were local men plus Kentuckians. Some of the soldiers were New Englanders but except for the officers would have been very young men with a taste for adventure before they settled down. But Philo is also said to have been in the War of 1812 which broke out the next year, so we should examine that also. New York and New England were bitterly opposed to that war, which was forced on the nation by western and southern "war hawks" who wanted to conquer Canada and thought they were invincible. New York was, with reason, fearful of invasion. They were not happy with British policies (that country, fighting Napoleon, was preventing US naval trade with the continent and otherwise acting wrong) but the North preferred negotiation to conflict.

The war went badly at first. Inland it was a little better, though a part of Harrison's force was defeated by the British Proctor; but after Commodore Perry's naval victories on Lake Erie, Harrison with 2500 men turned on Proctor on 05 October 1813 on the north bank of the Thames River in Ontario, Canada. Proctor, who had only 400 men available at the time and 1000 Indians led by Tecumseh, attempted to flee but was cornered with great slaughter. The Battle of the Thames, in which Tecumseh was killed, relieved the Northwest permanently from British attack and broke up the Indian confederation. Harrison would have done even more, but was unable to follow up on this victory because so many of the militia started back home immediately upon winning that battle. Very many battles remained to be fought

Only two months later, in December 1813, British-led Canadian Indians from Niagara attacked Buffalo, New York, the port on Lake Erie, at that point in time only a small but developing village in a strategic location. Most of the houses were burnt to the ground. A very distant Averill relative whom they probably did not know was a merchant there. His entire stock of goods went up in flames and he went broke. Starving families became refugees. Part of the blame was directed toward the apathetic and poorly organized local militia which offered little resistance. More scenes of conflict in New York could be told about, but Philo did not participate. The Averill family's group had left New York by November, passing the Buffalo area before it was burned.


Mill Yard Tract
Holland Land Company
Ft. Niagara
Sodus
L. Oneida
Lyons
Utica
Batavia
Avon
Canandaigua
Great Genesee Rd
Geneseo
Williamsburg
Military Tract
Cazenovia
Chenango Twenty Townships
Lake Erie
Buffalo
Holland Land Company
Morris Reserve
Phelps-Gorham Purchase
Bath
Watkins and Flint
Chemung Township
Boston Ten Towns
Sold to Small Speculators
Erie
Olean
Painted Post
N.Y.–PA. Boundary
Meadville
Allegheny
French Creek
Lock Haven
Williamsport
Boundaries of Land Grants
Settlements
State Boundary
Roads
Indian Reservations
New York Reserve
Pennsylvania Holdings of Holland Land Company

Travel Time In 1800 from New York City

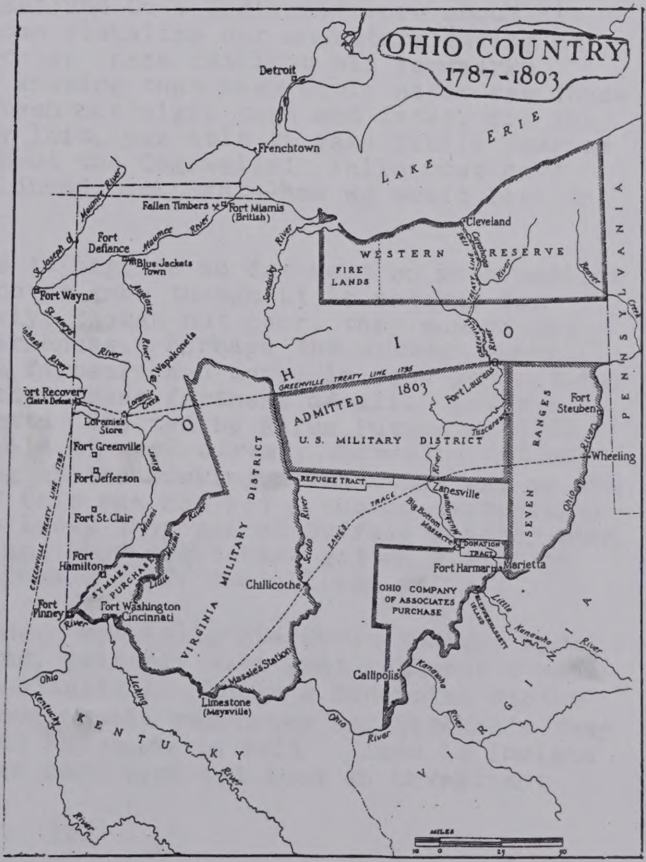

6 WEEKS
5 WEEKS
4 WEEKS
3
2 WEEKS
Boston
Albany
Detroit
Pittsburgh
New York
DAYS
Vincennes
St. Louis
Richmond
Nashville
Wilmington
1 WEEK
Charleston
2 WEEKS
St Augustine
New Orleans
5 WEEKS
4 WEEKS
3 WEEKS
64

The Averill group's destination was the Symmes Purchase area, shown at bottom, lower left of map.

Travel times from New York City rather than Albany, are shown in the diagram from a historical atlas. This indicates it would have taken them about a month to get there, perhaps more with household goods.

They would have taken the Mohawk Trail road, then the Gennessee Road shown on the map above to near Buffalo, where another road hugging the Lake Erie shoreline most of the way went to Cleveland, then local roads or trails the rest of the way.

In 1803, though not when they got there, the "Gore" was part of Ohio. That was the small triangular section of land between the present state boundary and the Greenville Treaty line to the Ohio.


OHIO COUNTRY
1787-1803
Detroit
Frenchtown
Lake Erie
Fallen Timbers
Fort Miamis (British)
Fort Defiance
Blue Jackets Town
Fort Wayne
Cleveland
Western Reserve
Fire Lands
Pennsylvania
Ohio
Admitted 1803
Greenville Treaty Line 1795
Fort Recovery
Loramies Store
Fort Greenville
Fort Jefferson
Fort St. Clair
Fort Hamilton
Symmes Purchase
Fort Finney
Fort Washington
Cincinnati
U.S. Military District
Virginia Military District
Refugee Tract
Zanesville
Chillicothe
Fort Laurens
Fort Steuben
Wheeling
Seven Ranges
Big Bottom Massacre
Donation Tract
Fort Harmar
Marietta
Ohio Company of Associates Purchase
Gallipolis
Massie's Station
Limestone (Maysville)
Kentucky
Virginia
Miles

No record tells what route the emigrant group from northern New York state took. There was then no such thing as the Erie Canal. The logical way at that point in time is the one suggested on the preceding page. Alternatively, they could have accessed the Ohio River by an old portage from Presque Ile (Erie PA) over to French Creek and thus floated down the Allegheny/Ohio Rivers; except that fear of hostile Indians in that area made the overland route more likely; though Cleaveland was nothing more than a tiny strategic outpost used during the War.

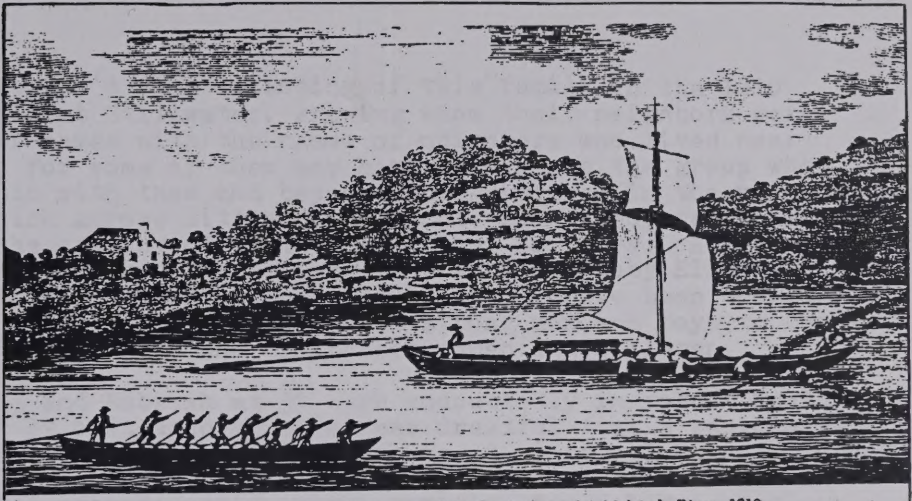
Page 270 of the genealogy says, "Philo Averill of Greenfield, Saratoga NY and Rebekah, his wife, convey land in Cicero, Onondaga Co. NY to Stephen Comstock of Stillwater, Saratoga Co. Aug 20 1809 (Land Records, Saratoga Co)." Page 387 mentions the sale of the Greenfield estate to Comstock and said Philo also owned land in Cicero. Perhaps the deed record was obscure. In 1813 his brother Moses Jr's widow and children were still living in Salina, both of these places being close to modern Syracuse. The Coronet George Rice with his Cavalry company were in the area also, though we do not know that he was Rebekah's kin. The emigrant group passed through Onondaga County on their way west.

In old age way out in Oregon, Philo and Rebekah's oldest son told a reporter that he "was born July 20, 1809 at Stillwater, Saratoga Co NY. Left there in the fall of 1813 for Ohio, was there for a year, then in 1814 settled in Vevay, Switzerland Co., Indiana." More about him much later in this book. One can visualize our ancestors gazing at their home and other sights such as those familiar old landmarks shown on page 94 of this book, knowing that they would never see those places again. They must have been nostalgic then and later, for the son, though only four when they left, was able to pass family stories on to his own children, even about the Cogswells! Philo must have repeated stories about his childhood back East--how we would love to hear them--as the years passed.

Why did Philo and Rebekah chose to migrate so far west so much earlier than their kinfolk? We may never know though it is natural for descendants to wonder. Obviously, though not poor, they sought yet greater prosperity and new experiences. Perhaps the answer was in his genes, for all his colonial forbears had moved in each generation, youngest ones like his grandfather Isaac farthest of all. And the New England settlement at Marietta started by Rufus Putnam in 1788, with its Land Office at Litchfield CT, was already spreading out and had a Captain George Rice living on the Muskingum--but that was on the SE part of the state. Far SW Ohio was not yet a common destination for New Yorkers. And they were lucky they passed Buffalo exactly when they did. A week or two later and they might have gotten killed by the marauding British-led tribesmen who set the village aflame.

Relatives in previous generations, especially his Uncle Samuel, made lots of money speculating in land, probably with Aunt Patience's wealthy parents supplying some of the capital. Philo's financial status would not permit that, but by pooling his resources and Rebekah's they were not poor. The US government was ready to sell land in Indiana Territory at $2.00 an acre. With hard work and luck an investment might be leveraged into more.

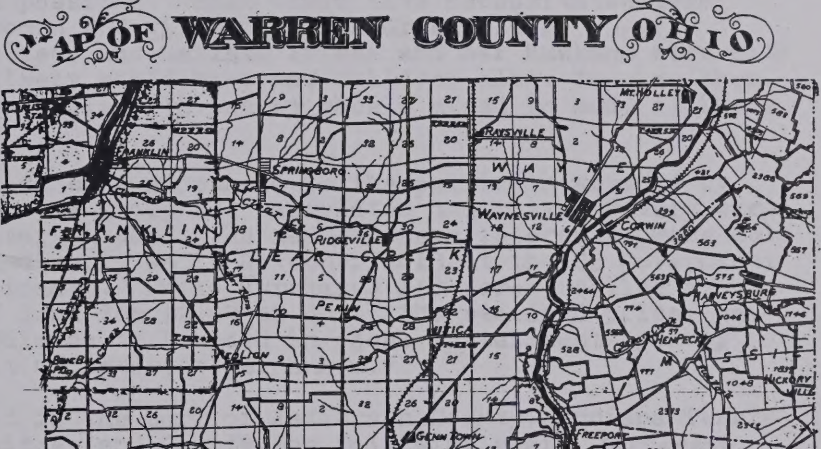
AVERILL FAMILY



A View of the Boats and Manner of Navigating on the Mohawk River, 1810

The old engraving shows what river travel on the Mohawk River was like in 1813. The group could have used boats part of the way but if they took tools and household goods, ox teams would have been more practical.

Warren Co. Ohio is adjacent to Cincinnati where the Land Office was located. The exact place where the family stayed before moving to Indiana's Gore is presently unknown. The Shaker Community in western Turtle Creek TWP was not started that soon.


MAP OF WARREN COUNTY OHIO
FRANKLIN
SPRINGBORO
WAYNE
WAYNESVILLE
CORWIN
RIDGEVILLE
CLEAR CREEK
HARVEYSBURG
PEKIN
UTICA
HENPECK
MASSIE
FREEPORT
TURTLE CREEK
SOCIETY OF SHAKERS
LEBANON
WASHINGTON
UNION
SOUTH LEBANON
MORROW
MASON
DEERFIELD
HOPKINSVILLE
MAINEVILLE
HAMILTON
BUTLERVILLE
WESTWOODVILLE
LOVELAND

to Cincinnati

It's too bad we can't find a listing of this family in the 1810 census, probably at Stillwater, showing whom their neighbors were, comparing their names with the names of neighbors who lived near them later on, for some of them may have been among the group who migrated to Ohio with them and beyond. Long before, in the much shorter migration across little Connecticut, his grandparents had traveled in the company of quite a few other families. A prolonged journey such as they undertook, with tiny suckling baby Eliza and toddlers Charlotte and Henry along, could hardly have been undertaken without a few other families with strong men and boys to cooperate in exhausting work and to protect women and children.

Philo at age 45 and Rebekah at 38 were undoubtedly in robust health; journey so far by ox-team over sometimes dreadful trails would have been more than strenuous and nerve-racking at times. Imagine a mother with fretful, tired-out little ones attempting to care for them and at the same time prepare meals over a campfire for a bedraggled, ravenous group, to say nothing of trying to keep clothing and gear as clean and dry as possible. That would have necessitated team effort by several women and girls. Rowlen Green's wife and Betsy would have helped, and Malissa if she and her husband were with them, though they likely would have had children also. Imagine them in a cold fall drizzle with oxcart wheels mired in mud, a likely scenario.

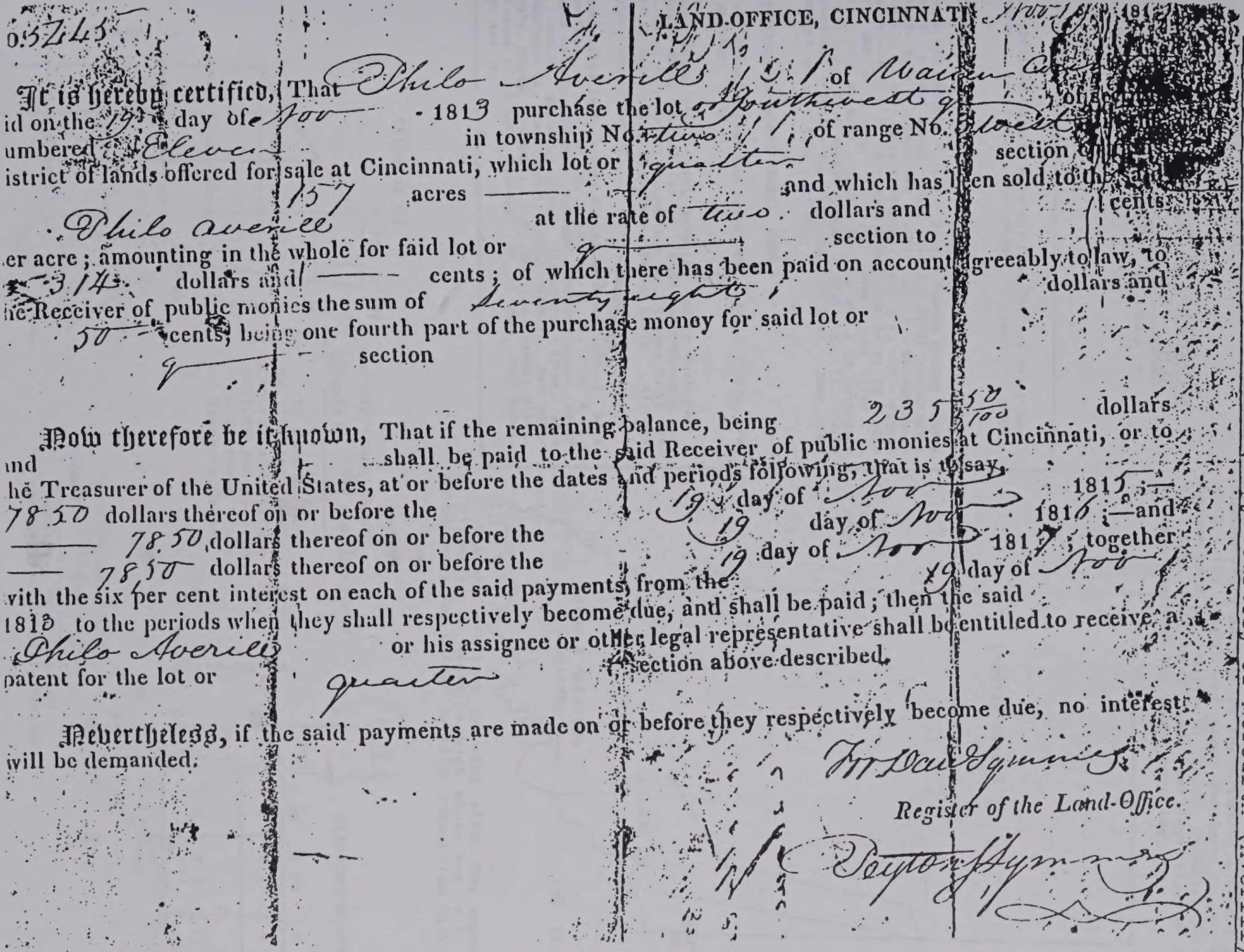
The land sale date had been announced to the public in advance by publication. Either the group had calculated their timing very carefully or they were very lucky. The men who were interested were able to show up bright and early on 19 November 1813 at the US Government Land Office in Cincinnati. Philo purchased 157 acres, called a quarter-section, of land for $2.00 an acre, the standard price, paying 1/4 down, the balance to be paid in equal installments yearly within four years at 6% interest per annum.*

The land was located in the part of Jefferson County, Indiana Territory that became Switzerland County the following year, Jefferson TWP, legal description SW quarter TWP 2, Range 3W, section 11. You will note that a Mr. Symmes signed the certificate as land office registrar--very interesting to a historian though there is not room here to dwell on the ups-and-downs of the Symmes family. A great many history books discuss the Symmes Purchase as an early example of land speculation in Ohio. Our illustration says Philo was of Warren County (Ohio) though when he sold the land later Wayne was given. Of course the latter is possible though much farther away. Warren County would have been sort of handy if, as son Henry said, they stayed in Ohio a while, though a whole year seems rather too long. Perhaps they stayed at some such locality as Waynesville, on the drains of the Little Miami River which flows to the Ohio through Cincinnati, thus easily accessible to their new home by boat. Often in the early days, when wilderness land was purchased, men went on ahead to prepare a dwelling and plant crops leaving women and children behind in a safe place during the interim.

---

*Learned through Meredith Averill^{4} (Charles Virgil^{3}Alfred Alexander^{2} Henry James Cropsey^{1}) great-granddaughter of the little son quoted. now Mrs. Charles Bolton--see next page.

Philo Averill's 19 November 1813 purchase of land in Indiana from US Land Office at Cincinnati (copy courtesy of Meredith (Averill) Bolton.



0.3245

LAND-OFFICE, CINCINNATI, Nov 19 1813

It is hereby certified, That Philo Averill of Warren Co
id on the 19th day of Nov 1813 purchase the lot or Southwest q of section
umbered Eleven in township No two of range No. West
istrict of lands offered for sale at Cincinnati, which lot or quarter section contains
157 acres and which has been sold to the said
Philo averill at the rate of two dollars and cents
er acre; amounting in the whole for said lot or q section to
314 dollars and — cents; of which there has been paid on account agreeably to law, to
he Receiver of public monies the sum of Seventy eight dollars and
50 cents, being one fourth part of the purchase money for said lot or
q section

Now therefore be it known, That if the remaining balance, being 235 50/100 dollars
nd shall be paid to the said Receiver of public monies at Cincinnati, or to
he Treasurer of the United States, at or before the dates and periods following, that is to say,
78.50 dollars thereof on or before the 19 day of Nov 1815;—
78.50 dollars thereof on or before the 19 day of Nov 1816;—and
78.50 dollars thereof on or before the 19 day of Nov 1817; together
vith the six per cent interest on each of the said payments, from the 19 day of Nov
1813 to the periods when they shall respectively become due, and shall be paid; then the said
Philo Averill or his assignee or other legal representative shall be entitled to receive a
patent for the lot or quarter section above described.

Nevertheless, if the said payments are made on or before they respectively become due, no interest will be demanded.

Register of the Land-Office.

Peyton S Symmes

AVERILL FAMILY

Excerpts from Early Settlers of Indiana's Gore 1803-1820 by Shirley Keller Edsell - Heritage Books (1995)

The Indiana Territory was formed in 1800 upon the division of the old Northwest Territory and with separation from the new state of Ohio. The Gore area remained part of Ohio's Hamilton County; its western boundary was defined by the Greenville Treaty Line of 1795. The "Gore" was named Dearborn County when it became part of Indiana in 1803. Counties covered in this book will have their earliest records divided between Dearborn and Clark counties.

SWITZERLAND COUNTY: Original Land Entries Tract Book
FORMAT: Section - Purchaser - year - page;

Township 2, Range 3W continued

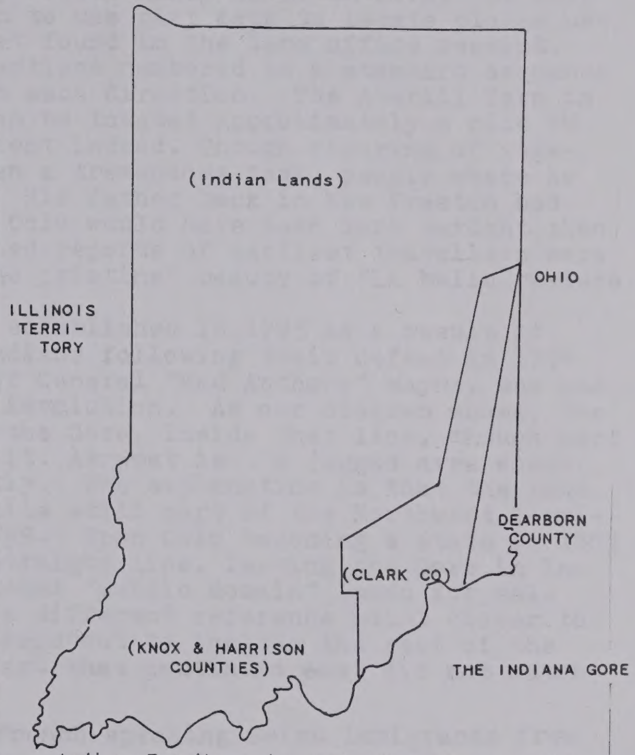
JOHN VAN BRIGGLE - 1817 - 9; 8 - THOMAS WRIGHT - 1816 9; 8 - ROBERT BAKES - 1817 - 9; 9 - PETER VAN BRIGGLE 1815- 9; 9 - JOSEPH ORR - 1817 - 9; 9 - GEORGE CRAIG 1815 - 9; 9 - JACOB RAMSIERE - 1817 - 9; 10 - HIERAM OGLE - 1817 - 9; 10 - HUGH MOORE - 1816- 9; 10 - JOHN F. DUFOUR - 1814 - 9; 10 - JOHN BLANEY -1814 - 9; 11 - AMOS GILBERT - 1812 - 9; 11 - WM. & JN. DICKESON 1811 - 9; 11 - JOSEPH NOBLE - 1813 - 9; 11 - PHILO ✓AVERILL - 1813 - 9; 12, 13, 14 & 15 - JOHN JAMES DUFOUR et al - 1802 - 9; 17

SWITZERLAND COUNTY DEEDS: Book A

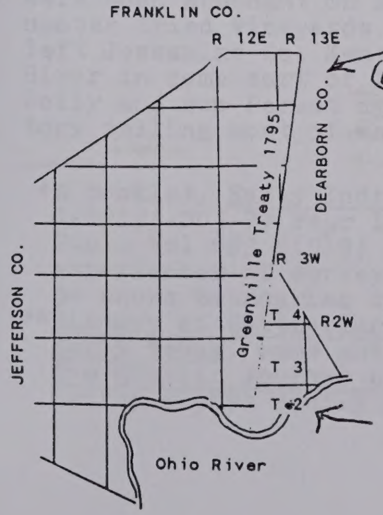
Mt. Sterling plat map dated 1816. PHILO AVERIL, proprietor. p 29

Bond dated 1817. PHIL AVERILL, ANDREW STAPLETON & DAVID BEEBE to Gov'r of IN. Bond for AVERILL's service as Coroner of Switzerland Co. Signed PHILO AVERILL, ANDREW (x) STAPLETON, DAVID BEEBE. Witness: JOHN FRANCIS DUFOUR.

Bond dated 1818. JAMES BOLENS to PHILO AVERILL. Bond on lots in town of Mt. Sterling, S 35, T 3, R 3W. Lots sold to GEORGE W. SAMPSON, BENJAMIN HEADY, JACOB L. CARLOW, CALDWELL HINES, ALEXANDER HATTON, JOHN PROTSMAN SR, JOHN DUMONT, SAMUEL ROBERTS, JOHN DUNSROTH, GEORGE COGGSHELL, P.D. MANVILLE, SAMUEL DAVIS. Signed J. BOLENS. Witness: WM. C. KEEN, JOHN BROWN. pp 469, 470

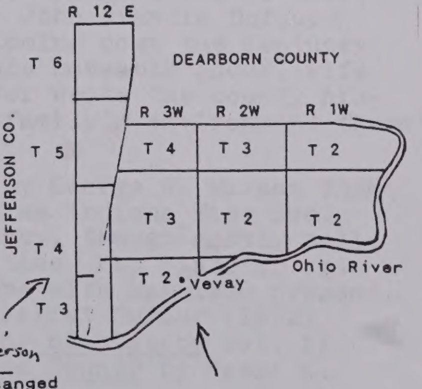

(Indian Lands)
OHIO
ILLINOIS TERRITORY
DEARBORN COUNTY
(CLARK CO)
(KNOX & HARRISON COUNTIES)
THE INDIANA GORE

Indiana Territory in 1809 after the separation of Illinois. A ten-mile high strip was later added to the northern border in 1816, taken from Michigan.


FRANKLIN CO.
R 12E
R 13E
DEARBORN CO.
Greenville Treaty 1795
R 3W
T 4
R2W
T 3
T 2
JEFFERSON CO.
Ohio River

JEFFERSON COUNTY (Created 1811 from Dearborn)

SE portion now SWITZERLAND COUNTY. Central and eastern SWITZERLAND derived from southern end of Dearborn County.


R 12 E
T 6
DEARBORN COUNTY
JEFFERSON CO.
T 5
T 4
T 3
R 3W
R 2W
R 1W
T 4
T 3
T 2
T 3
T 2
T 2
T 2
Vevay
Ohio River

SWITZERLAND COUNTY, created 1814 from Jefferson

boundaries have changed very little since formation

Philo learned a little about surveying when he and Calvin carried chains for a crew at Hadley in 1802. At some point in time he became somewhat adept at it--enough, perhaps, to teach the rudiments to young Henry JC, who did it professionally later in life. We who are not expert can easily learn to use plat maps to locate places using legal descriptions like that found in the land office receipt. Each township consists of 36 sections numbered in a standard sequence to create a square six miles in each direction. The Averill farm in the SW quarter of section 11 can be located approximately a mile NW of downtown Vevay, very convenient indeed. Though clearing of vegetation and trees would have been a tremendous task, people where he came from were enured to that. His father back in New Preston had done it, though land along the Ohio would have been more verdant than rocky New England. All published reports of earliest travellers were unanimous in their praise of the pristine beauty of "La belle reviere."

The Greenville Treaty line was established in 1795 as a result of negotiations with dispirited Indians following their defeat in 1794 at Fallen Timbers by the army of General "Mad Anthony" Wayne, who had also a brilliant career in the Revolution. As our diagram shows, the Averill family came to live in the Gore, inside that line, though part of Switzerland County was past it. At west is a jagged area where township lines do not mesh neatly. The explanation is that the land within the Gore was surveyed while still part of the Northwest Territory, then Ohio Territory in 1799. Upon Ohio becoming a state in 1803 its western boundary became a straight line, leaving the Gore in Indiana Territory. The Congressional "public domain" lands for sale after 1803 were surveyed using a different reference point closer to the center of Indiana, which spread out to include the rest of the old Northwest Territory. The part that continued east did not match the old survey lines.*

In 1802 a group of Protestant French-speaking Swiss immigrants from the commune of Chatelard at Vevay, Canton de Vaud, entered 2500 acres of land along the Ohio River in the Gore. They established a colony there with the goal of commencing a wine industry. Grapes were soon abundant on south-facing hillsides, though a few of their number tried vineyards in other localities. John Francis Dufour left Jessamine Co. Kentucky in March 1809, coming down the Kentucky River in some sort of boat loaded with all his moveable goods, wife Polly and son Perret aged 18 months (who later wrote the county history telling most of what we know about our family's environment there)*

---

*A booklet, Early Indiana Trails & Surveys by George R. Wilson ISBN 0-87195-005-7) repr 1972, originally publ. as Indiana Hist Soc. Publ. Vol 6#3 (1919) mentions the discrepancy, though mostly tells experiences of surveyors in various localities. Map plate 9, pg. 54 shows boundaries of Indian cessions, some with Harrison present.

**History of Switzerland County, Indiana by Perret Dufour (1872)
Early Vevay, same author in Indiana Magazine of History Vol. XX
The Hoosier Journal of Ancestry, Switzerland County by Naomi K. Sexton (1989) mostly paraphrases Dufour

They no sooner reached the mouth of Indian Creek on the north shore of the Ohio when a storm came up. Fearing the boat would sink, Polly and Perret were put ashore and the heaviest goods were jettisoned. In that vicinity, which later became downtown Vevay, he cut logs to build a 20x14, one and a half story cabin and commenced clearing land and planting grapes. Indian creek was renamed Venoge in honor of the stream in Switzerland on whose banks he grew up, which empties into the NE side of beautiful Lake Geneva.

Though a few settlers or squatters from Kentucky straggled in as early as the Swiss, they were virtually alone in the wilderness when little Perret got there. There being no roads, settlers had to go in canoes, skiffs or perogues to Cincinnati for salt, iron, nails and dry goods--though somehow his father managed to wangle a post-office (delivery via Kentucky) from the government! In 1810, in response to conditions that led up to the War of 1812, Indians became so surly that a local militia was formed for protection. Two roads were constructed leading to forts. In 1811 settlers were alarmed by tremors lasting several days, from the earthquakes at New Madrid MO. There were wierd, violent shocks and tall trees shook violently though there was no wind.

When the War of 1812 broke out many were killed, so blockhouses were built, some on the fringes of settlement, and a fort with a company of rangers was formed to go out against marauding Indians. Many of the militia leaders came from Kentucky. That year the population swelled to about 900 in the Gore. After General Harrison's victory on 05 October 1813 there was a lull in fighting, though the situation remained tense. By that time keelboats had become numerous upon the Ohio, and increased clearings in the hills with more people coming in though concentrated not far from the river, no towns.

That year the Dufours began Vevay, deciding that platting a town was more lucrative than planting grapes. The lots in the original part of town were partly in the woods and partly in a deadening of trees in some cleared land. Notice of the sale of lots was given in newspapers published in Cincinnati, Louisville, Lexington and Frankfort. The cheapest lot was $22.00 and the highest $92.00. The sale of Swiss-owned land there was held in November 1813, very shortly after Philo Averill's purchase of farmland close by, not cleared, from the US government. It is interesting to compare the price of $2.00 an acre for farmland in the woods to a mere town lot near the waterfront, though the Dufours had many takers who also had to do a lot of clearing and building. Alluvial soil is rich.

Logically one would presume that almost all of the Averills' closest neighbors were either Swiss or Kentuckians and that there might be cultural shock but, if so, Philo, an extravert like his grandfather, showed no sign of it--to the contrary, he was a good mixer. Their closest neighbors, accordingto land entry records, were Joseph Noble next door on the east who purchased three weeks earlier on 25 October 1813 the SE¼ section. Maybe he was from Kentucky, but Philo had Connecticut cousins of that name. These Nobles were locally prominent, including lawyers, etc. A James Noble living there later became a US senator. A listing for the NW¼ was not seen.

The entire section 12 south of the Averill homestead had been purchased by original Swiss settlers John F. Dufour and associates in June 1802, along with a great many other sections. Next door to the west, John Francis Dufour (Perret's father) purchased SE¼ on 01 Dec 1814. As to the adjoining section 2 on the north, the entire south half had been purchased on 09 Oct 1804 by George Craig and Griffith Dickinson who had been living just across the river in Kentucky up to then. (Craig, who had been active in the militia, became a justice of the peace ten years later, having previously been a lister of taxable property, in which he was later succeeded by Rev. Allen Wiley, the first local Methodist preacher.) It should be made clear that these neighbor's names were learned from land entry records, not deed records recorded in the courthouse. Deed records were first created when land was sold to new buyers. I did not consult deeds. Thus if Philo owned land in Mount Sterling four miles to the north, he must have purchased it from an earlier owner. It is also possible that the Dufour land in section 12 next to the Averills was sold to new owners whose names have not been learned.

There was a flurry of activity during spring and summer 1814 as new owners cleared land and buildings were put up. Philo and Rowlen Green Averill and any other help they had labored hard indeed. It really would have been logical to have the women and children back in Ohio, for sweat, dirt, heat, and especially mosquitoes were always thick in the brush, especially in swampy places, before clearing took place, painful and condusive to malaria. Bears, panthers, snakes and wolves were also plentiful and dangerous, and bounties paid in some cases--such as in 1816 when a Mrs. Jones was paid for shooting a wolf. Numerous structures were erected on the waterfront in 1814. As Dufour put it, "during the summer of 1814 Vevay and the surrounding country improved considerably."

As shown on page 116, Jefferson Co. was created in 1811 from Dearborn. The county seat at Madison in the other half was inconveniently located about 25 miles away. With increased population Switzerland County was created in fall 1814, divided into two townships, Posey and Jefferson, with the courthouse in Vevay. The first court term commenced 18 October 1814. Philo Averill was chosen as a member of the first 18-member Grand Jury. Several trials were held, county officials were elected, frequently on recommendation of the territorial governor, and many rules of the court for future use were debated--11 were enacted. On 28 October Elisha Golay, who had been recommended by the governor, declined to serve as county surveyor, whereupon it was decided to ask the governor to appoint John Gilliland, Philo's future son-in-law. On Saturday 29 October court was adjourned to 27 March 1815, though a case was still on the docket. At that next session John Gilliland was foreman of the grand jury. Meanwhile bids were put out for the construction of a brick courthouse and there was the matter of a jailhouse to be constructed.

Those people were completely cut off from all trade and most communication with the east. By 1814 most trade was carried on by keel boats plying the Ohio. (See illustration top page 113 for similar boats on the Mohawk.)

Taken from Indiana Magazine of History
Volume XX

Early Vevay

By Perret Dufour

(Continued)

The associate judges who were by the laws in force in Indiana territory authorized to transact the county business, such as causing roads and highways to be laid out, opened and kept in repair, and also the appointment of overseers of the roads, and assigning the hands to each supervisor, the appointment of all township officers except justices of the peace were also authorized to transact business pertaining to decedents' estates granting licenses for keeping taverns, and establishing rates to be charged by tavern keepers, had a great deal of business pertaining to opening highways to attend to for the first year or two.

To entitle a person to obtain a license to keep tavern he was compelled by the law to have the petition of a certain number of persons praying the court to grant the license, and also to prove to the satisfaction of the court that he was a person of good moral character, and that he had a certain number of extra beds and extra stable room for keeping horses. If the person applying for such tavern license proved to the satisfaction of the court that he had the character, extra beds and stable room required by the law, license was granted him, and he was required to enter into bond with security to keep his said tavern as required by law.

✓Philo Averil was the first person to obtain license to keep a tavern in Vevay. He obtained license on the 24th of November, 1814, and on the 25th of November, 1814, the court established the following rates to be charged by tavern keepers in the county of Switzerland. For a meal of victuals, 25 cents; for lodging, per night, 12½ cents; for corn or oats, per gallon, 12½ cents; for horse at hay, per twenty-four hours, 25 cents; for whisky, per half pint, 12½ cents; for peach brandy, per half pint, 12½ cents; for Holland gin, French brandy and Jamaica spirits, 50 cents; for rum, per half pint, 37½ cents; for imported Maderia wine, per quart, $2; for Switzerland Maderia wine, per quart or bottle, $1; for Switzerland red wine, per quart or bottle, 75 cents; for domestic gin and cherry bounce, per half pint, 18¾ cents.

In March, 1815, license was granted to William Cooper to keep a tavern in Vevay. On the 30th of March, 1815, a license was granted to Peter Harris to keep a tavern at his house in this county, and in November, 1815, he laid out the town of Jacksonville.

In September, 1815, license was granted to "Uncle" Thomas Armstrong (as he was familiarly called), to keep a tavern in the town of Vevay for one year from the first day of July, 1815, he having entered into bond with security at that time.

This was, in fact, the first tavern established in Vevay with the ostensible purpose in view of entertaining travelers, for let it be borne in mind that at that time "tippling houses" were unknown in this new country, as by the laws of force, none but tavern keepers were permitted to sell liquor by the small or, as was their usual expression, "by the half pint".

In some instances the laws were evaded and persons obtained license to keep a tavern who had not the requisite number of extra beds and the extra stable room. This law was in force for some years under the state government.

On one occasion a person, to obtain license, borrowed three beds of his neighbors and set them up in his house, which was a small one, and rented of a neighbor a stable on an adjoining lot for one month, and when the county court met he produced his proof and proved to the satisfaction of the court that he had the requisite number of extra beds and extra stable room to accommodate the number of travelers and their horses that the territorial law required and obtained a tavern license. Some few days afterward this tavern had no extra beds and soon afterwards no extra stable room, for he had returned the borrowed beds and given up the rented stable, but having the license he continued to sell spiritous and other liquors by the half pint.

This circumstance is here related to show that the laws relating to the retail of spiritous liquor were violated in those early days of Switzerland county, as well as in the days that are within the remembrance of many of our young men.

Reading this, it is hard to suppress a chuckle. Though Dufour was a diplomatic sort, his meaning is clear. Philo comes through as a Connecticut Yankee who saw no harm in bending the rules a little to make a harmless buck, if it hurt nobody. Others felt the same way.

A keelboat about that time ascended rivers into mid-Kentucky, to the military post at Prairie du Chien, to Pittsburg, up the Kanawha deep into present West Virginia, to Nashville, and to New Orleans. With barges they transported iron, salt, produce and manufactured goods all along the rivers. New Orleans with its international port was the only market of surplus goods for export and manufactured things available nowhere else could be procured. The first steamboat to make the run from Pittsburg to New Orleans passed by in 1811, just missing the New Madrid earthquake, though it felt the backlash when for a day or so the waters of the Mississippi actually ran backward, changing the channels and filling them with debris. Soon they were competing for trade, though their heyday had not yet come.

News of McDonough's victory on Lake Champlain was received with joy in the fall of 1814. Citizens decided to have an illumination to celebrate. Every window in every house was illuminated as brilliantly as could be with common tallow candles, including the Averills'.

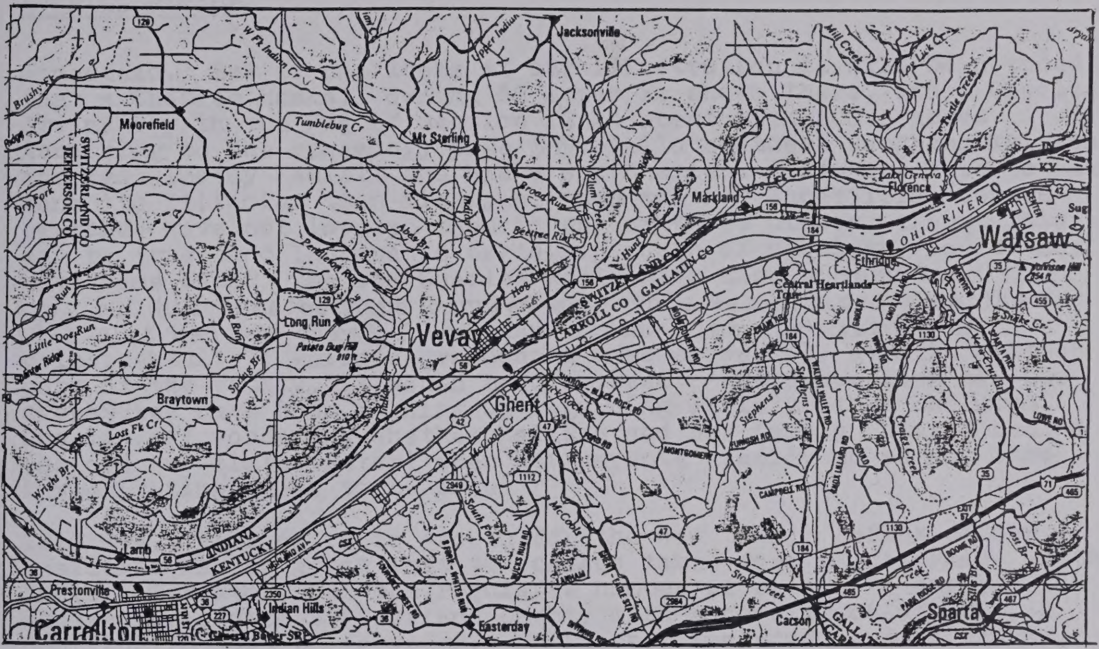
Norman Chancellor Averill, our ancestor, was born 11 January 1815. That was less than two months after his father Philo had, on 25 Nov, been granted license to operate a tavern. Territorial law mandated that to receive such a license one had to operate an innfor travelers. Perhaps that was to make settlement easier, but people in Vevay considered that was asking a bit much, though for the sake of appearances they (and Philo) went through the motions. He was first; others followed suit. Norman's babyhood was thus spent in a tavern. It was in a small log home, for neither they or any of their neighbors would have had time or energy to construct big houses that soon, in those surroundings--certainly less spacious than back in New York. Until they could spread out, grown son, daughters, their spouses and little children galore--as well as the new baby--and people asking for alcoholic beverages would all have been under that roof. Admiration for Rebekah grows apace. How she could manage all that and keep her composure is hard to imagine. A century before many Puritan ladies had operated taverns in their homes to make money and for companionship. I doubt Rebekah needed all that companionship.

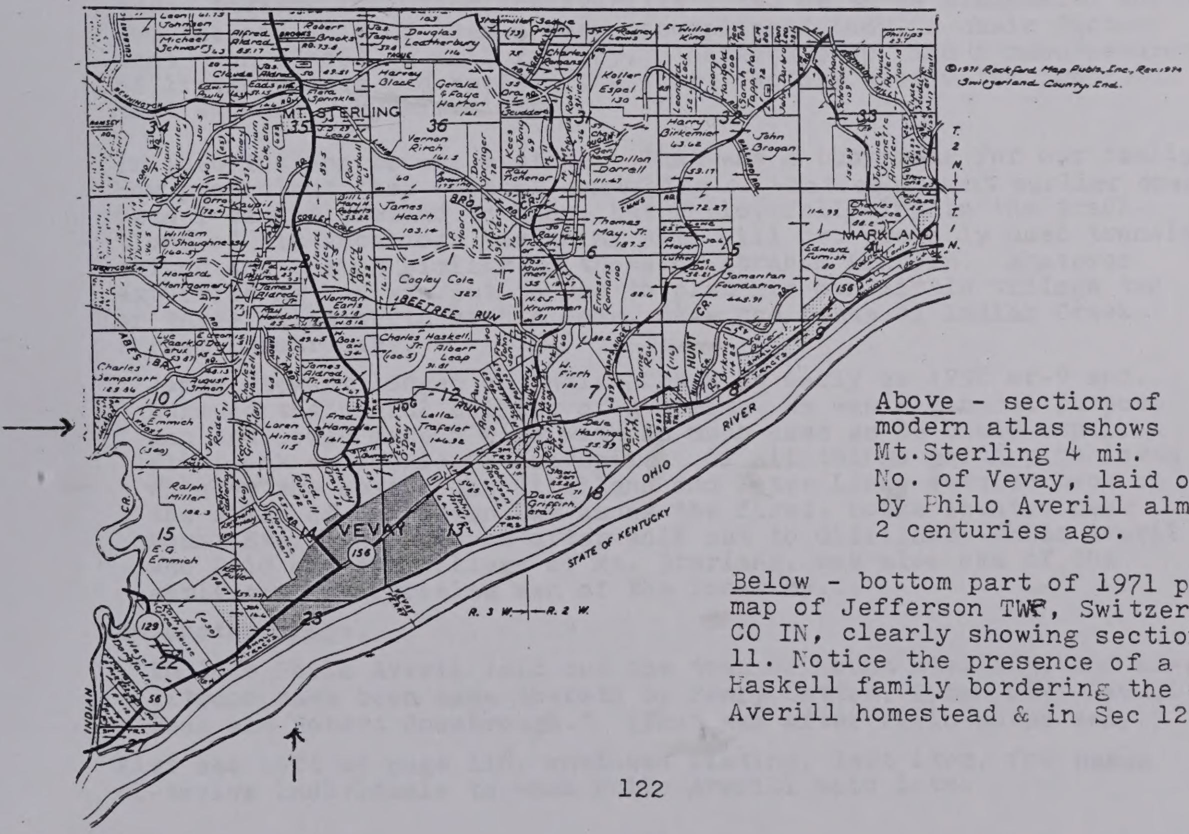
The genealogy states that Norman was the first white child born in Vevay. Of course white people in that general area had been having babies at least since 1802. Perhaps they meant right in town and excluding babies of Swiss descent. Another source reports that according to an oldtimer named Bakes, late in 1814 little Lucien Rous, son of James Rous (Swiss) newly settled downtown, was born.* The babies would have been about the same age; Bakes could have been mistaken. But either way Lucien wins on a technicality, if Norman was born at the tavern, according to a 1971 plat map of Jefferson Township showing that the SW¼ section 11 is still slightly outside the city limits.

A copy of that plat map is presented here, partly because it shows something else rather curious. As mentioned (last line p. 118) no entry data was seen for the NW¼ of section 11 bordering the Averill

---

*Hoosier Jnl of Ancestry, previously cited, page 7.


Jacksonville
Moorefield
Mt Sterling
Markland
Florence
OHIO RIVER
Warsaw
Ethridge
Vevay
Long Run
Ghent
Braytown
Lamb
INDIANA
KENTUCKY
SWITZERLAND CO
JEFFERSON CO
CARROLL CO
GALLATIN CO
Prestonville
Carrollton
Indian Hills
Easterday
Carson
Sparta
Tumblebug Cr
Indian Cr
Lost Fk Cr


MT. STERLING
MARKLAND
VEVAY
BEETREE RUN
HOG RUN
OHIO RIVER
STATE OF KENTUCKY
HUNT CR.
R. 3 W. — R. 2 W.
T. 2 N.
T. 1 N.
Charles Haskell, Jr.
Cogley Cole
James Hearth
Thomas May, Jr.
John Grogan
Harry Birkemier
Somantan Foundation
E.G. Emmich
Ralph Miller
Lella Trafaler
W. Firth
David Griffith

©1971 Rockford Map Publs., Inc., Rev. 1974 Switzerland County, Ind.

Above - section of modern atlas shows Mt.Sterling 4 mi. No. of Vevay, laid out by Philo Averill almost 2 centuries ago.

Below - bottom part of 1971 plat map of Jefferson TWP, Switzerland CO IN, clearly showing section 11. Notice the presence of a Haskell family bordering the old Averill homestead & in Sec 12.

homestead. But if one looks at our illustration it will be noticed that a Charles Haskell owning 60 acres is shown there, and a Charles Jr. nearby in the NW¼ of Section 12 adjacent with 100.5 acres. According to the genealogy page 559, Philo's oldest daughter Malissa married Timothy Haskell and had a son Charles. They are said to have gone "to Illinois, then Michigan, then south." Superficial census searches have not located them in any of those places, though this may be true. And Indiana is certainly south of Michigan--could they have come back? The son Charles would have died a very long time ago, but his name perhaps carried on. This was noticed when the 1971 plat map was first found, but at the time disregarded as coincidental. If Philo's grandson's name showed up, even in another part of the county, it would be dismissed. But since then big discrepancies have been turning up regarding Philo's other children. One is left wondering whether Malissa and her family stayed behind (as did her sister Betsy) when her parents' family moved on. More investigation needs to be done.

1815 was a year of rapid growth for the new town. Influx of new residents was so great that the census taken then to determine whether Indiana Territory had the requisite number of people to qualify for statehood, showed Switzerland County with a population of 1800, a doubling in just three years. Businesses included several stores, three taverns including the Averills', two or three blacksmith shops, two tailors--one of them a very accomplished lady, a chair factory that soon closed, a nail factory, a hatters shop, and a manufacturer of little wheels and reels. The first factory used water power but that was not very efficient.

In 1816 Indiana became a state. That was a busy year for our family. How proficient they were at surveying or what equipment earlier ones used I cannot pretend to know; but Philo, following in the traditions of his ancestors beginning with Will Jr, probably used transit, tripod and chains similar to those of Abraham Lincoln. Whatever expertise he had was put to use to plat his own little village two or three miles north of his home, near the forks of Indian Creek. Perret Dufour says,

> "James Stewart lodged on Indian Creek as early as 1798 or-9 and.. pursued the useful calling of gunsmith. He was a general purpose man and could make a plow with as much ease as he could repair a flintlock or fashion a handspike. Of all things earthly he loved whiskey the most. John Gilliland and Peter Locke settled back on the hills of Jefferson TWP among the first. Locke located near Mount Sterling but soon after sold out to Gilliland. Philo Averil who laid out the village of Mt. Sterling, was also one of the early and enterprising men of the locality..."

On another page,

> "In 1816 Philo Averil laid out the town of Mount Sterling, and additions have been made thereto by Henry Cotton, Lyman Mix, Samuel Beal and Robert Rosebrough." (That was after Philo moved away.)

Also see left of page 116, enclosed listing, last item, for names of twelve individuals to whom Philo Averill sold lots.

If our information is correct about dates, 1816 must have been a very sad year. It is said that the oldest son, Rowlen Green Averill, died about then in Indiana, and that his widow (name not given) returned to live in New York with their very small son Charles. There is no reason to doubt it, but the information should be verified if it is possible because of other discrepancies. For instance, it was assumed Rowlen Green was probably born in Saratoga Springs NY though Canaan, Columbia Co. is more likely because he was somewhat older than claimed. One assumes the widow later remarried. The grandson, Charles Averill, has not been identified in later census searches, as far as is known. Switzerland County vital records do not go back that far. The first printed marriage records start in 1817, as well as spotty cemetery records.* None of them mention Rowlen Green Averill.

Rowlen must have done much of the heavy labor, clearing raw timberland, construction work, and otherwise helping in countless ways. It is very sad that he could not live to enjoy the fruits thereof. One cannot help but wonder what caused his death so young. The frontier was a hazardous place.

Perhaps the local Methodist minister tried the best he could to console the grieving family. The denomination had no church building until at least a decade later. Circuit-riding Rev. Allen Wiley had entered land to the northwest by 1816, according to land records. Most of his services were held in private homes, with the good man riding his horse from place to place where people would congregate on pre-announced dates. Outdoor meetings might be held in good weather. He could not come every Sunday to one spot because he had a large territory to cover at first. Dufour mentioned that the first public funeral in Vevay that he could remember was that of a Mrs. Cole, "with Rev. Allen Wiley of the Methodist Church performing the last rites."

By the time he, himself died, cemetery records were better kept. Cemetery inscriptions of Slawson cemetery are revealing.*

> "Wiley, Rev. Allen, born in Frederick Co. VA Jan 15 1789 died at Vevay July 3 1848 in his 60th year.
> Margaret, wife of Rev. Allen, d Aug 18 1856 aged 69 y 8 m 3 d
> Rev. Melville H., son of Rev. A. & M., d Sep 13 1841 aged 27 y 10 m 22 d"(the latter was predeceased in 1838 by Maria age 5 mo. Son Melville H., Jr. died June 1842 aged 5 mo.)

Philo and Rebekah's youngest child, Allen Wiley Averill, was born in Switzerland County 04 February 1817. It is obvious for whom he was named.

---

*Switzerland County Indiana Cemetery Inscriptions(1817-1985) (1986) by Wanda L. Worford. (Despite the title, only a few of the earliest pioneer interrments are represented. Most of the Gillilands and all the Haskells mentioned were of a later date than those we are seeking.)

AVERILL FAMILY

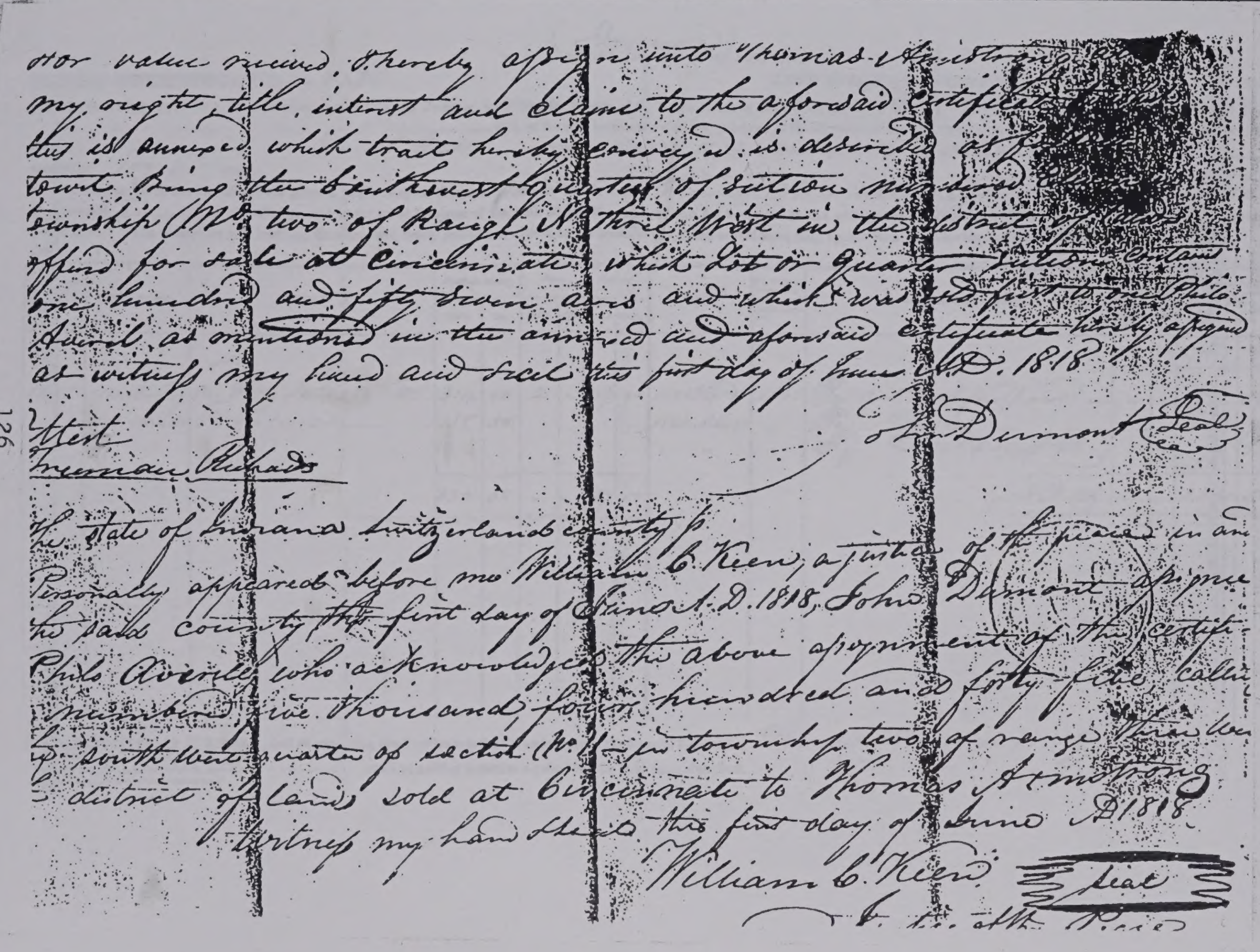
County Deed Book A abstract mentions: "Bond dated 1817. Philo Averill, Andrew Stapleton and David Beebe to Governor of Indiana - bond for Averill's service as Coroner of Switzerland County. /s/ Philo Averill, (x)Andrew Stapleton, David Beebe. Witness: John Francis Dufour" Posting bond for government office was standard procedure. Duties of a coroner were to convene special juries to investigate deaths suspected to have occurred from other than natural causes. Intelligence, an inquiring mind, and community respect were about the only qualifications. Medical expertise was not a requisite. Some of his cases might be documented in public records--no search has been made. In that rapidly-expanding frontier, with people of all kinds of backgrounds arriving daily, one can imagine the potentialities. It was an honorable and needful position. Did you know that after the Revolution, Paul Revere served many years as Coroner of the City of Boston?

Following this page are two more documents from Mrs. Bolton, showing that on 01 June 1818 he assigned his government land to "Uncle Tom" Armstrong, the locally prominent citizen who actually did run an Inn for travelers at his tavern. Armstrong made the balance of the payments, finally receiving a certificate in 1825, years after the Averills left. Based on these papers, it appears that Philo had been paying minimum amounts allowable, reserving his ready cash for his real estate venture in the probably healthier higher grounds near the Gilliland family at the forks of Indian Creek, moving his own family there so that he could devote more of his energies to the development of the village of Mt. Sterling.

However, they did stay in Indiana until at least December 1818, and many events occurred, some of which contradict what was evidently told to Clara Avery for inclusion in the Genealogy. Discrepancies should be pointed out before we move on. The book states that Philo's first daughter by his second wife, Betsy Bordman Averill, named for the first young wife who died, became a Shaker, "probably in New York," as did her older sister Crilla. Betsy did no such thing, as will soon be shown, And if the 1800 census is correct, Crilla was likely a brother with a name that looks similar in indistinct handwriting, like Orwell or Orville, for instance. Shakers led for the most part contented lives and did good deeds, like medieval monks maybe, and were so colorful we would love to have one on the family tree--but that family tradition is much in need of verification. Early census searches would not help. Shakers, being celibate, would not be listed as heads of family, but probably there are old archives somewhere listing members. And should the story be true, and he did not join the Shakers in New York, there were as of 1806 two such Communities in SW Ohio (see page 98). They were Union Village and Watervliet, the latter a spillover from the motherhouse at Watervliet NY. Had he been there early on, he/she could have supplied his folks with details about Congressional land available in Indiana.

Another possible discrepancy might have been made in the birth order of Philo's children of the second marriage. This book will follow the format of the genealogy, but it is more logical to believe that the daughter Electa, who will be told about in a later chapter, was older than Betsy, and perhaps even Rowlen, for it seens she married Nehemiah Hurd while the family was still in New York.

Partial copy of certificate showing Philo Averill's acknowledgment of transfer of homestead to Thomas Armstrong 01 June 1818. This was sent by Meredith Averill Bolton. This was probably copied from microfilm and some of it is cropped off, but the meaning is clear.



For value received, I hereby assign unto Thomas Armstrong all
my right, title, interest and claim to the aforesaid certificate
this is annexed which tract hereby conveyed is described as fo
towit, Being the Southwest Quarter of Section numbered
township (No two of Range No three West in the district of lands
offered for sale at Cincinnati, which Lot or Quarter Section contains
one hundred and fifty seven acres and which was sold first to one Philo
Averil as mentioned in the annexed and aforesaid certificate hereby assigned
as witness my hand and seal this first day of June A.D. 1818

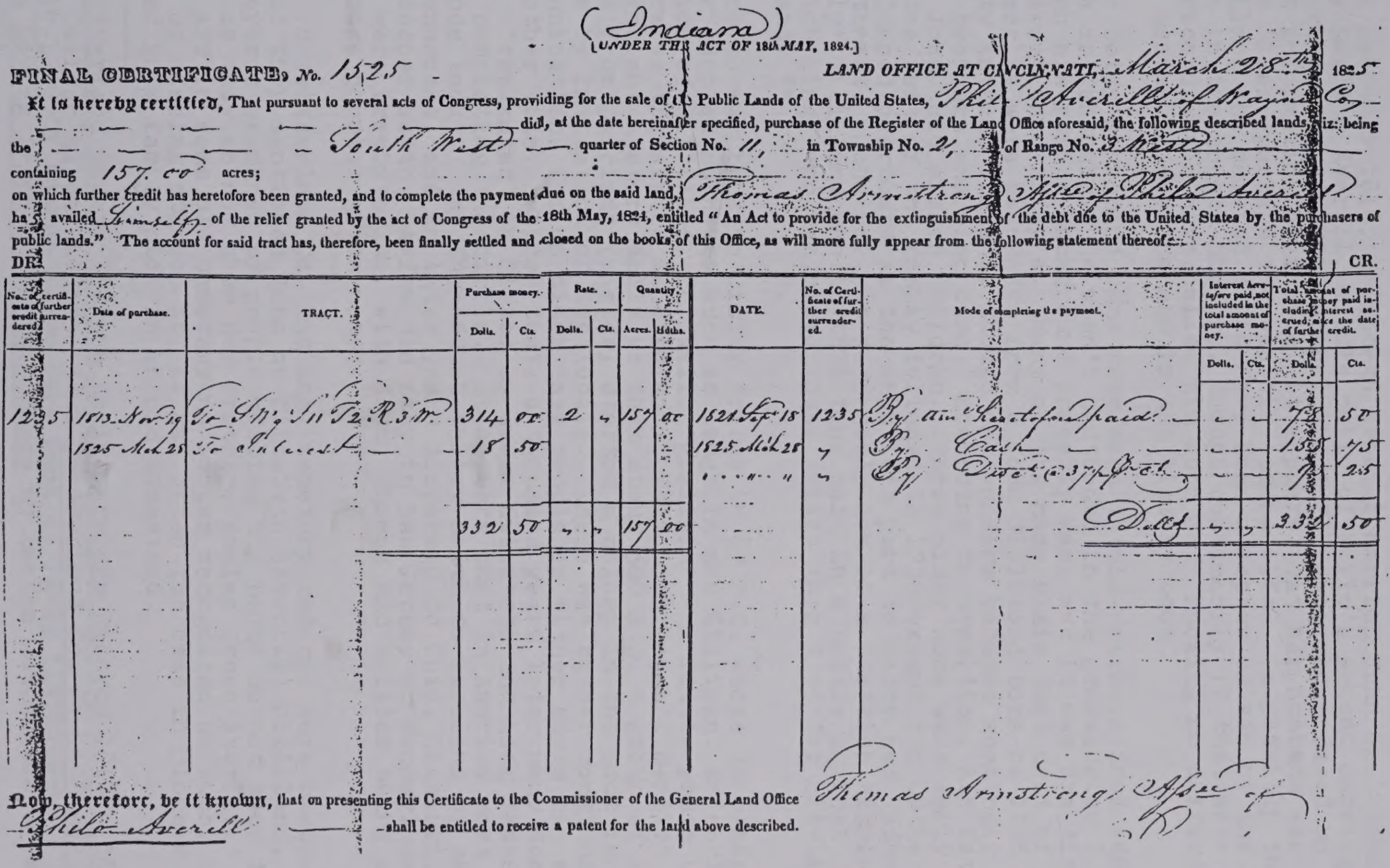
John Dumont (Seal)

Attest
Freeman Richards

The State of Indiana Switzerland county ss.
Personally appeared before me William C. Keen, a justice of the peace in and
the said county the first day of June A.D. 1818, John Dumont assignee
Philo Averill who acknowledges the above assignment of the certifi-
numbered five thousand, four hundred and forty five calli
the south west quarter of section (No 11 — in township two of range three West
the district of lands sold at Cincinnati to Thomas Armstrong
Witness my hand & seal this first day of June A.D 1818.

William C. Keen (Seal)
J. of the Peace

Copy of final certificate of payment in full--US congressional land by Thomas Armstrong as assignee of Philo Averill, entitling him to receive a patent. This copy was also received from Mrs. Bolton. The word "Indiana" at the top is in her handwriting, not part of the original.



(Indiana)

[UNDER THE ACT OF 18th MAY, 1824.]

FINAL CERTIFICATE, No. 1525

LAND OFFICE AT CINCINNATI, March 28th 1825

It is hereby certified, That pursuant to several acts of Congress, providing for the sale of the Public Lands of the United States, Philo Averill of Wayne Co. did, at the date hereinafter specified, purchase of the Register of the Land Office aforesaid, the following described lands, viz: being the South West quarter of Section No. 11, in Township No. 2, of Range No. 3 West containing 157.00 acres; on which further credit has heretofore been granted, and to complete the payment due on the said land, Thomas Armstrong Asse of Philo Averill has availed himself of the relief granted by the act of Congress of the 18th May, 1824, entitled "An Act to provide for the extinguishment of the debt due to the United States by the purchasers of public lands." The account for said tract has, therefore, been finally settled and closed on the books of this Office, as will more fully appear from the following statement thereof:

DR. CR.

No. of certificate of further credit surrendered	Date of purchase.	TRACT.	Purchase money. Dolls.	Purchase money. Cts.	Rate. Dolls.	Rate. Cts.	Quantity. Acres.	Quantity. Hdths.	DATE.	No. of Certificate of further credit surrendered.	Mode of completing the payment.	Interest heretofore paid, not included in the total amount of purchase money. Dolls.	Interest heretofore paid, not included in the total amount of purchase money. Cts.	Total amount of purchase money paid including interest accrued, since the date of further credit. Dolls.	Total amount of purchase money paid including interest accrued, since the date of further credit. Cts.
1235	1813 Nov 19	To SW¼ S11 T2 R3W	314	00	2	"	157	00	1821 Sep 18	1235	By amt heretofore paid	–	–	78	50
	1825 Mch 28	To Interest	18	50					1825 Mch 28	"	By Cash	–	–	155	75
									" "	"	By Dis@ 37½ pr ct	–	–	98	25
			332	50	"	"	157	00			Dolls	"	"	332	50

Now, therefore, be it known, that on presenting this Certificate to the Commissioner of the General Land Office Thomas Armstrong Assee of Philo Averill shall be entitled to receive a patent for the land above described.

On 14 December 1818, Elizabeth Averill married John Gilliland.* Betsy Bordman Averill, middle child of Philo's second marriage, was (according to the 1800 census) about 21 years old. Based on the scant information available, it appears that her husband was several years older; perhaps she was his second wife? Or possibly the John Gilliland she married could have been a nephew or son of the man told about in the county history, though customarily if that were the case the record would have called him John Jr. Knowing no different, we will assume he was the man in the history book.

Where Betsy's husband came from wasn't told--perhaps from Pennsylvania or Kentucky. He wasn't mentioned in the genealogies I found, though his remote background probably was, and it was drastically different than Betsy's. Many of the name claim that most of those in America were descended from a John Gilliland born ca 1706 in County Antrim, Ireland, though one wonders because seemingly he had many brothers who also came. According to tradition, his father, also John, had eleven children. Three older sons went early to PA and the rest of the family followed in 1730 except for Catherine who jumped overboard as the ship left port to marry her Catholic sweetheart. John Sr. was supposedly son of a Scottish highlander, "Willy" Gilliland who in 1676 took part in a battle against the English king, who was victorious. Willy then fled for his life to Ireland. **

Others go way back to Ulster tribes in 87 B.C. whose descendants later adopted surnames such as Laughlin and Gilligan, an earlier version of Gilliland, in Gaelic "giallain" - a little youth but otherwise translated as obedient. That book doesn't mention it, but ancient history tells us that about 500 A.D. a group of Irish celts from Dalriada (Ulster) started a colony in the Scottish highlands by invitation of the locals. There was rather continuous communication, for on clear days people on either shore can see the other side. Besides that, a thousand years later many Scots were "replanted" in Ulster by Queen Elizabeth and King James, thus completing the circle. It appears that in America most Gillilands took the Shenandoah Valley south to Carolina or southwest to Tennessee, and in later years dispersed to Ohio, Missouri, and the deeper south. A few did stay in New Jersey or Pennsylvania. Most were Presbyterian, with John, Thomas and William being among the more popular given names.

Back in Switzerland Co. Indiana, cemetery records were checked to see if they mentioned John or Elizabeth (Averill) Gilliland; the old graveyards examined by people writing the books do not show them, just as they do not show her brother, Rowlen Green Averill. Perhaps they are in some old cemetery no longer recognized as such, with worn or missing stones, or, as was often the case in pioneer days, buried in a family plot in an old homestead.

---

*Switzerland County Indiana Early Marriage Records 1814 - 1825 by Colleen Alice Ridlen. Also Switzerland Co. IN Marriage Licenses 1814-1830 by Louise A. LeClare Knox of Vevay (1970) both in DAR Lib.

**The Loving Irish - The Gillilands by Martha Hutcherson Greenwood (1970)

Gillilands somehow related to John include the following: In 1814 Thomas entered land in TWP3 R3 Sec31 and held county offices starting in 1818. Joseph witnessed deeds with other relatives. William married Mary Athay 10 Feb 1830-died 08 Nov 1876 age 90 (thus born 1786)and is buried with Mary in Brady Fork Cemetery. Samuel m. Matilda Ann Dowler 06 Nov 1839. Thomas b. 1804 d. 03 Jan 1857, buried next to widow Ann in Vevay Cemetery #2. All of these were too old to have been Betsy's sons but must have been part of a family group which arrived about the same time as the Averills. John was the most prominent.

It has been mentioned that "John Gililland and Peter Locke were among the first to settle back in the hills near Indian Creek" in the Mt. Sterling vicinity, and that Locke sold out to him, and that he was foreman of the second grand jury in March 1815. By 1815 he was also made Justice of the Peace, which meant in those days that he could try misdemeanor cases. He hobnobbed with Dufours.

Peret Dufour, discussing the Mt. Sterling area several places in his books, started by saying that in 1795 when the Greenville Treaty line was drawn, the western line of the Gore angled to a point opposite the mouth of the Kentucky River where Fort Recovery was built. Thus feeling protected occasional pioneer residents came to that area while it was still part of Hamilton Co., Ohio Territory, as early as 1798 or so. (One wonders whether they were squatters waiting for Congress to sell the land.) They were ill-advised, for the Shawnee Chief Tecumseh, not respecting the much-deplored treaty, was often encamped in the hills there (where Philo Averill later laid out the town) from whence many raids on the whites were continuously carried out.

Probably Philo was was well aware that his land was on or near Tecumseh's old campgrounds. One can just see him regaling Averill youngsters later with stories about the dread Chief Tecumseh, on whose campgrounds he, himself, had strode. No wonder some of them got the idea he had fought in the war! Parts of Indian Creek show on both maps on page 122. It is easy to see how it acquired the name. The title "Venoge" given it by Perret's father obviously did not stick; and as to laying out the town where the baby had been put ashore during the storm, that can be true only if they went upstream of the Ohio a little east of the creek's mouth.

John Gilliland's land office purchases include land in the Vevay vicinity TWP2 Range3W Sec 1 in 1814; TWP3 R3W S31 in 1815; TWP2 R1W S30 in 1818. Other purchases would be recorded in deed records. He probably bought some for speculation purposes. He was witness to so many transactions that they are not all indexed, one supposes partly in his capacity as Justice of the Peace.

In early days of our nation's history, specie (that is to say, hard cash) was in short supply. The national leaders (Alexander Hamilton et al) disagreed about how to handle the situation, for barter of heavy goods was impractical. Various states tried divergent schemes including certificates not accepted at face value by others. Today's more informed tight regulations were non-existent. For regional

convenience the process was subject to experiment. The Bank of Vincennes created 1814 by the territorial legislature became the State Bank of Indiana, to continue to 1835 only, as a stock company funded by individuals purchasing $1,000,000 in stock divided into 10,000 shares @ $100 each.

In Switzerland County subscription books were to be opened at Vevay, in said county, under the direction of John Gilliland, Lawrence Nihell and Daniel Dufour, for 200 shares. The stock of the branch at Vevay was subscribed, and the bank went into active operation in the summer or fall of 1817, and continued in operation until Febrnary, 1820, when it, together with the parent institution at Vincennes and all other branches thereof, failed and went into liquidation.

In 1819 the directors of the Vevay branch anthorized the issning of a certain amount of $1, $3 and $5 notes, and sent to the printers at Cincinnati (Reynolds & Co.), to have them printed. The notes then printed were put in circulation and passed currently. Unfortunately for the bank, by some mistake or other, 500 $5 notes more than were authorized were printed, and signed by some persons other than the president, and many of them thus counterfited were found in circulation.

This fraud upon the bank was discovered by John F. Dufour, the president, while in Cincinnati on business for the bank. Calling on Hugh and James Glenn to receive of them $2,500, which they had collected of Elijah Pearson for the bank, one of the Glenns placed on the table several bundles of the notes of the Branch Bank, receivable in payment of debts due the bank, saying to Mr. Dufour, "Here are $2,500 in Vevay receivables. I counted the most of them myself last night, and some are in the same bundles as they came out of the bank." Mr. Dufour was about taking the bundles without counting, but in looking at one of the bundles he saw that ones, threes and fives were mixed together. He then concluded to count it. While ccunting he preceived some of the fives had a forged signature, which he threw out and told Glenn he would not receive them, as they were counterfeit, Glenn insisting that they were genuine. After considerable conversation about th matter they concluded to search the other bundles and found a numbe of the fives with forged signatures.

The plate appeared to be genuine. The number of these bills i Mr. Glenn's possession were betweeu 150 and 200. Immediately o this discovery Mr. Dufour's suspicions were aroused.

On leaving Glenn Mr. Dufour went to the printers who had printe these bills. Upon inquiry found that they had printed 500 $5 bil more than the bank had authorized, and they were returned to the ban by the person entrusted with having them printed.

Mr. Dufour made a statement of these facts for the "Royal Arc Masons" at the time, and they were afterward published in the Vev *Times* and *Switzerland County News* of the 29th of December, 1838.

On the 7th of February, 1820, a statement of the condition of t bank was made, and certified as correct by John F. Dufour, Jo Gilliland and Thomas Armstrong, a committee appointed for the speci purpose, and all the property, books and papers of said bank we delivered by the cashier to John F. Dufour, except two bills of exchan which were in the Bank of Cincinnati for collection.

On the 19th of February, 1820, John F. Dufour delivered the sa to Isaac Blackford, agent, and received from the agent a receipt follows:

> February 19, 1820, received the Branch Bank in the situation as certified by t committee within named, and the books, papers and furniture thereto belongi from the said John F. Dufour, president.
>
> ISAAC BLACKFORD, *Agent.*

Thus ended the Branch Bank at Vevay.

As mentioned, in 1814 John Gilliland was recommended to territorial Gov. Posey for the office of county surveyor. Whether he actually served I do not know. John Francis Dufour was then appointed County Clerk, reelected, and served to the August 1823 election when Israel Whitehead, John Gilliland & William Keen ran for the post. After a heated race, Keen won.

THE CANAL.

In 1818 the Legislature of Indiana passed an act chartering the "Jeffersonville Ohio, Canal Company," which had for its object the construction of a canal around the falls of the Ohio River, on the Indiana side. The company was organized, a board of directors elected, and James Scott selected as president. This company was authorized, by an act passed by the Legislature, to raise funds to construct the canal by means of a lottery. Agents were appointed to receive subscriptions of stock. John Francis Dufour was appointed agent of the company at Vevay, and William Cotton and John Gilliland, assistants. December 12, 1818, Mr. Dufour received the following letter of instructions:

> *Sir.*—The board of directors of Jeffersonville, Ohio Canal Company have made the following regulation for the purpose of facilitating the sale of lottery tickets: Ordered that any agent for selling tickets may sell to any person who may purchase ten tickets or more, on a credit, taking a negotiable note payable in some good bank, provided said bank will receive said note and pass the amount to the credit of the Jeffersonville, Ohio Canal Company, with assurance that the money will not be drawn from the said bank until the drawing of the lottery shall be completed.
>
> H. WEBSTER, *Secretary.*
>
> J. BIGELOW, *President, pro tem.*

This regulation succeeded to the entire satisfaction of the directors.

April 10, 1818, the president, by letter, informed Mr. Dufour that the drawing of the lottery had commenced. A statement of the drawing April 15, 1818, showed that ticket No. 5816 drew a prize of $500; No. 1638, $100; No. 10118, $50; and thirty-two other tickets drew each a prize of $5, and sixty-five other tickets drew each a blank.

In transmitting this statement Mr. Bigelow wrote Mr. Dufour the following:

> *Dear Sir:*—I enclose you $15 to purchase some Vevay wine, that which i mixed by any kind of preparation would be preferred. * * On the first Mo of next month, we commence the canal, and I would be glad to have a little of domestic manufacture to drink on the occasion.

On the first Monday of May, 1818, the canal was commenced, which occasion, there was no doubt much eating, drinking and speak done, but to little effect so far as the making of the canal was concer A few rods were dug a few feet deep and the enterprise came to a d stop.

The history's last mention of John Gilliland was as a leader of a political committee to elect Andrew Jackson to the White House. One may surmise that he and wife Elizabeth Averill Gilleland were accustomed to a rather affluent lifestyle.

In the mere five years the Averill family had been there, with danger of attack from the Indians now a thing of the past, the area, especially along the river banks, became congested with pioneers. All indications were that it would get much worse. Perhaps Mt. Sterling was slightly better off, being more elevated, but even there mosquitos in the brush and creekbeds were fierce and incessant. People became debilitated with the "ague" caused by malaria.

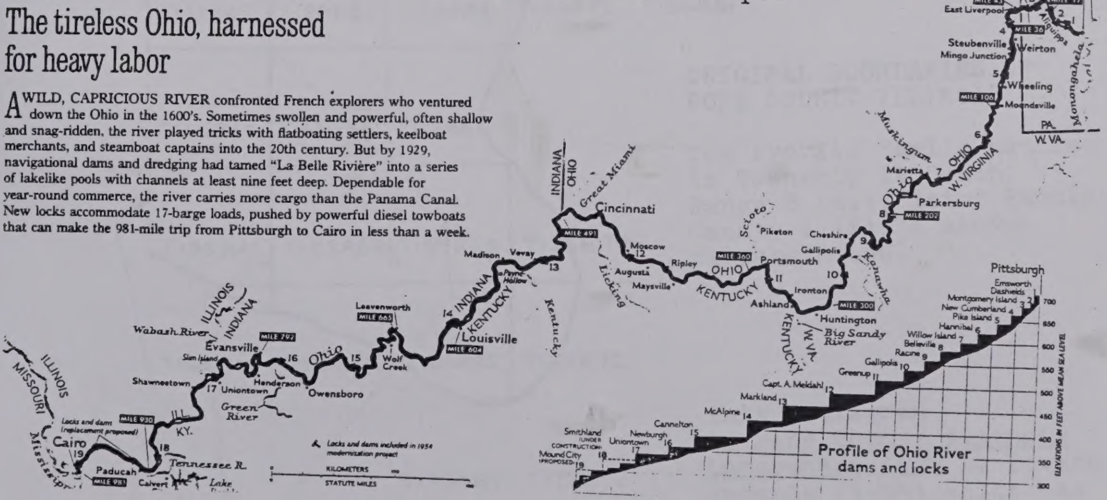
Science had not yet discovered that malaria is caused by mosquitos. Even had they known, the only control was clearing land and draining swamps; they were already doing that. Those infected passed the malady on to others. Overcrowding made matters worse. Newcomers arriving daily were often jammed two or three families to a small cabin with resultant filth and pollution. Epidemic diseases spread. Newspaper articles complained of the "noxious vapours and effluvia of the night air" they supposed to be the cause of rampant infection. Wise people were advised to stay inside at night. That was just the start of it. The situation grew far worse after our family left.

Philo had already sold the land he bought from the government to Uncle Tom Armstrong, and had made a profit from the venture at Mt. Sterling. Though they would all miss Betsy, it was time to move on. One is reminded of Grandpa Isaac Averill who moved west leaving daughter Esther Parke financially secure in old Preston.

In January 1819 the cheapest and most convenient way to go was to float with whatever possessions they chose to bring along, down the Ohio River in a flatboat or keelboat of some kind. Though in the dead of winter they didn't freeze, for the climate is generally very mild in the southern "Little Egypt" part of the brand new State of Illinois. An old National Geographic article about dams & locks (see #13-18) provided the diagram. The river was wild in 1819, the main obstruction was at the Falls at Louisville. That canal would have helped.

The tireless Ohio, harnessed for heavy labor

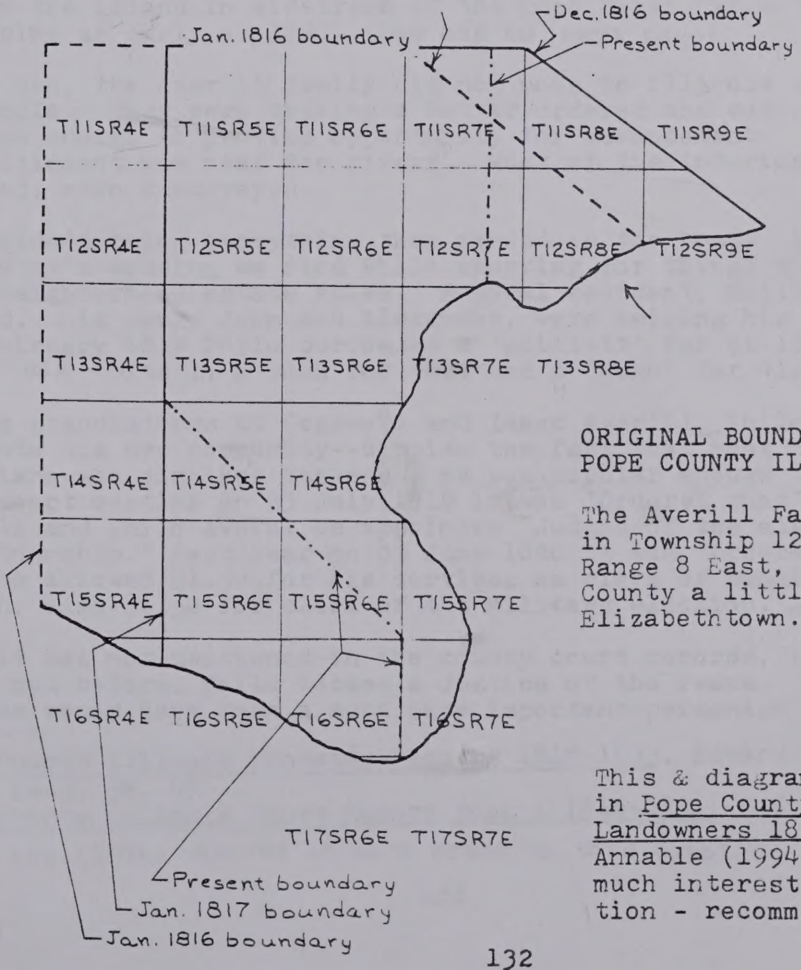
A WILD, CAPRICIOUS RIVER confronted French explorers who ventured down the Ohio in the 1600's. Sometimes swollen and powerful, often shallow and snag-ridden, the river played tricks with flatboating settlers, keelboat merchants, and steamboat captains into the 20th century. But by 1929, navigational dams and dredging had tamed "La Belle Rivière" into a series of lakelike pools with channels at least nine feet deep. Dependable for year-round commerce, the river carries more cargo than the Panama Canal. New locks accommodate 17-barge loads, pushed by powerful diesel towboats that can make the 981-mile trip from Pittsburgh to Cairo in less than a week.


Allegheny R.
Pittsburgh
Beaver R.
Beaver
Midland
MILE 25
MILE 43
MILE 17
East Liverpool
MILE 56
Steubenville
Weirton
Mingo Junction
Wheeling
MILE 100
Moundsville
Monongahela R.
PA.
W.VA.
Muskingum
Marietta
OHIO
W. VIRGINIA
Parkersburg
MILE 202
Cheshire
Gallipolis
Kanawha
Great Miami
INDIANA
OHIO
Cincinnati
MILE 491
Scioto
Piketon
Moscow
Ripley
MILE 360
Portsmouth
Augusta
Maysville
OHIO
KENTUCKY
Ironton
Ashland
MILE 300
Huntington
Big Sandy River
KENTUCKY
W. VA.
Licking
Madison
Vevay
Payne Hollow
INDIANA
KENTUCKY
Kentucky
Louisville
MILE 604
Leavenworth
MILE 665
Wolf Creek
Ohio
ILLINOIS
INDIANA
Wabash River
MILE 792
Evansville
Slim Island
Henderson
Owensboro
Shawneetown
Uniontown
Green River
MISSOURI
ILLINOIS
Mississippi
Locks and dams (replacement proposed)
MILE 930
KY.
Cairo
Paducah
MILE 981
Calvert
Tennessee R.
Lake
Locks and dams included in 1954 modernization project
KILOMETERS
STATUTE MILES
Pittsburgh
Emsworth
Dashields
Montgomery Island
New Cumberland
Pike Island
Hannibal
Willow Island
Belleville
Racine
Gallipolis
Greenup
Capt. A. Meldahl
Markland
McAlpine
Cannelton
Newburgh
Uniontown
Smithland (UNDER CONSTRUCTION)
Mound City (PROPOSED)
Profile of Ohio River dams and locks
ELEVATIONS IN FEET ABOVE MEAN SEA LEVEL
700
650
600
550
500
450
400
350
300

PHILO AND FAMILY IN SOUTHERN ILLINOIS

On 04 July 1778, Patrick Henry became the first American governor of Illinois when Gen. George Rogers Clark captured Kaskaskia during the American Revolution. He took possession of the Illinois Country which he organized as a county of Virginia. When Illinois became a state on 03 December 1818, Kaskaskia was still capital, though two years later the government offices moved to Vandalia.

Clark's soldiers liked what they saw. Some came back, as did countless small farmers and drifters squeezed out of Virginia and Kentucky by slave-holding plantations whose owners used fair means and foul to acquire most of the good land. The amiable and easy-going French at Kaskaskia who had so agreeably yielded to Clark really didn't care all that much which Anglo government was in charge but later, when they felt hassled by aggressive squatters, the majority of them chose to move to Missouri to be with their own kind. Congress forbade the presence there of the settlers but was unable to evict them because they were too densely settled. By then what was known as the American Bottom stretched all the way along the east side of the Mississippi from above what is now East St. Louis to the Ohio River.


Jan. 1816 boundary
Dec. 1816 boundary
Present boundary
T11SR4E
T11SR5E
T11SR6E
T11SR7E
T11SR8E
T11SR9E
T12SR4E
T12SR5E
T12SR6E
T12SR7E
T12SR8E
T12SR9E
T13SR4E
T13SR5E
T13SR6E
T13SR7E
T13SR8E
T14SR4E
T14SR5E
T14SR6E
T15SR4E
T15SR6E
T15SR6E
T15SR7E
T16SR4E
T16SR5E
T16SR6E
T16SR7E
T17SR6E
T17SR7E
Present boundary
Jan. 1817 boundary
Jan. 1816 boundary

ORIGINAL BOUNDARIES OF POPE COUNTY ILLINOIS

The Averill Family settled in Township 12 South, Range 8 East, later Hardin County a little above Elizabethtown.

This & diagram next page in Pope County Illinois Landowners 1829 by Edward Annable (1994) which has much interesting information - recommended reading

The seasonally-flooded Bottom and adjacent floodlands along the Ohio were some of the most fertile farmlands in America. But being so close to the epicenter of the New Madrid earthquakes in 1811, the whole area suffered so much devastation that many fled, never to return. Three of those shocks were so severe that they actually would have exceeded eight (the highest) on the Richter scale. In succeeding days and weeks upwards of 15,000 lesser shocks occurred, though three of those would today be considered very serious. Eerie effects as far away as Vevay were described by little Perret Dufour's parents and neighbors. Way off in south-central Kentucky tales too numerous to relate, were told by citizens who had the Devil scared out of them and joined the church. And scientists today tell us that there is a potentially of a recurrence!

Despite that, during and especially after the War of 1812, with Indian attack no longer likely, settlers poured in so rapidly that the pre-statehood 1818 census of Illinois showed a population of 40,000, the number required to join the Union. Pope County then had several sizeable towns, among them Shawneetown, Golconda, Fort Massac, Elizabethtown, and adjacent to where they settled, notorious Cave-in-Rock from which pirates, especially those operating out of caves in the rocks on the island in midstream of the Ohio River, were the scourge of shipping as early as 1790. (See map on next page)

So, you see, the Averill family did not move to Illinois to get away from people. They were seeking a better-ordered and safer community still new enough to provide opportunity for advancement. As in Indiana, most settlement was near the rivers. Most of the interior was yet uncleared, even unsurveyed.

They couldn't bring everything they needed on the boat. Two months after Betsy's wedding we find Philo shopping for things they could use at neighborhood estate sales. A local resident, William Jackson, had died. His sons, John and Alexander, were selling his effects. On 11 February 1819 Philo purchased a "skillett" for $1.18-3/4 (3/4 equals "six--bits"), a lock for 50¢. and a "cann" for 41¢.*

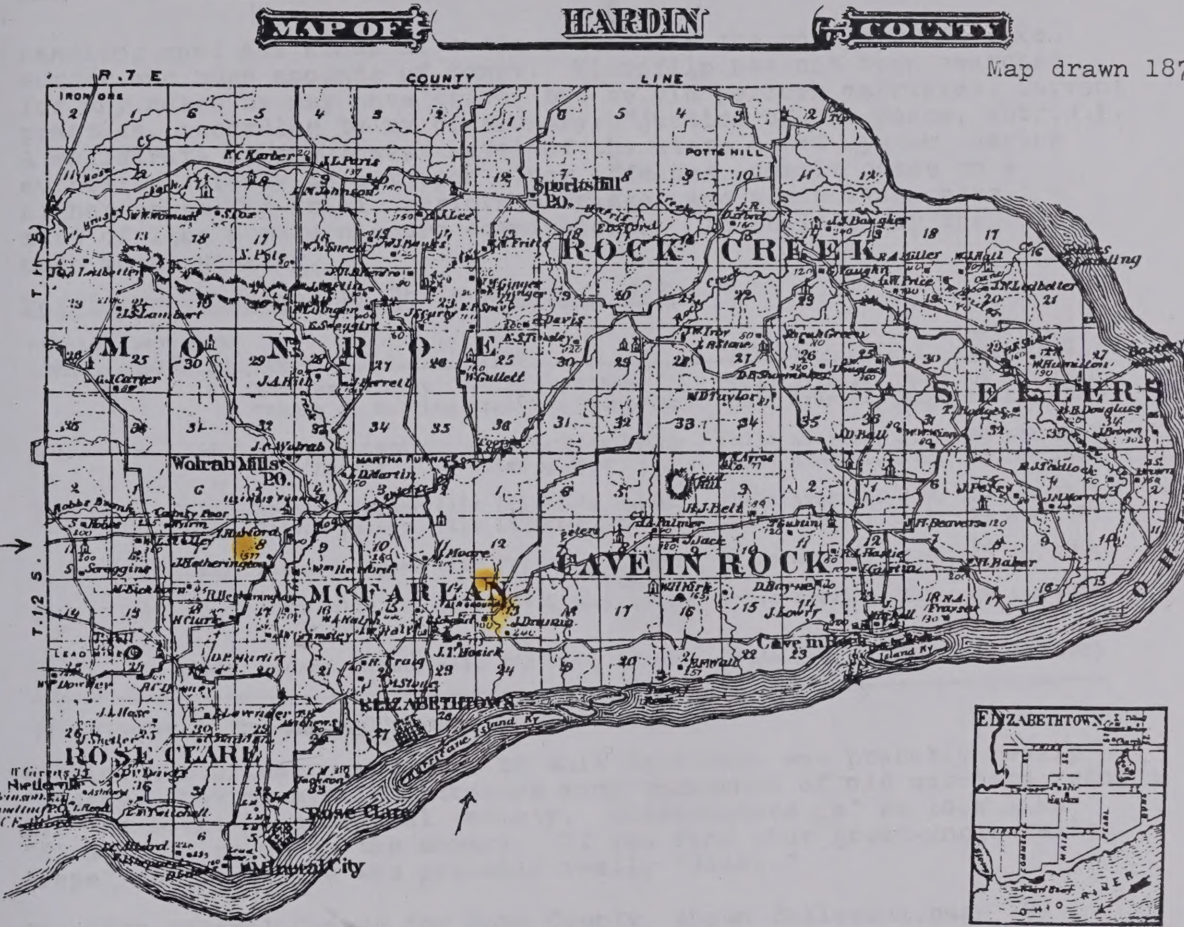
Like his grandfathers Ed Cogswell and Isaac Averill, Philo blended right into his new community--despite the fact that most of them were Kentuckians who disliked Yankees. He was popular enough that at the county court meeting on 23 July 1819 it was "Ordered that Moses Twitchell and Philo Averal be appointed Judges of the election in Monroe Township." Next year on 05 June 1820 it was "Ordered Philo Averal be allowed $1.50 for his servises as clerk of commissioners election, also $1.50 for clerk of the Military election." **

Though it was not mentioned in the county court records, by early 1821 if not before, Philo became a Justice of the Peace. In 1821, a justice would have been a much more important personage than today,

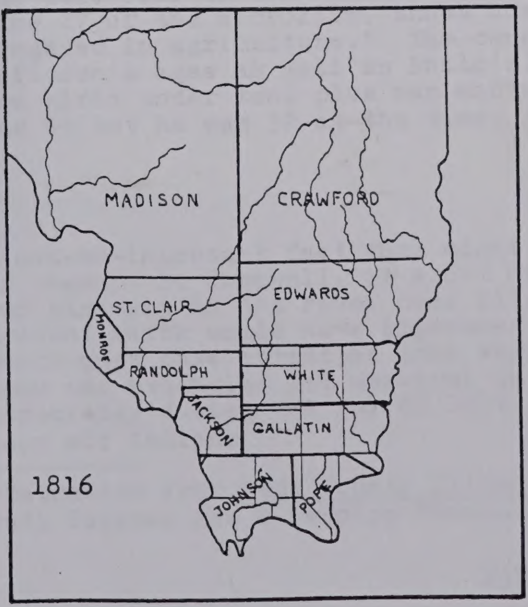
---

*Pope County Illinois Probates Records 1816-1835, Edward Annable pages 14-5, 38, 47

**Pope County Illinois Court Record Book A 1816-1831, C.C. Foss and J. F. Lee (1994) quoted in date order in this chapter.


MAP OF HARDIN COUNTY
R.7 E
COUNTY LINE
POTTS HILL
Sparks Hill P.O.
ROCK CREEK
MONROE
SEELERS
Wolrab Mills P.O.
CAVE IN ROCK
McFARLAN
ELIZABETHTOWN
ROSE CLARE
Rose Clare
Mineral City
Cave in Rock
OHIO
T.11 S.
T.12 S.
ELIZABETHTOWN
OHIO RIVER

Map drawn 1876


MADISON
CRAWFORD
ST. CLAIR
EDWARDS
MONROE
RANDOLPH
WHITE
JACKSON
GALLATIN
JOHNSON
POPE
1816

The part of Pope County where Philo and his family lived is now Hardin County, Illinois. This plat map was drawn a half century after they left.

The 1820 census shows them in Monroe Township. However, land records show them owning two consecutive properties. (1) 60 acres in the North half of SW¼ sec 13 TWP 12S Range 8E--at dot at Fairgrounds below the N in McFarlan. (2) 80 acres Northwest of there in the West Half of the NW¼ of section 8. just east of the Poor Farm of 1876.

handling most all kinds of cases except for the most serious like murder and huge amounts of money. Microfilm has not been searched for any cases he may have tried, but he did perform marriages. Current practice, according to my dictionary: "justice of the peace, abbr.J.P. A magistrate of the lowest level of the state court system, having authority chiefly to act upon minor offenses, commit cases to a higher court for trial, perform marriage, and administer oaths." - sort of like a modern court commissioner. In Philo's day they did much more, usually.

Marriages Performed by Philo Averill, J.P.: *

printed page	marriage book	pg	groom	bride	official	date performed
2	A	8	Charles H. Clay	Polly Hamilton	Philo Averill, Esqr.	06 Feb 1821
			Thomas S. Belding	Violetta Sturtevant	Philo Averill, Esqr.	28 Feb 1821
3	A	1&2	Philip Vineyard	Miss Matilda McCoy	Philo Averill, J.P.	05 Oct 1822
			John Harris	Helen Phipps	Philo Averill, J.P.	15 Nov 1822
4	A	7&10	Absalom Palmer (lic 16)	Alzada Palmer	Philo Averile, J.P.	24 Aug 1823
			Calvin Palmer (lic 15)	Nelly Smock	Philo Averil, J.P.	24 Aug 1823
4	A	10&11	Richard Hughes (lic 21)	Nancy Leeper or Luper	Philo Averil, J.P.	15 Jan 1824
5	A	14	John Goble or Gobb (lic 28)	Sydney Leeper p.c.	Philo Averile, J.P.	29 Aug 1824
5	A	17&96	George Huffsey (lic 36)	Betty Harris	Philo Averill, J.P.	09 Jan 1825

lic= license. p.c.= parental consent

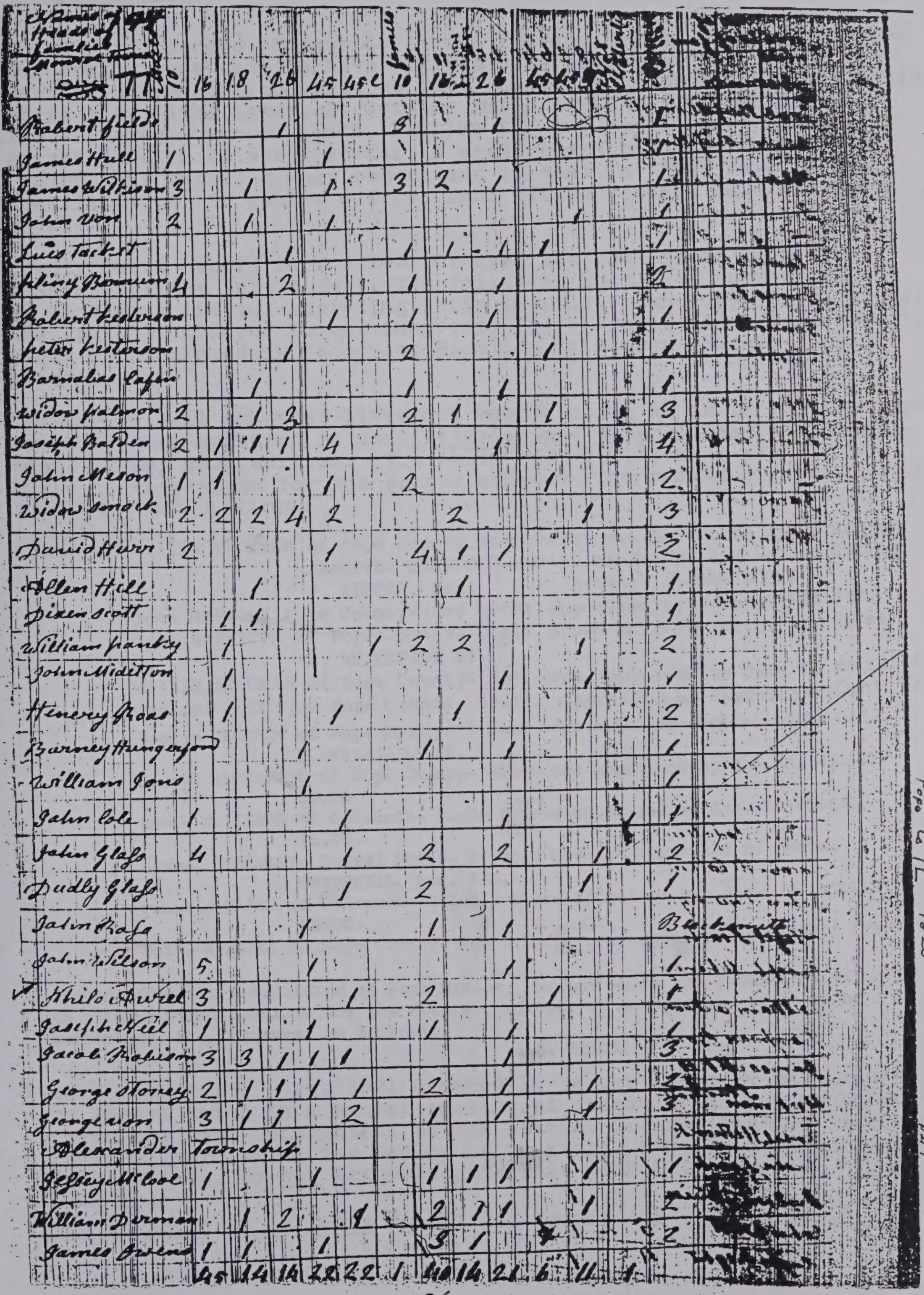
I think the bridegroom's name in this last case was probably really "Hussey," having myself extracted many thousands of old marriage records for the local genealogical society. Oldfashioned "s" es look like "f" thus tripping up the unwary. If you find your great-uncle called "Jepe" or "Jeffe" he was probably really "Jesse."

The 1820 Federal Census for Pope County, shown following, page 77, line 27 of the microfilm, shows our family in Monroe Township, "engaged in agriculture." The censustaker underestimated some of the children's ages as well as Philo's. It shows them with three boys and two girls under ten, plus man and woman both between 26 and 45. Rebecah was 45 but he was 52 at the time.

A not-so-important fact that might be mentioned because it reminds me of Grandpa Ed Cogswell, is about Hurricane Island, Kentucky, shown on our plat map in the river near Elizabethtown. There were iron mines present which would have impressed Grandpa. And lots of lead mines which must have attracted many early entrepreneurs to the area, for lead was essential for survival in the early days as ammunition, especially during the War of 1812. And to put meat on the table and ward off Indians.

---

*Extracted from Pope County Illinois Marriage Books A-E 1813-1877 by Judy Foreman Lee & Carolyn Comeenes Foss (1980)



Names of heads of families	10	16	18	26	45	45&	10	16	26	45	45&	[illegible]	[illegible]
Robert fields				1			3		1				1
James Hull	1				1								
James Wilkison	3		1		1		3	2	1				1
John Von	2		1		1						1		1
Lucs Tackit				1			1	1	1	1			1
Pliny Bowman	4			2			1		1				2
Robert Pesterson					1		1		1				1
Peter Pesterson				1			2			1			1
Barnabas Cafer			1				1		1				1
widow Palmor	2		1	2			2	1		1			3
Joseph Balden	2	1	1	1	4				1				4
John Meson	1	1			1		2			1			2
Widow Smock	2	2	2	4	2			2			1		3
David Horr	2				1		4	1	1				2
Allen Hill			1					1					1
Dixen Scott		1	1										1
William Pantry		1				1	2	2			1		2
John Middleton		1							1		1		1
Henery Roas		1			1			1			1		2
Barney Hungerford				1			1		1				1
William Jons				1									1
John Cole	1				1				1			1	1
John Glass	4				1		2		2		1		2
Dudly Glass					1		2				1		1
John Glass				1			1		1				Blacksmith
John Wilson	5			1					1				1
Philo Averil	3				1		2			1			1
Joseph McNeil	1			1			1		1				1
Jacob Robison	3	3	1	1	1				1				3
George Stoney	2	1	1	1	1		2		1		1		2
George Von	3	1	1		2		1		1		1		3
Alexander Township													
Jeffrey McCool	1			1			1	1	1		1		1
William Dorman		1	2		1		2	1	1		1		2
James Owens	1	1		1			3	1					2
	45	14	14	22	22	1	40	14	21	6	11	1	

Pope Co IL 1820

649

There were, indeed, Cogswells living in Pope County, though not near our family, who seem to have arrived some years before, but no connection has been discovered so far. Same for other areas in Illinois where they lived later. In October 1818, James M. Cogswell entered 188.72 acres near Golconda, Section 24. Our family must have purchased land in 1819 but so far no deed record has been found. One reason for thinking they owned land is that in those days it was a qualification for public office. Land Office records have not been checked.

County Court Record Book A:142 "Ordered the sheriff of this county summons for the Pettit Jury, the following Gentlemen to wit."... 28 gentlemen listed, including Philo Averill. Same day, Tues. 20 March 1821 pg 143 "Ordered Samuel Omelvert, Philo Averill & James D. Scott, Esqrs be appointed as Judge of Election in Monroe Township for the present year."

One way to sell unneeded livestock was to place an ad in the newspaper. The following appeared in the Illinois Gazette published at Shawneetown, 12 May 1821 edition. The whole list is shown to provide a basis of comparison for the prices asked.* The proven rightful owner could reclaim a stray.

12 May 1821

Estrays- Willis STUCKER of Pope County near Golconda- Bay Horse appraised by James L. CRAWFORD and S. ARMSTRONG $20 before Craven P. HESTER, Esq. Attest: Joshua SCOTT

John HAYS of Pope County- Bay horse appraised by James McKEE $40.

George EVITTS of Pope County- Small brown mare appraised by James A. WHITESIDE $5.

Willis STUCKER of Pope County- Bay mare appraised by Jas. E. WILLIS $20.

Ezekiel McCOY of Pope County- Heifer appraised by Spyres SINGLETON $3.50.

George JACKSON of Pope County- 7 head Hogs and 1 cow appraised by Jas. E. WILLIS $4.00.

Samuel ALEXANDER of Pope County- Black cow appraised by Jas. E. WILLIS $6.00.

David B. GLASS of Golconda- Sandy barrow appraised by Jas. E. WILLIS $2.00.

Samuel OMELVANY- Sorrel horse- of Pope County- appraised by Moses TWITCHELL, Esq. $30.

Francis GLASS of Golconda- Brindle steer appraised by Jas. E. WILLIS $8.00.

✓ Philo AVERILL of Pope County- Red brindle cow appraised by himself $22.

A Post Office is established at Fort Massac, through which the subscriber wishes to receive communications for the future. Editors of newspapers, to which he subscribes, are requested to address.

I.D. WILCOX

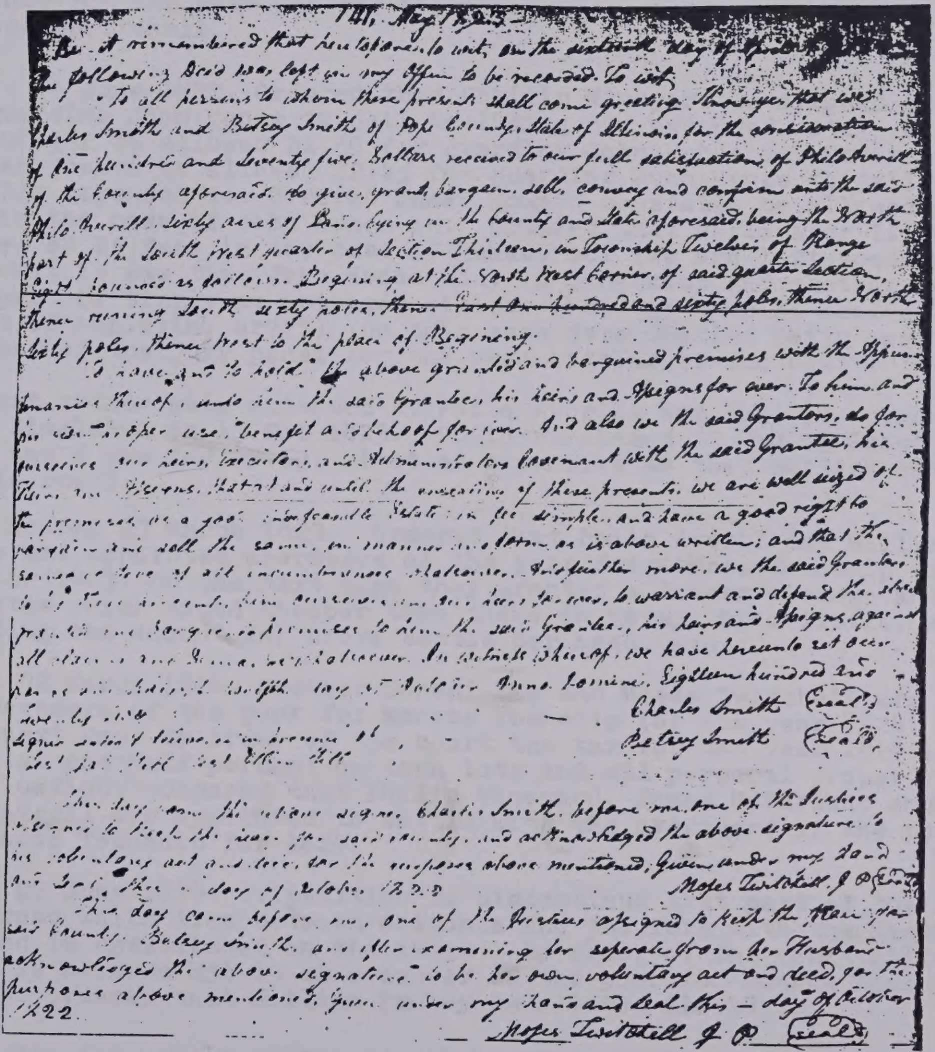
Record Book A:156, Sep. 1821 Ordered it be certified by this court, that Asahel Smith is a man of good moral character as far as known to us from the best information we can obtain. Ordered Charles Smith be appointed guardian to the infant heir of Elijah Stivers, named Phydellia Stivers, by his acknowledging Bond with Philo Averill his

---

*Saga of Southern Illinois Vol XI #1, Spring 1984, pages 17-18

security in the penal sum of $320 conditioned as the law directs. (In those days, widowed mothers were not considered capable of handling much money, if the little girl's mother was living. It is possible Smith was an uncle or such, but not necessarily.)

John Jackson, evidently son of William Jackson, deceased, at whose sale Philo had bought a skillet, a lock, and a can, himself passed away. Philo Averill, maybe as a family friend, was crier at John's estate sale on 21 March 1822. (Crier = amateur auctioneer.)



141. May 1823

Be it remembered that heretofore to wit, on the sixteenth day of [illegible] the following Deed was left in my Office to be recorded. To wit,

To all persons to whom these presents shall come greeting. Know ye that we Charles Smith and Betsy Smith of Pope County, State of Illinois, for the consideration of one hundred and Seventy five Dollars received to our full satisfaction of Philo Averill of the County aforesaid do give, grant, bargain, sell, convey and confirm unto the said Philo Averill sixty acres of Land lying in the County and State aforesaid, being the North part of the South west quarter of Section Thirteen, in Township Twelve of Range Eight bounded as follows. Beginning at the South West Corner of said quarter Section thence running South sixty poles, thence East one hundred and sixty poles, thence North sixty poles, thence West to the place of Beginning.

To have and to hold the above granted and bargained premises with the Appurtenances thereof, unto him the said Grantee, his heirs and Assigns for ever. To him and his own proper use, benefit and behoof for ever. And also we the said Grantors, do for [illegible] our heirs, Executors and Administrators Covenant with the said Grantee, his heirs and Assigns, that at and until the ensealing of these presents, we are well seized of the premises as a good indefeasible Estate in fee simple, and have a good right to bargain and sell the same in manner and form as is above written; and that the same are free of all incumbrances whatsoever. And further more, we the said Grantors do by these presents bind ourselves and our heirs for ever, to warrant and defend the above granted and bargained premises to him the said Grantee, his heirs and Assigns, against all claims and demands whatsoever. In witness whereof, we have hereunto set our hands and Seals this twelfth day of October Anno Domini Eighteen hundred and twenty two.

Charles Smith (Seal)
Betsy Smith (Seal)

Signed sealed & delivered in presence of
[illegible]

This day came the above signer Charles Smith before me one of the Justices assigned to keep the peace for said County and acknowledged the above signature to his voluntary act and deed for the purposes above mentioned. Given under my hand and Seal this [illegible] day of October 1822.

Moses Twitchell J P (Seal)

This day came before me, one of the Justices assigned to keep the Peace for said County, Betsy Smith and after examining her seperate from her Husband acknowledged the above signature to be her own voluntary act and deed for the purposes above mentioned. Given under my hand and Seal this — day of October 1822.

— Moses Twitchell J. P. (Seal)

Above - Microfilmed copy, Deed Book A, Philo Averill's purchase of land NW½ of SW¼ section, TWP 12 from Charles and Betsy Smith on 22 October 1822. Index uses date of entry of the deed record, May 1823.

Because the copy is a little hard to read, some details are that $175.00 was paid in full. The legal description of the property was "60 acres of land, north part of the Southwest quarter, Section 13, Township of Range 8 beginning at the SW corner of said quarter section, thence running South 60 poles, East 160 poles, thence North 60 poles, thence West to the place of beginning. That is the place on our plat map where the fairgrounds were later located.

Record Book A:169 (March 1822?) Ordered Philo Averill, Moses Twitchell and James D. Scott be appointed Judges of Election in Monroe Township for one year and the Elections to be holden at the house of Moses Twitchell.

A:174. 04 June 1822. Ordered that Phillip Vineyard be allowed $2 for guarding John Henee to jail including 50¢ expended, etc. Ordered John Ginger be allowed $1.50 for guarding John Henee &c. Ordered William Howard be allowed $2.25 for guarding John Henee to jail including 75¢ expended &c. Ordered James Howard constable be allowed $2.35 fees in the case of John Henee &c. Ordered that Philo Averill be allowed $2.25 fees in the case of Henee, &c. (We are left speculating just what it was that John Henee did. A dangerous and obstreperous criminal? Or simply an outraged citizen when the sheriff arrived with a writ of replevin, or???) On this same date Charles Smith was to be a member of the jury panel for the next sitting of the court.

The next estate sale attended by Philo Averill was that of decedent Syers Singleton on 15 Feb 1823. Philo purchased "2 Weding Hoes" for $1.25 and a cow for $7.50. (not as expensive as that earlier estray brindle cow?)

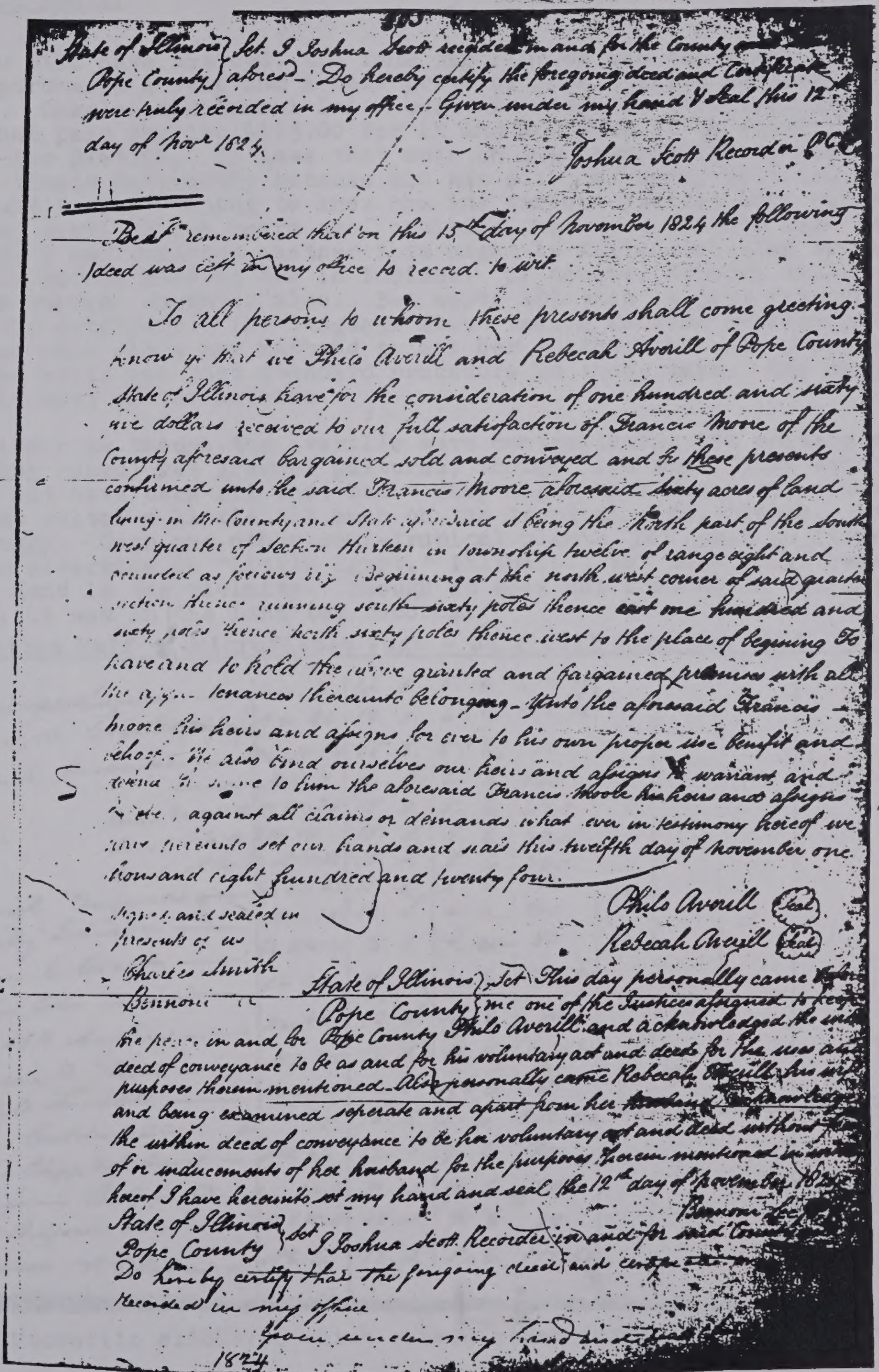
A:192 Monday 03 March 1823. Ordered that Philo Averil and William Pankey are appointed overseers of the poor for Monroe Township for the year 1823. On the next page they granted a tavern license and set rates which sound cheaper than those in Vevay, by a little, even including the amount for drove cattle per head, etc.

A:223. 02 March 1824. Ordered Benoni Lee and Moses Twitchell are appointed overseers of the poor for Monroe Township for the year 1824. A:224 next day. By order of the court the tax for the year 1824 is levied at one half percent on town lots and all personal property at its valuation. Ordered that Philip Vineyard, James McFarland and Philo Averil are appointed to settle with the overseers of the poor for Monroe Township for 1824.

A:229. 07 June 1824. ...petition to discontinue that part of the Belgrade road which lies between Golconda and the fork with the Kaskaskia road and be established on the ridge. By order of the court Philo Averil is allowed $31.60 as overseer of the poor for Monroe Township in 1823. Ordered that William Pankey is allowed $10.18...

A:235 same day. Philo Averil was to be summoned to the next session as one of the panel of grand jurors (for criminal cases?). This is the last we see of him in the County Court records.

Deed Book A:165 Sale of Land to Francis Moore



State of Illinois } Sct. I Joshua Scott recorder in and for the County
Pope County } aforesd – Do hereby certify the foregoing deed and Certificate
were truly recorded in my office – Given under my hand & seal this 12
day of Novr 1824.

Joshua Scott Recorder P.C.

Be it remembered that on this 15th day of November 1824 the following deed was left in my office to record. to wit.

To all persons to whoom these presents shall come greeting. know ye that we Philo Averill and Rebecah Averill of Pope County State of Illinois have for the consideration of one hundred and sixty six dollars received to our full satisfaction of Francis Moore of the County aforesaid bargained sold and conveyed and by these presents confirmed unto the said Francis Moore aforesaid Sixty acres of land lying in the County and State aforesaid it being the North part of the south west quarter of Section thirteen in township twelve of range eight and bounded as follows viz Beginning at the north west corner of said quarter section thence running south sixty poles thence east one hundred and sixty poles thence North sixty poles thence west to the place of begining To have and to hold the above granted and bargained premises with all the appurtenances thereunto belonging – Unto the aforesaid Francis Moore his heirs and assigns for ever to his own proper use benefit and behoof. We also bind ourselves our heirs and assigns to warrant and defend & secure to him the aforesaid Francis Moore his heirs and assigns & etc., against all claims or demands what ever in testimony whereof we have hereunto set our hands and seals this twelfth day of November one thousand eight hundred and twenty four.

Philo Averill (Seal)
Rebecah Averill (Seal)

Signed and sealed in
presents of us
Charles Smith
wit: Bennoni "

State of Illinois } Sct This day personally came before
Pope County } me one of the Justices assigned to keep the peace in and for Pope County Philo Averill and acknowledged the within deed of conveyance to be as and for his voluntary act and deeds for the uses and purposes therein mentioned. Also personally came Rebecah Averill his wife and being examined seperate and apart from her husband acknowledged the within deed of conveyance to be her voluntary act and deed without fear of or inducements of her husband for the purposes therein mentioned in witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the 12th day of November 1824

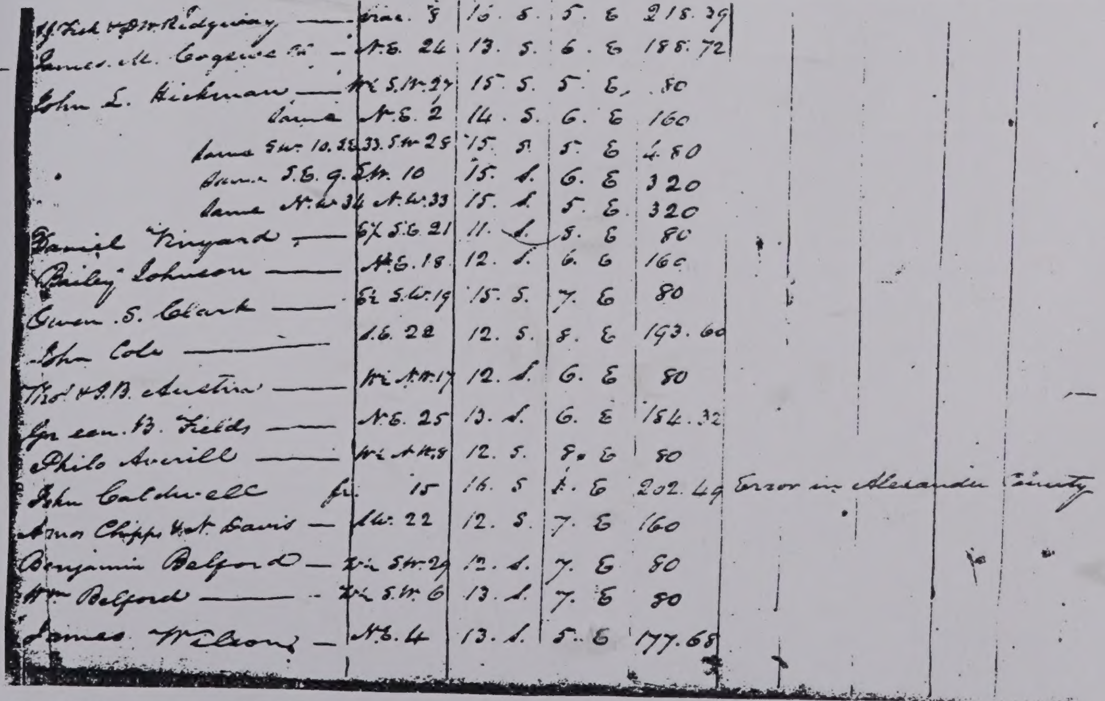
Bennoni [illegible]

State of Illinois } Sct I Joshua Scott Recorder in and for said County
Pope County }
Do hereby certify that the foregoing deed and certificate [illegible]
Recorded in my office
Given under my hand and seal [illegible]
1824

As you will have noticed, the land description was the exact same as that purchased a year and a half previous from Charles and Betsy Smith. Charles and Benoni Smith were witnesses to this last sale. They had paid Charles $175.00 for it and now sold it to Francis Smith for $165.00. To lose that much on the transaction in such a short timeis noteworthy because $10 was a lot of money in those days. It would be interesting to know how the various parties were related, if they were. A few years ago, noticing that Mrs. Smith's name was Betsey, I had wondered whether this might be Philo's missing daughter, that is before finding her in Indiana. Of course, Rebecah could have had an unknown daughter also. But maybe all this is just dealings with the neighbors. The language about taking Rebecah Averill into another room minus her husband to ask her whether the sale were her will as well, was just standard procedure in those days. One sees that in most of the entries.

It appears as though the Averills were contemplating yet another move to (they hoped) yet greener pastures, though life where they were could not have been all that bad. They might have found the climate in that sector a little bit much on the tropical side, though. People say muggy. Cane and other semi-tropical plants yet seem to flourish by the riverside in "Little Egypt," Illinois. But they still owned other land in the vicinity. Though it does not show up in the deed books, it was in the land tax records.

* Bottom Half of Microfilmed Page - June 1825 Land Tax List, Pope Co.



[illegible] Ridgway	[illegible] 8	15. S.	5. E	218.39	
James M. Cogswell	N.E. 24	13. S.	6. E	188.72	
John L. Hickman	W½ S.W. 27	15. S.	5. E	80	
Same	N.E. 2	14. S.	6. E	160	
Same S.W. 10. S.E.	33. S.W. 28	15. S.	5. E	480	
Same S.E. 9.	S.W. 10	15. S.	6. E	320	
Same N.W. 34	N.W. 33	15. S.	5. E	320	
Daniel Vinyard	E½ S.E. 21	11. S.	8. E	80	
Bailey Johnson	N.E. 18	12. S.	6. E	160	
Green S. Clark	E½ S.W. 19	15. S.	7. E	80	
John Cole	S.E. 22	12. S.	8. E	193.60	
Thos & S.B. Austin	W½ N.W. 17	12. S.	6. E	80	
[illegible] B. Fields	N.E. 25	13. S.	6. E	184.32	
Philo Averill	W½ N.W. 8	12. S.	8. E	80	
John Caldwell fr.	15	16. S	1. E	202.49	Error in Alexander County
Amos Chipps & Nat. Davis	S.W. 22	12. S.	7. E	160	
Benjamin Balford	W½ S.W. 29	12. S.	7. E	80	
Wm Balford	W½ S.W. 6	13. S.	7. E	80	
James Wilson	N.E. 4	13. S.	5. E	177.68	

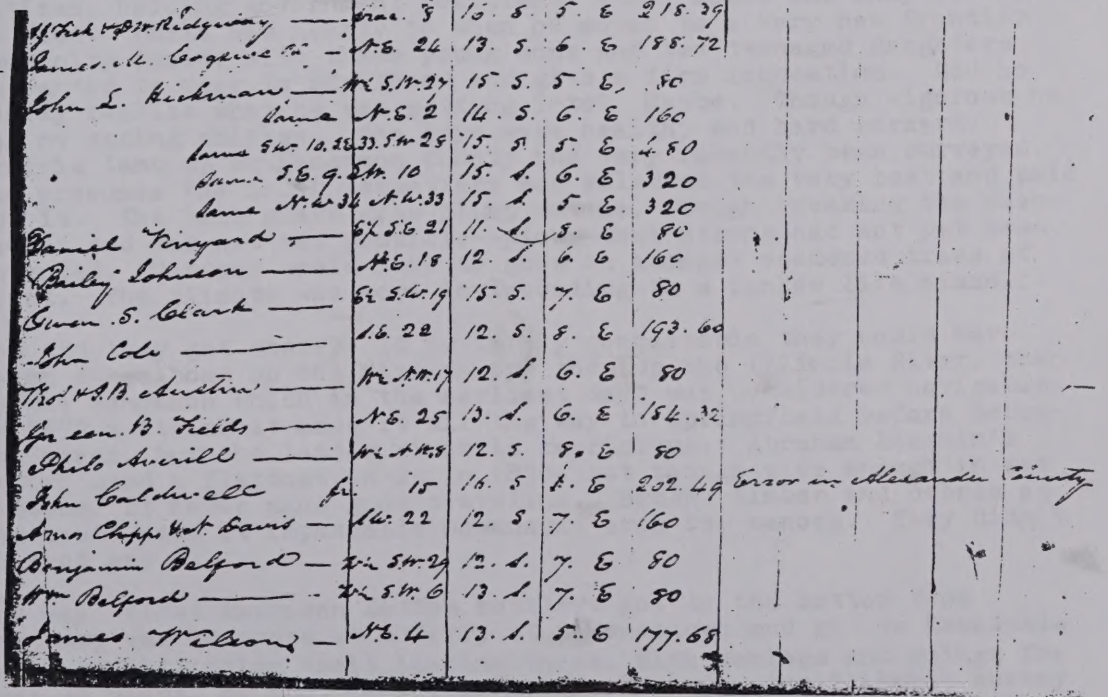
*LDS Microfilm #1688976, which showed other current records as well.

AVERILL FAMILY

As you will have noticed, the land description was the exact same as that purchased a year and a half previous from Charles and Betsy Smith. Charles and Benoni Smith were witnesses to this last sale. They had paid Charles $175.00 for it and now sold it to Francis Smith for $165.00. To lose that much on the transaction in such a short timeis noteworthy because $10 was a lot of money in those days. It would be interesting to know how the various parties were related, if they were. A few years ago, noticing that Mrs. Smith's name was Betsey, I had wondered whether this might be Philo's missing daughter, that is before finding her in Indiana. Of course, Rebecah could have had an unknown daughter also. But maybe all this is just dealings with the neighbors. The language about taking Rebecah Averill into another room minus her husband to ask her whether the sale were her will as well, was just standard procedure in those days. One sees that in most of the entries.

It appears as though the Averills were contemplating yet another move to (they hoped) yet greener pastures, though life where they were could not have been all that bad. They might have found the climate in that sector a little bit much on the tropical side, though. People say muggy. Cane and other semi-tropical plants yet seem to flourish by the riverside in "Little Egypt," Illinois. But they still owned other land in the vicinity. Though it does not show up in the deed books, it was in the land tax records.

* Bottom Half of Microfilmed Page - June 1825 Land Tax List, Pope Co.



[illegible] & D.W. Ridgway	frac. 8	15 S.	5 E	218.39	
James M. Cogswell &c	N.E. 24	13 S.	6 E	188.72	
John L. Hickman	W½ S.W. 27	15 S.	5 E	80	
Same	N.E. 2	14 S.	6 E	160	
Same S.W. 10, 28	33. S.W. 28	15 S.	5 E	480	
Same S.E. 9.	S.W. 10	15 S.	6 E	320	
Same N.W. 34	N.W. 33	15 S.	5 E	320	
Daniel Vineyard	E½ S.E. 21	11 S.	8 E	80	
Bailey Johnson	N.E. 18	12 S.	6 E	160	
Owen S. Clark	E½ S.W. 19	15 S.	7 E	80	
John Cole	S.E. 22	12 S.	8 E	193.60	
Thos & J.B. Austin	W½ N.W. 17	12 S.	6 E	80	
[illegible] B. Fields	N.E. 25	13 S.	6 E	154.32	
Philo Averill	W½ N.W. 8	12 S.	8 E	80	
John Caldwell fr.	15	16 S.	[illegible] E	202.49	Error in Alexander County
Amos Chipps & [illegible] Davis	S.W. 22	12 S.	7 E	160	
Benjamin Belford	W½ S.W. 29	12 S.	7 E	80	
Wm Belford	W½ S.W. 6	13 S.	7 E	80	
James Wilson	N.E. 4	13 S.	5 E	177.68	

*LDS Microfilm #1688976, which showed other current records as well.

One is inclined to wonder whether they lived at this location all along using the Smith farm as an investment that did not pay off, for the 1876 plat map shows a county poor farm adjacent to the west, and we have learned that Philo served a stint as overseer of the poor. As shown, that was 80 acres in the west ½ of the west quarter-section 8, TWP 12S Range 8E. (A complete printed listing of all 1825 Pope Co. landholders appears in *Saga of Southern Illinois* Vol XVII #2, pages 7-12) This is followed by :

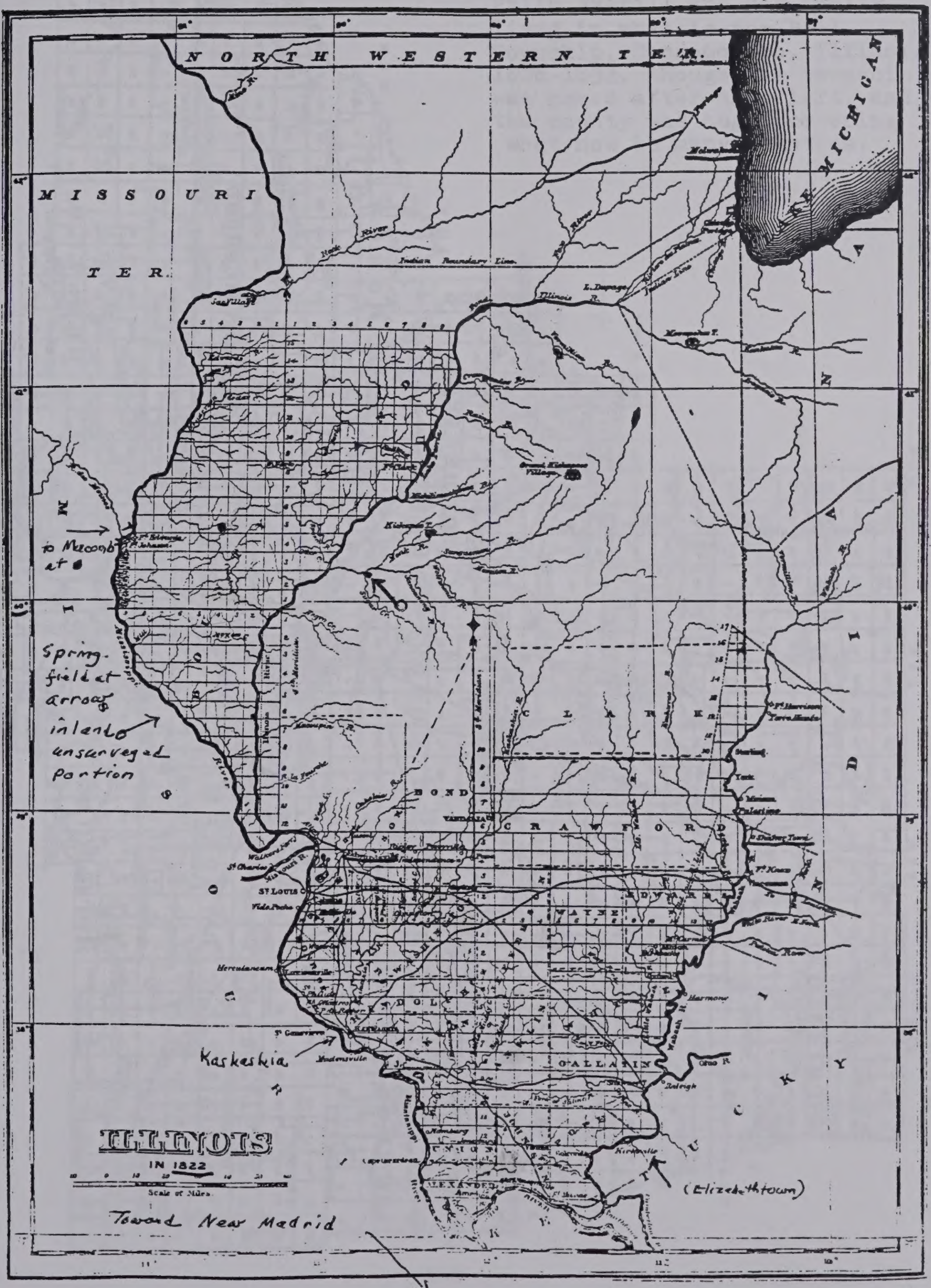
"To Wit A Pool book of an Election held at the house of Moses TWITSELLS Esq. in Munroe precinct in the County of Pope and State of Illinois on the Seventh day of August In the year of our Lord One thousand Eight Hundred and Twenty-six."

The list was long, but on 07 August 1826 Philo had cast his vote a few hundred miles further north. We would like to know more about their 7-year stay in Pope County, and especially more about activities of Rebecah and the children who were growing fast--baby Allen was already eight years old when they left. Probably they attended good schools or at least had good tutors in that neighborhood, perhaps superior to that in the next locality.

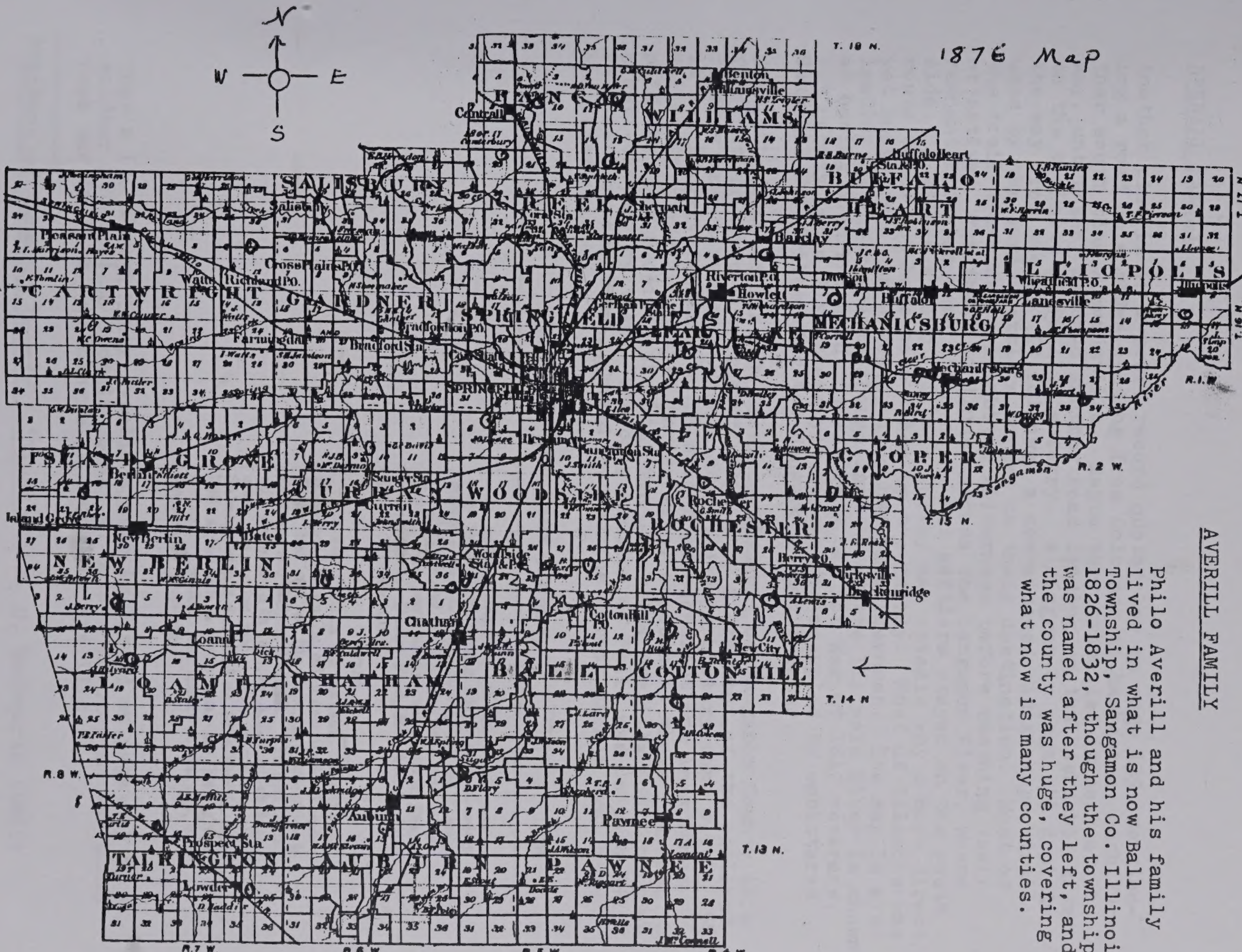
Realistically we are lucky to have found this much, a sort of continuity with his childhood, for though Philo's adult world was far different than his boyhood home in Connecticut, we have seen him following in his father Moses' footsteps by striving to be a good community citizen, holding government positions, etc. Moses was only 60 when he died. Philo was nearly 58 when he moved to a very new frontier community again, with three young sons and two teenaged daughters he wanted to rear to adulthood and give a firm foundation. Did he really realize what he was getting into? Maybe. Though vigorous he was no spring chicken. The boys were healthy and hard workers. Prairie land up in Sangamon County had very recently been surveyed, One presumes the local squatters had selected the very best and paid for it. The tall grass grew plump cattle, though breaking the deep-rooted sod was not yet possible--plows that strong had not yet been invented. Gardens would have to grow in amongst deadened trees at first. The climate was more invigorating to a Yankee like himself.

How did they get there? It is barely conceivable they could have taken a keelboat up the Mississippi then up the Illinois River, then up the Sangamon which in the earliest days was considered navigable. In 1832 a steamboat made it all the way to Springfield before becoming mired, but the latter river is capricious. Abraham Lincoln's father used a flatboat on it in 1830. But though wide enough in wet seasons, it never made good traveling. Brush, timber and debris at its mouth make it impassable nowadays, even for canoes. They didn't go that way.

The way first American Bottom settlers got to the Bottom from Kentucky was to cross at a ferry at Shawneetown and go to Kaskaskia using an old Indian trail leading there. With comings and goings for over 30 years, by 1825 it was a well-used road. Our Illinois survey map shows it going to Edwardsville near the mouth of the Missouri River.


NORTH WESTERN TER.
MISSOURI TER.
LAKE MICHIGAN
INDIANA
KENTUCKY
Indian Boundary Line
Illinois R.
St. Louis
Vandalia
BOND
CLARK
CRAWFORD
EDWARDS
WAYNE
GALLATIN
UNION
ALEXANDER
Ohio R.
Kaskaskia
to Macomb at ●
Spring-field at arrow inland unsurveyed portion
(Elizabethtown)
Toward New Madrid
ILLINOIS
IN 1822
Scale of Miles

1876 Map


N
W
E
S
SALISBURY
FANCY CREEK
WILLIAMS
BUFFALO HEART
ILLIOPOLIS
CARTWRIGHT
GARDNER
SPRINGFIELD
CLEAR LAKE
MECHANICSBURG
ISLAND GROVE
CURRAN
WOODSIDE
COOPER
ROCHESTER
NEW BERLIN
LOAMI
CHATHAM
BALL
COTTON HILL
TALKINGTON
AUBURN
PAWNEE
Springfield
Chatham
Auburn
Pawnee
Rochester
New Berlin
Cotton Hill
Sangamon River
T. 18 N.
T. 17 N.
T. 16 N.
T. 15 N.
T. 14 N
T. 13 N.
R. 1 W.
R. 2 W.
R. 8 W.
R. 7 W.
R. 6 W.
R. 5 W.
R. 4 W

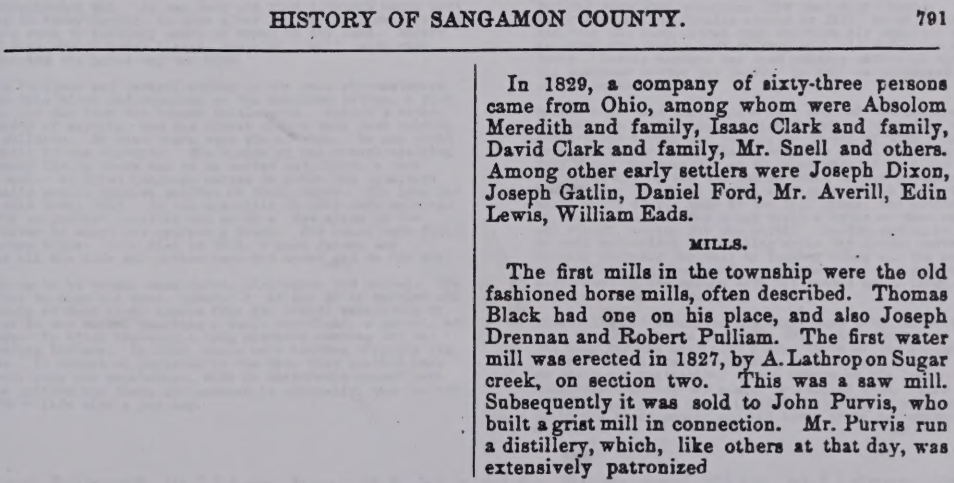
AVERILL FAMILY

Philo Averill and his family lived in what is now Ball Township, Sangamon Co. Illinois 1826-1832, though the township was named after they left, and the county was huge, covering what now is many counties.

AVERILL FAMILY

Another clue is in a court record quoted low on page 139, mentioning a road on a ridge leading from Golconda to Kaskaskia, much further south than Edwardsville. Maybe they travelled it most of the way, until they reached another road leading up the Kaskaskia River to the vicinity of Pulliam's ferry. A diagram on page 141 depicts the way from there. It followed a now-widened old Kickapoo trail used by the early settlers to get to their destination. Most of the trail traversed uninhabited wilderness before reaching their objective. The trail continued across the Sangamon River, where remnant Kickapoo were often seen, but settlers stayed on the south side. A glance at our Illinois survey map reveals why a more direct route could not have been taken by the family. Most of Illinois was yet unexplored, unsurveyed, treacherous wilderness. The map is misleading in one respect--though land NW of the Illinois River is shown as having been surveyed, it was reserved for War of 1812 veterans; but nobody could live there yet for it was occupied by embittered Sauk and Fox tribes, far too dangerous until later.

Partly because of Lincoln lore, development of Sangamon County is a fascinating topic but, regretfully, only a fragment of the earliest records have survived. When a huge 900-page history came out in 1881, it was largely financed by donations or subscriptions in advance. Naturally those who stayed in the area, especially those families that paid the most received the most mention. The Averills had been gone a half-century by then. The only mention of Philo was on page 791 in a section about Ball Township, and the author didn't even know his first name.



HISTORY OF SANGAMON COUNTY. 791

In 1829, a company of sixty-three persons came from Ohio, among whom were Absolom Meredith and family, Isaac Clark and family, David Clark and family, Mr. Snell and others. Among other early settlers were Joseph Dixon, Joseph Gatlin, Daniel Ford, Mr. Averill, Edin Lewis, William Eads. ✓

MILLS.

The first mills in the township were the old fashioned horse mills, often described. Thomas Black had one on his place, and also Joseph Drennan and Robert Pulliam. The first water mill was erected in 1827, by A. Lathrop on Sugar creek, on section two. This was a saw mill. Subsequently it was sold to John Purvis, who built a grist mill in connection. Mr. Purvis run a distillery, which, like others at that day, was extensively patronized

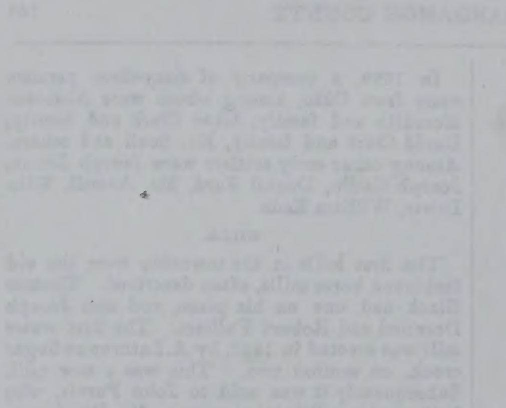
That's it, though Henry Averill's name is listed on page 163 as a soldier attached to Captain Japhet A. Ball's Company in the Black Hawk War in 1832. Nothing else about the Averills.

---

*History of Sangamon County, Illinois by M. G. Wadsworth (1881)

Another clue is in a court record quoted [illegible] on page 137, mentioning a road on a ridge leading from Golconda to Kaskaskia, much farther south than Sommersville. Maybe they travelled it most of the way, until they reached another road leading up the Kaskaskia River to the vicinity of Pulliam's Ferry. A diagram on page 141 depicts the way from there. It followed a new-widened old Kickapoo trail used by the early settlers to get to their destination. Most of the trail traversed uninhabited wilderness before reaching their objective. The trail continued across the Sangamon River, where remnant Kickapoo were often seen, but settlers stayed on the south side. A glance at our Illinois survey map reveals why a more direct route could not have been taken by the family. Most of Illinois was yet unexplored, unsurveyed, inhospitable wilderness. The map is misleading in one respect--though land NW of the Illinois River is shown as having been surveyed, it was reserved for War of 1812 veterans; but nobody could live there yet for it was occupied by embittered Sauk and Fox tribes, nor the Kickapoos, until later.

Partly because of Lincoln lore, development of Sangamon County is a fascinating topic but, unfortunately, only a fragment of the earliest records have survived. When the 900-page history came out in 1881 it was largely financed by donations or subscriptions in advance. Naturally those who stayed in the area, especially those families that paid the most received the most mention. The Averills had been gone a half-century by then. The only mention of Philo was on page 761 in a section about Ball Township, and the author didn't even know his first name.



That's it, though Henry Averill's name is listed on page 153 as a soldier attached to Captain Japhet A. Ellis's Company in the Black Hawk War in 1832. Nothing else about the Averills.

---

*History of Sangamon County, Illinois by [illegible] Wentworth (1881)

My own search has turned up only a little more so far. Despite Wadsworth's words, we know "Mr. Averill" came there before 1829, not from Ohio. Some things can be learned indirectly about the family's lives in Sangamon County, by the activities of their near neighbors. Birds of a feather flock together--or so it is claimed. Philo again volunteered for community service. This time he was less enthusiastically received by the semi-literate southern-bred populace who were suspicious of Yankees, even good-natured ones. Most had come there in sizeable clannish extended-family groups which favored their own. If you remember, even Abraham Lincoln received only about a year's schooling, though he learned law by studying on his own. That was the type of person who got ahead.

Springfield is proud of the legend of their very first settler, Robert Pulliam, whose son lived 3-doors from Philo in 1830. To save space a fine-print sketch of his history has been typed up.

Perhaps the easiest way to tell about the settlement of Sangamon County is to give a little narrative about the very first settler. When the locals formed their Old Settlers Club years later, three or four families claimed they were first. Finally a committee was formed to search out the truth. After much deliberation they decide that, though others broke ground first, the first to build a residence was peg-legged Robert Pulliam. Here, then, is his story.

Robert's cabin was built in October, 1817. Some idealistic early writers made it sound like he came, Moses-like, to settle on good ground in the "howling wilderness." The truth is he knew exactly where he was and why he came there. He took advantage of a set of circumstances to expropriate a desirable spot from Kickapoo Indians he knew were absent looking over land in Missouri the government was trying to persuade them to remove to. He wanted to be first to stake a claim.

Robert Pulliam was the grandson of Scotch-Irish immigrants. His father, John, grew up in the Shenandoah Valley. About 1770 he settled in Henry County, VA and got married. Robert was born there in 1776, the oldest son. John fought with the Henry County Militia in the Revolutionary War. He was poor and rich planters owned most of the land in Henry County, so soon after the war he took wife and three little ones to Kentucky where he hoped to buy land. Before they could save enough money history repeated itself, with rich planters driving the price way too high.

In 1796 the Pulliams and several others in the same circumstances crossed the Ohio River and squatted on the American Bottom, a rich floodplain, not far from the French settlements. Robert's mother died, probably of malaria, and the oldest sister took over raising the other children. By then there were six of them. No one could buy land until it was surveyed. The claims of the French-speaking people already living there had to be sorted out first, a very difficult task. At first Congress wanted to evict the squatters but eventually public opinion shifted in their favor. The land did not go on sale until 1815. In the meanwhile in 1808 John sold his improvements to another squatter and moved a few miles up the Kaskaskia River to squat and operate a ferry. His heirs were finall able to secure title. John died in 1812, a poor farmer who craved land all his life and worked hard but never got to own any.

Robert grew up to be tough, uncultured, illiterate but shrewd. (He did learn how to sign his name, however.) At age 26 he married and staked a claim at Wood River across from St. Louis, subsisting by raising hogs in the woods, planting a small cornfield, a garden, and hunting game. He often traveled a long distance hunting and was good at dodging Indians. In 1808, while on a hunting trip his leg was injured. It became so infected by the time they reached help that his only hope was amputation, with no anesthetic except corn liquor. He gritted his teeth and endured it stoically, then continued his active life with a peg leg.

Being a long range hunter, Robert Pulliam learned of the Indian camp near the San-gam-ma where they hunted in the winter and made maple sugar in the groves in early spring, some of which was sold very profitably. The Kickapoos had fought on the side of the British during the War of 1812 and hated the settlers bitterly. Massacres were frequent, and for that the Indians were regarded with loathing and contempt.

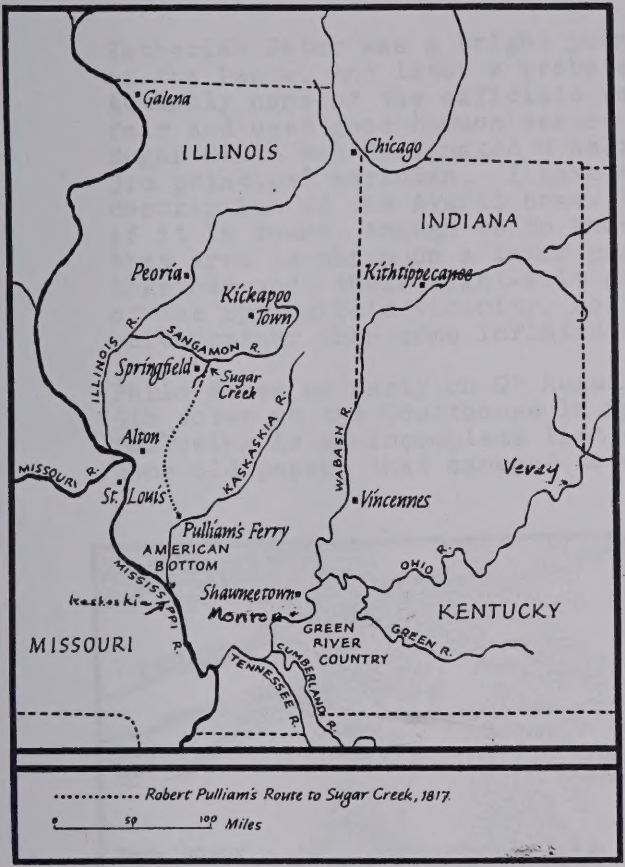
When the Pulliam's son Martin was seven years old, his next-door neighbor, Mrs. Reagan and her six children were scalped while walking in the woods. Some women were tomahawked while making soap in big kettles in their own yards. The Indians grabbed their screaming babies and threw them into the boiling water. (See the picture of Martin Pulliam and his wife on another page. They lived three doors from Philo Averill and his family when the 1830 census was taken.)

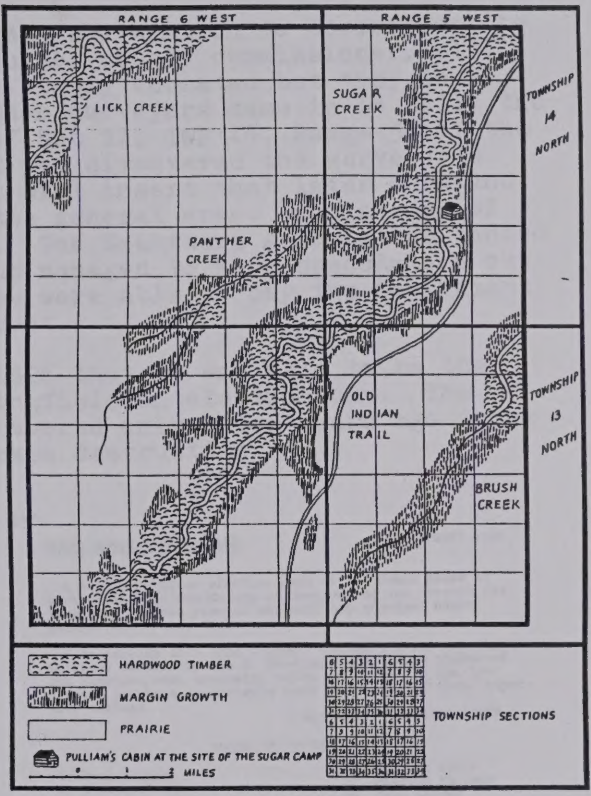
Finally, after a series of land-grabbing treaties, the Kickapoos, hungry and broken-spirited, agreed in 1817 to look over the tracts near the Osage River in Missouri the government was offering in exchange for their land in Illinois. Robert Pulliam had prepared for the time when something like that might happen. When the Woods River land office finally opened in 1816, he sold his improvements and took the cash rather than exercise his squatter's right to buy. He moved his family back to stay with his relatives near Pulliam's Ferry. Cattle herders had been raising cattle in the woods near the American Bottom for years. In 1817 he purchased a herd of skinny cattle.

Robert knew that during late 1817 most of the Indians were away trying out the facilities at Csage River, so that fall he hired four drovers and a cook who was sister to one of them. Instead of grazing the cattle on the mast in the local woods as was the custom, they drove their cattle at the slow pace of 10 miles a day to keep them healthy, up the Old Indian Trail to the San-gam-ma. They camped near the trail on the east side of the Sugar Creek, in the maple woods at the edge of the tall grass. The cattle soon grew fat on the rich diet. The group built a cabin on that spot and stayed all winter, caring for the cattle. In the spring he put his drovers to work collecting and boiling maple sap in the woods. They had already prepared for that by lugging along all the necessary kettles and buckets. A fine profit was made when they returned to the settlement in the spring with fat cattle and a large quantity of maple sugar which sold very quickly.

Robert did not return to the Sugar Camp until after the treaty with the Indians was signed in 1819. Even then some Indians remained but they for the most part stayed north of the Sangamon River. Other settlers, perhaps hearing of Pulliam's success, or perhaps on their own initiative, took a chance on the Indians and went to Sugar Creek during the summer or fall of 1818. Some of those families did plant crops in 1818, but Pulliam and his crew had built the first cabin, and had lived there during the winter of 1817/8.

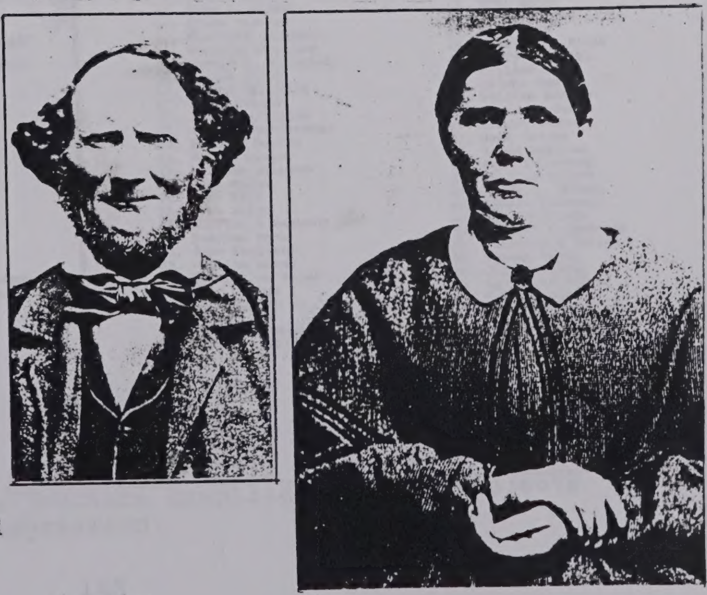
When Robert Pulliam brought his wife Mary and five children to the one-room 16x16 foot sugar cabin in early May 1819, they found it occupied by Zachariah and Nancy Peter with their five young children who had arrived the previous September, found it empty, and moved in, assuming it was abandoned. When the Pulliams reclaimed their cabin, the Peters vacated and built a new one three miles north in unclaimed timber along the creek. Both families needed a cabin badly, for the following winter was bitterly cold.


Galena
ILLINOIS
Chicago
INDIANA
Peoria
Kithtippecanoe
Kickapoo Town
ILLINOIS R.
SANGAMON R.
Springfield
Sugar Creek
KASKASKIA R.
WABASH R.
Alton
MISSOURI R.
St. Louis
Vevay
Vincennes
Pulliam's Ferry
AMERICAN BOTTOM
OHIO R.
MISSISSIPPI R.
Kaskaskia
Shawneetown
Monroe
KENTUCKY
MISSOURI
GREEN RIVER COUNTRY
GREEN R.
TENNESSEE R.
CUMBERLAND R.
Robert Pulliam's Route to Sugar Creek, 1817.
0 50 100 Miles


RANGE 6 WEST
RANGE 5 WEST
LICK CREEK
SUGAR CREEK
TOWNSHIP 14 NORTH
PANTHER CREEK
OLD INDIAN TRAIL
TOWNSHIP 13 NORTH
BRUSH CREEK
HARDWOOD TIMBER
MARGIN GROWTH
PRAIRIE
PULLIAM'S CABIN AT THE SITE OF THE SUGAR CAMP
0 1 2 MILES
TOWNSHIP SECTIONS

Sugar Creek in 1817

Right Martin G. Pulliam (1807-72) & Lucy (Knotts) Pulliam (1812-78). This couple lived 3 doors from Philo Averill & family when the 1830 census was taken. Photo taken 20 years later. Martin, son of Robert Pulliam, said he had never used tobacco, nor tasted a drop of liquor for many years (in 1859).

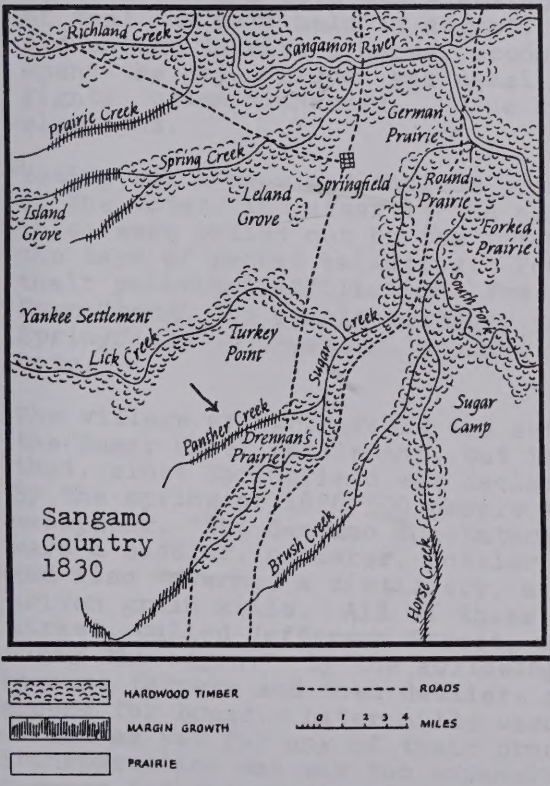


Illustrations and diagrams from Sugar Creek - Life on the Illinois Prairie by John Mack Faragher (1986) If you can find a copy, you will probably be as enthralled as I was.

AVERILL FAMILY

Zachariah Peter was a bright young man who went on to become Justice of the Peace, and later a probate judge, county commissioner, etc. Actually none of the officials were highly educated but they were fair and used good common sense. When surveyors came in in 1821, the Sugar Cabin was designated W half of Sec 21, TWP 14, Range 5W of the 3rd principal meridian. I have not yet discovered the surveyor's description of the Averil home, but will insert that later when and if it is found, though we do know the general area. A plat map of that area is shown on a later page. The Squatters Association banded together and their tight-knit group managed to keep speculators out of the Springfield vicinity, so they were able to pay the Government price rather than some inflated amount.

Philo arose so early on 07 August 1826 that he was able to be the 5th voter at the Courthouse in Springfield on election day. The following is an incomplete list uncovered only a few years ago among some old papers that managed to escape destruction.


Richland Creek
Sangamon River
Prairie Creek
German Prairie
Spring Creek
Springfield
Round Prairie
Leland Grove
Island Grove
Forked Prairie
South Fork
Yankee Settlement
Turkey Point
Lick Creek
Sugar Creek
Sugar Camp
Panther Creek
Drennan's Prairie
Brush Creek
Horse Creek
Sangamo Country 1830
HARDWOOD TIMBER
MARGIN GROWTH
PRAIRIE
ROADS
0 1 2 3 4
MILES

COURT HOUSE, SPRINGFIELD 7 AUGUST 1826

A Poll book of an election held at the Court house in Springfield, in the County of Sangamon on the seventh day of August, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and twenty six.

I do certify that John Lindsay William Drennan and Stephen Stillman JUDGES and Asa S. Shaw and John Howard CLERKS of the Election were severally sworn before me, as the law directs previous to entering upon the duties of their repective offices

S Stillman JUSTICE-PEACE

NAMES OF VOTERS

1. Mark Riggin
2. Penrod Vancil
3. Pascal P. Enos
4. William Feagan
5. Philo Averill ✓
6. Wright Riggins
7. Willis Cooley
8. Jesse J. Kirkpatrick
9. John D Bell
10. John B. Hinman
11. Brice Alsbury
12. Ebenezer Colburn
13. Gershom Dorrance
14. Joseph B. Meredith
15. Daniel Tolly
16. George Hillyard
17. Jacob Verden
18. Anderson Daylee
19. William Huffmaster
20. Vincent Daylee
21. Joseph Davis
22. William Roberts
23. John Mason
24. John Wier
25. John White
26. Charles R Matheny
27. Stephen Pool
28. John Hardesty
29. William Alvey
30. Theophilus Sweet
31. John Carter
32. John Cooper
33. Thomas Cox
34. Andrew M Haughey
35. Thomas H Price
36. Garrett Elkin
37. Charles Snelson
38. John Snyder
39. Luke Bonesteel
40. Gideon Vancel
41. John Daylee
42. George Davis
43. Edward Day
44. George Wiemer
45. Adam Smith
46. Major Hungit
47. John Rose
48. William F. Elkin
49. Henry C. Stout
50. William Wood
51. Elisha Moore
52. William McNabb
53. Squire Poteet
54. Robert Paxton
55. John Brisco
56. James Collins
57. Adam E Meacham
58. William Haynes
59. James C. Wright
60. Robert Thompson
61. John Constant
62. Charles P Cabaness
63. Nehemiah B Inslee
64. Joseph Stout
65. John Campbell
66. Archibald Turner
67. William Baker
68. Jesse Ashlock
69. John Howard
70. Horace Mc Murtree

The Poll Book list is from Snow Birds - Poll Books of Sangamon County Illinois 1821-1830 a little brochure compiled by Works Projects Administration during the depression.

Philo rode horseback in the dark about fifteen miles to the Courthouse. The mosquitoes were less troublesome than in Indiana or Pope County, except in wet grass, but the horseflies on the prairie were horrible in the daytime. White horses would become pink with blood in only a few minutes, especially on their backs, forelegs and face, while traveling in the open. Riders usually traveled after sundown or very early morning, and kept their horses covered with blankets. The flies were not as bad in cleared land or in the woods but they were much larger than those nowadays. The bites were painful to man or beast and often became infected. Prairie grasses in places were as high as a man on horseback. Once they were gone in later years most of the flies went, too.

Malaria was not the problem it had been in their previous homes but there were enough mosquitoes that it did exist there. They flew unobstructed into the dark, often humid cabins.

According to the Sangamon County History, "The grandest in the year to both men and boys was election day. State and county elections of that day were held in August. Nearly every boy in the precinct old enough to ride a horse, accompanied father or brother, all spent the day. Liquor was usually available, and drunken men and fights often witnessed. Horse racing was a common pastime at elections.

"Voting was a slow and tedious process. The clerk recorded the name of the voter, and after it the name of each candidate voted for, which were called out by the voter in rotation." (This was before the days of secret balloting. People were usually pretty proud of their political affiliation. Free drinks bought many votes.) Even though the family probably farmed they would have gone to Springfield on occasion, perhaps to shop or visit, certainly to vote.

The village of Springfield was established a couple of years after the Sugar Creek settlement, but it could not have been more than that, since Springfield was declared to be county seat in 1821. By the spring of 1826, 500 people were living there. The first newspaper, "The Sangamo Spectator," began publication. Soon there were a saddler, hatmaker, cobbler, several cabinetmakers, carpenters, and also taverns, a distillery, a tannery, and probably horse-driven grain mills. All of these were strung out on one main street, called Jefferson Street, with the houses extending out along the edges.* By the following year there were several millers because farmers and town dwellers alike needed corn and wheat ground for bread. Later mills used water power, but there was no market as yet for any of their products outside the settlement. Transportation was way too expensive even if there had been a demand. Farmers fed the surplus to their hogs or other animals.

---

*Prairie of Promise - Springfield and Sangamon County, Illinois
Edward J. Russo (1963)

A sketch of a local courthouse will be shown later to emphasize the importance of the office of justice of the peace in those days, though one suspects Judge Powers probably wielded more power than Philo had. Now it is time to list whom the Averills' closest neighbors were in the year 1830 when the census was taken. In October 1819, when settlement was just beginning, Methodist organizers managed to pull together over 100 settlers for a revival in the timber on the east side of Sugar Camp prairie. Several Methodist classes emerged from this. One of the classes was led by James Sims. Four or five years later this class moved to the residence of John French, a tenant farmer located in "Cherry Grove, a prominent stand of timber on Panther Creek. START LOOKING AT THE PRINTED CENSUS ON NEXT PAGE.

Methodist farmer Silas Harlan filed a claim there in 1827. The area was later renamed Harlan's Grove. A 40-acre section of magnificent timber was cleared of undergrowth and brush, and became the beautifu "Sugar Creek Camp Ground," the site of numerous religious and social gatherings.

Noah Mason, a New Englander, filed a claim in 1827 and brought his family there. Robert Crow purchased "congress land" in 1824 near his brother-in-law, Squire Job Fletcher, and built a dam and lumber mill there. Boys fished there in the summer and nude men and boys swam there in the summer, some of them riding their horses into the pool, cheered on by spectators. Thomas Black built a bridge over the creek there in 1827, linking Drennan's Prairie with Patton' Settlement. In November 1819, this Job and Mary Fletcher, a young couple with a 3-month old daughter Permelia, came from Christian County, Kentucky, and built a 3-faced camp to face the winter on Drennan's Prairie on north-facing land! Job had been a very bright boy in school back in Kentucky. He had a neat writing-hand and was soon teaching fellow students. Neighbors sought his help with legal papers. He did very well in this new place and finally became a State Legislator and then Senator. He was over 6 feet tall. (See the picture of Job Fletcher and of Crow's Mill on another page.

James and Richard Simpson were Catholics from Maryland (descended from Lord Baltimore's group). Other Catholic families came at the same time but are not reflected on this page of the census. They arranged for a priest to visit the settlement twice a year for services.

In the fall of 1817 the families of William Drennan, his brother Joseph Drennan, son-in-law Joseph Dodds, and neighbor George Cox loaded up their wagons in Greene County Kentucky, came across on a ferry at Shawneetown, and traveled to Woods River where they set up a winter camp. In the spring of 1818 they left the women behind tending 16 children. The four men hired a ranger to guide them up the trace to the San-gam-ma, spent a few days scouting the site, and chose a location for their homes with a clear spring on the west side of the creek. They formed a square-mile enclosure with three sides around a section of high grass that became known as "Drennan's Prairie."

The four men agreed to share work in common for the next two years, at the end of which time all four families were to have homes and farms of equal value, and good size. They cleared timber, built cabins and fences, and raised summer crops of corn and pumpkins that first summer. In the fall they returned to get their wives and children, plus others who desired to come along to settle.

Joseph Dodd's brother, Gilbert Dodds, was a lay Cumberland Presbyterian minister. He organized a congregation which he later moved to the Lick Creek settlement.

Martin Pulliam's picture and part of his family tree was told on a previous page. It may be added that his father, Robert, set up a horse mill in 1820 which was much needed but not too efficient, to grind corn for the settlers.

Daniel Easley was a Kentuckian and related to other settlers. The Easley, Nuckols, and Hutton families remained in the area and their descendants became prosperous in a later time when the prairie could be farmed and the markets in St. Louis, etc., demanded their produce. They even had tenant farmers and hired hands working for them.

Little or nothing was said about the Harris, Tibbs, King, Hatchett, Laughlin or Averill families. As for the bottom half of the page, those were people who lived in a slightly different neighborhood not far away. Judge Zachariah Peter has been told about already. He settled three miles away from the Pulliams. The only other ones who will be mentioned here are the Ball family, for whom the township was eventually named. Japhet A. Ball was involved in several endeavors. During the Black Hawk he was captain of the military unit to which Henry James Cropsey Averill was attached. Mr. Ball also had a mill in later years which he reported was mostly for the good of the community, as it brought very little profit. However, the year he said that was 1837, and that was the beginning of a severe depression.

AVERILL FAMILY

JO DAVIESS
STEPHENSON
WINNEBAGO
BOONE
MC HENRY
LAKE
CARROLL
OGLE
DE KALB
KANE
DU PAGE
COOK
WHITESIDE
LEE
ROCK ISLAND
HENRY
BUREAU
KENDALL
LA SALLE
WILL
North Line of Military Tract
JO DAVIESS
PUTNAM
MERCER
HENRY
STARK
MARSHALL
GRUNDY
KANKAKEE
HENDERSON
WARREN
KNOX
PEORIA
WOODFORD
LIVINGSTON
IROQUOIS
HANCOCK
MC DONOUGH
FULTON
TAZEWELL
MC LEAN
FORD
MASON
VERMILION
SCHUYLER
DE WITT
CHAMPAIGN
ADAMS
BROWN
CASS
MENARD
LOGAN
MACON
PIATT
SANGAMON
MORGAN
SCOTT
PIKE
CHRISTIAN
DOUGLAS
EDGAR
MOULTRIE
COLES
SHELBY
CLARK
CALHOUN
GREENE
JERSEY
MACOUPIN
MONTGOMERY
CUMBERLAND
FAYETTE
EFFINGHAM
JASPER
CRAWFORD
MADISON
BOND
CLAY
RICHLAND
LAWRENCE
MARION
CLINTON
ST. CLAIR
WASHINGTON
JEFFERSON
WAYNE
EDWARDS
WABASH
MONROE
RANDOLPH
PERRY
HAMILTON
WHITE
JACKSON
FRANKLIN
WILLIAMSON
SALINE
GALLATIN
UNION
JOHNSON
POPE
HARDIN
ALEXANDER
PULASKI
MASSAC
MAP OF ILLINOIS SHOWING COUNTY BOUNDARIES 1830

Pages copied from 1830 Federal census, Sangamon County IL - transcribed by Ruth Z. Marko, Sangamon County Genealogical Society

PAGE 7/140

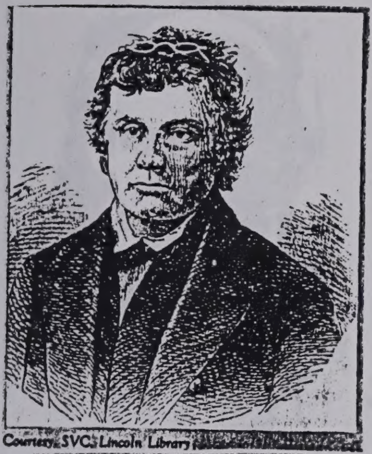
Samuel Hutton	0-2-3-0-0-0-1	2-1-0-0-0-1
Silas Harlin	1-0-0-0-0-0-1	0-0-0-0-1
Mathew Harlin	0-0-0-0-0-1	2-0-1-0-0-1
John French	0-0-0-0-0-0-0-1	0-0-1-0-0-0-1-0-0-1
James Harris	1-0-0-0-1	2-0-0-0-1
Elizabeth Harris	0-0-2-2-0-1	0-0-0-0-0-0-0-1
Noah Mason (Masson)	0-1-0-1-1-0-0-1	0-1-0-1-1-0-0-1
James Wood	1-0-0-1-0-0-1	0-1-2-1-0-1
Robert Crow	0-1-1-1-1-0-0-1	0-0-2-1-0-0-0-1
Elizabeth Fletcher	0-0-0-0-2-0-0-1	0-0-1-3-0-0-0-1
Job Fletcher, Jr.	1-0-0-0-1	2-0-0-0-1
Job Fletcher	2-2-0-0-0-1-1	1-1-1-0-0-0-1
Anderson Tibbs	0-1-2-1-0-0-1	2-0-1-0-0-0-1
Sugar King	0-0-2-1-0-0-0-0-0-1	0-2-0-2-0-0-1
James Simpson	2-2-1-0-1-0-1	2-1-0-3-1-0-1
Richard Simpson	3-1-0-0-0-0-1	0-1-2-2-0-1
William Drennan	0-0-1-0-0-0-0-0-1	0-0-1-1-0-0-1
Joseph Dodds	1-2-1-2-0-0-1	1-0-1-1-0-1
William Hatchet	0-1-1-0-0-0-1	2-1-0-0-0-1
Gilbert Dodds	2-1-1-0-0-1	1-0-2-0-0-1
William Drenan	2-0-0-0-0-1	0-0-0-0-1
John L. Laughlin	1-1-1-2-0-0-0-1	1-1-1-1-0-0-1
✓ Philo Averil	0-0-1-1-1-0-0-0-1	0-0-0-2-0-0-0-1
John Nuckols	1-1-0-1-0-0-1	2-0-1-1-0-0-1
Daniel Esly	0-0-0-1-0-0-0-1	0-0-0-1-0-0-0-1
Martin Pulliam	2-0-0-0-1	0-0-0-0-1
John L. Drenan	0-0-1-0-1	1-0-0-1

PAGE 8/141

John Brownell	2-1-0-0-0-1	1-0-0-0-1
Headley Smith	3-3-0-0-0-1	1-0-0-0-0-1
William Baldwin	0-0-0-0-1	1-0-0-0-1
Elly Noll	0-0-2-1	0-1-1-0-0-0-1
William Enix	0-0-0-0-0-0-0-1	0-0-0-0-1-0-0-1
James Enix	1-1-0-0-1	1-0-0-0-1
Evans Poor	2-0-0-0-1	0-0-0-0-1
Leven Hurley	0-0-0-0-0-1	0-0-1-0-0-1
Andrew Drenan	1-0-0-0-1	1-0-0-0-1
Elizabeth Laughlin	0-1-0-1-2	0-0-1-1-1
William Laughlin	0-1-0-0-0-1	1-0-0-0-0-1-0-0-1
William A. Clarke	1-1-0-3-1-0-1	1-0-2-0-0-0-1
Zachariah Peter	1-1-0-1-0-0-1	0-0-0-2-0-1
William Richardson	0-0-1-1-1-0-1	3-1-1
Jacob Metz	2-1-1-1-2-0-0-1	0-2-0-0-0-0-1
David Harmon	0-0-0-0-1	1-0-0-1
Joseph Limon	1-0-0-0-1	1-1-0-0-1
→ Japhet A. Ball	0-0-0-0-0-1	1-0-0-0-1
John Barns	2-0-0-0-1	1-0-0-0-1
Smith Ball	0-0-0-0-1	0-0-0-0-0-0-0-1
John L. Ball	0-0-0-0-1	2-1-0-0-1
Thomas Long	1-2-1-0-0-1	0-0-0-1-2
Lewis Richardson	1-0-0-0-1	1-0-0-0-1

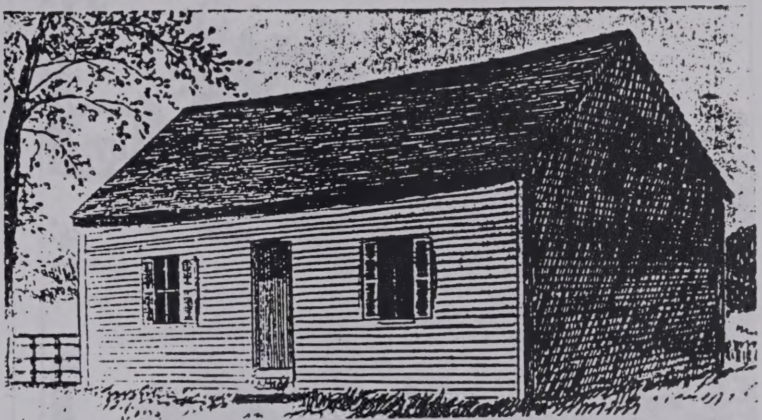
Key:

Page	Name of Head of Family	Free White Males														Free White Females													
		Under 5	5-10	10-15	15-20	20-30	30-40	40-50	50-60	60-70	70-80	80-90	90-100	Over 100		Under 5	5-10	10-15	15-20	20-30	30-40	40-50	50-60	60-70	70-80	80-90	90-100	Over 100	
140	Philo Averil			1	1	1				1									2				1						



Courtesy SVC Lincoln Library

Peter Cartwright



Typical Courthouse at Cantrall*

Philo and his family became devout Methodists somewhere along the line, probably in Indiana. The much-traveled Reverend Peter Cartwright was one of the most powerful evangelists. His home turf was Kentucky, but sometimes preached in Vevay, Indiana while they were there. Later he lived in Sangamon County, Illinois.

Peter Cartwright (1785-1872) American Methodist clergyman, known as the "backwoods preacher," was born in Amherst Co VA and moved with his parents to Kentucky where he was converted at a camp meeting in 1801 from the "evil" pleasures of card playing, horse racing, and dancing, to God and Methodism. The tall, brawny Cartwright was a natural orator who took on the devil as his personal enemy. At age 18 he was a full-fledged circuit-riding preacher. He preached as if "the devil had no rights and never apologized for his attacks on Satan's kingdom." At his services they sang songs like,

"A Methodist is my name
and I hope to live and die the same.
Oh, whip the devil around the stump
and hit him a crack at every jump."

He had an unmitigated hatred of slavery, which prompted him to settle at Richland Creek (later Cartwright TWP) Sangamon County Illinois, with his wife and family in 1823. Besides preaching he engaged in local politics, even running unsuccessfully against Abraham Lincoln for congress.

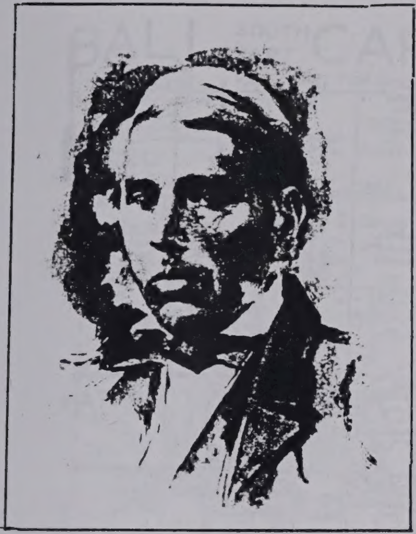
Philo and Rebecah Averill and their children must have listened to Rev. Cartwright many times, both in Sangamon Co. and later in Hillsgrove in McDonough County, for he preached frequently in both localities. Cartwright wrote an interesting autobiography.

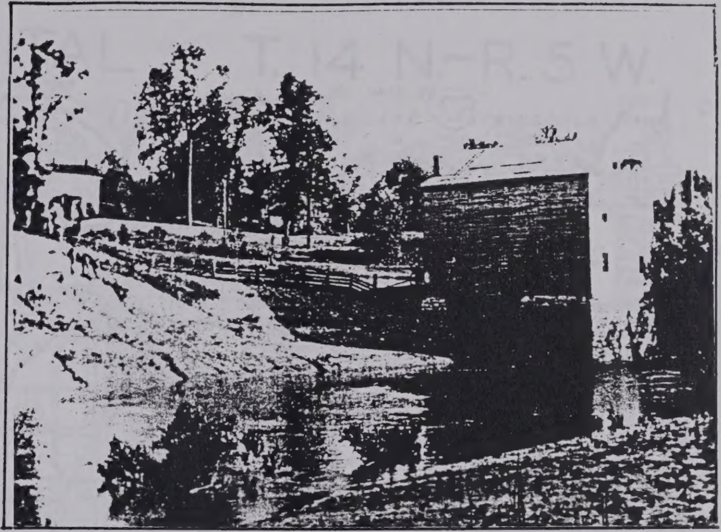
Justice of the Peace George Power presided at the depicted courthouse. Circuit-riding lawyer Abraham Lincoln argued many cases there. (An example of the power sometimes wielded by early justices.)

---

*Prairie of Promise-Springfield & Sangamon Co. IL by Edward J. Russo (198

AVERILL FAMILY



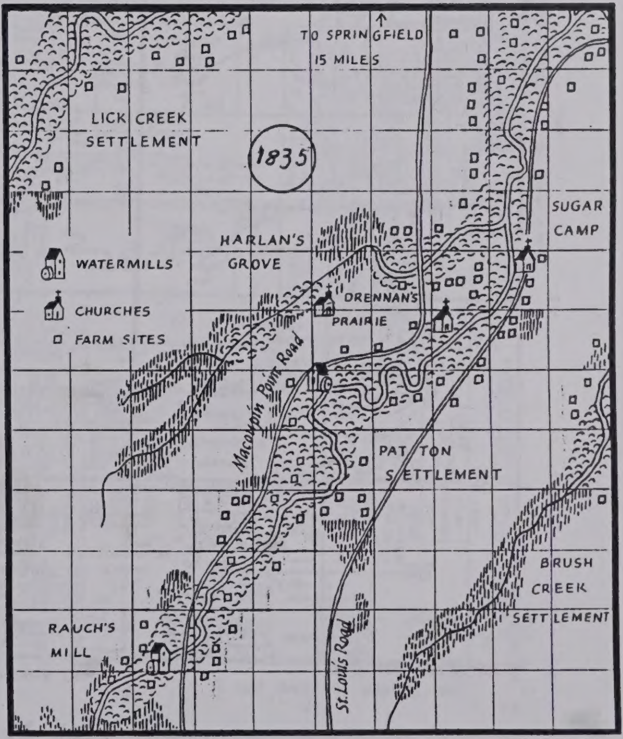


Left-Job Fletcher's portrait in 1836 when he was re-elected as a Whig to the IL State Senate. His first winter at Sugar Creek was spent with wife & 3-month old daughter in a 3-face open shelter. 11 Doors from Averills in 1830.

Right-Men and boys swam in the nude in Robert Crow's millpond, sometimes astride their horses. Probably Norman, Allen and Henry JC Averill among them. Boys also caught panfish to eat for supper.

Below-Soldiers of the American Revolution Buried in Illinois (1976) by IL State Genealogical Society page 191. Probably the man Faragher called John, unless it was an older brother of Robert.

> Note: Crow's millpond and the Methodist Church at Drennan's prairie are shown not very far apart in the diagram at right.



TO SPRINGFIELD 15 MILES
LICK CREEK SETTLEMENT
1835
HARLAN'S GROVE
SUGAR CAMP
WATERMILLS
CHURCHES
□ FARM SITES
DRENNAN'S PRAIRIE
Macoupin Point Road
PATTON SETTLEMENT
BRUSH CREEK SETTLEMENT
RAUCH'S MILL
St. Louis Road

PULLIAM (Pullen, Pullin), GEORGE

Buried: Cumberland Cemetery, Ball Township, Sangamon County, Illinois

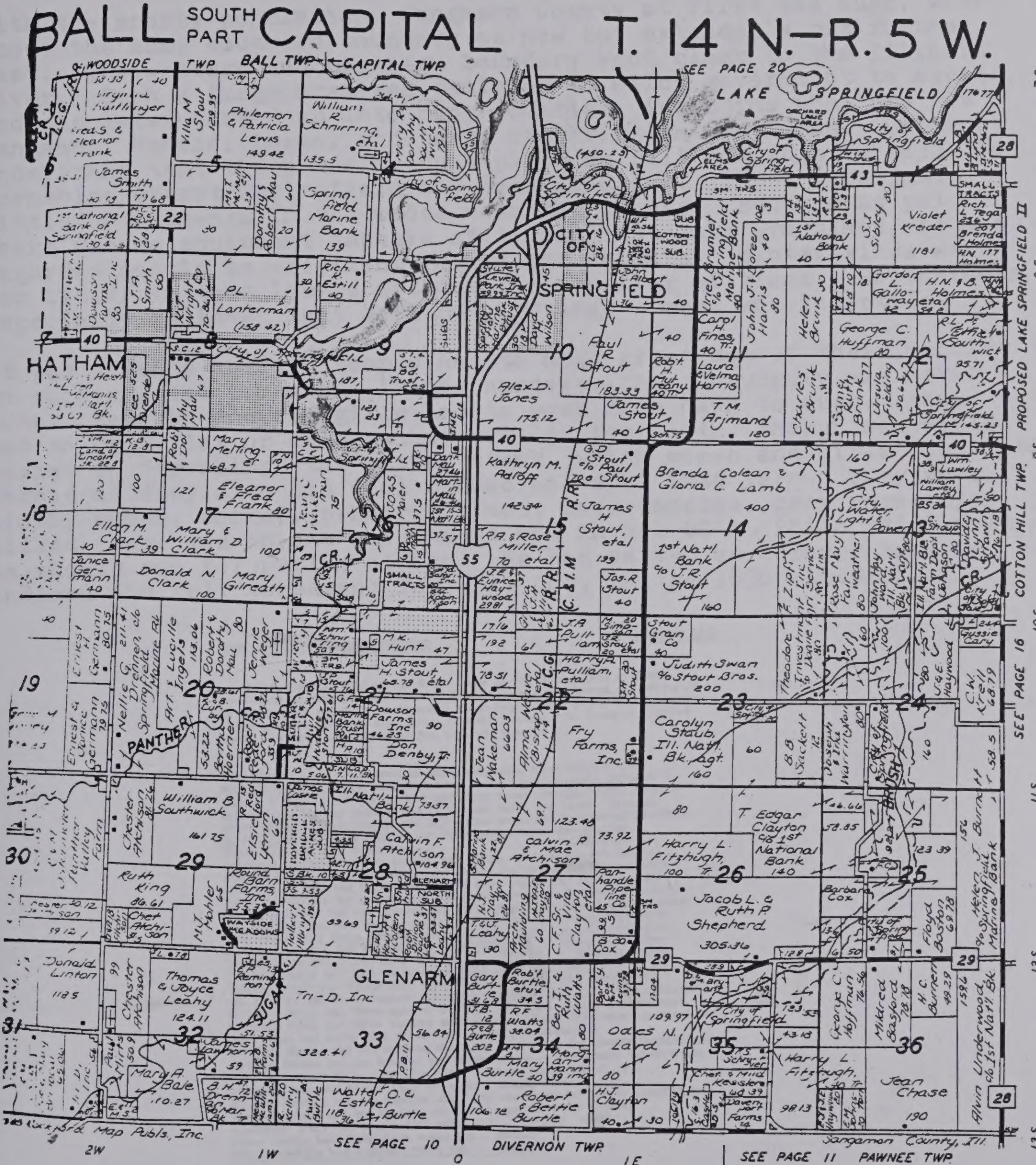
Spouse: Nancy

Service: Soldier: Virginia Continental

Pension: He received a tract of land in Sangamon County: BLWT 13724-16 Nancy W8539 (Va)

Marker: His name is on a bronze plaque in the south mall, Old State Capi Springfield, placed by Springfield Chapters DAR, and by SAR, October 1911.

Sources: DAR, PENSION, W

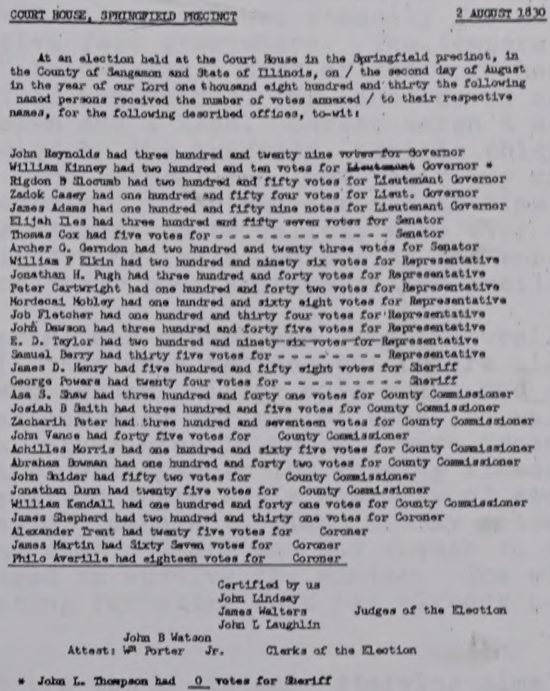

BALL SOUTH PART CAPITAL
T. 14 N.-R. 5 W.
WOODSIDE TWP
BALL TWP
CAPITAL TWP
SEE PAGE 20
LAKE SPRINGFIELD
CITY OF SPRINGFIELD
CHATHAM
GLENARM
PANTHER CR.
SUGAR CR.
PROPOSED LAKE SPRINGFIELD II
COTTON HILL TWP.
SEE PAGE 16
SEE PAGE 10
DIVERNON TWP.
SEE PAGE 11
PAWNEE TWP.
Sangamon County, Ill.
Rockford Map Publs., Inc.
Philemon & Patricia Lewis
William R Schnirring, etal
Springfield Marine Bank
P.L. Lantermann
Paul R Stout
Alex D. Jones
Kathryn M. Ralloff
James H Stout, etal
Brenda Colean & Gloria C. Lamb
1st Natl Bank % J.R. Stout
Mary Melting-er
Eleanor & Fred Frank
Ellen M. Clark
Mary & William D. Clark
Donald N. Clark
Mary Gilreath
Judith Swan % Stout Bros.
Fry Farms, Inc.
Carolyn Staub, Ill. Natl. Bk. Agt.
T. Edgar Clayton
William B Southwick
Ruth King
Calvin F. Atchison
Calvin P & Mae Atchison
Harry L. Fitzhugh
Jacob L. & Ruth P. Shepherd
Thomas & Joyce Leahy
Tri-D. Inc
Walter O. & Esther Burtle
Robert & Bettie Burtle
Odes N. Lard
Jean Chase
George C. Huffman
Violet Kreider
T.M. Arjmand
Jean Wakeman
Alma Weaver
Mary A. Bale
Donald Linton
Wayside Meadows
40
55
29
28
2W
1W
0
1E
2E
3E
7S
8S
9S
10S
11S
12S
13S

Above is a fairly recent plat map of Ball Township, Sangamon Co. IL. After the legal description of the Averill farm is discovered, that information will be written here. Presumably it was near Panther or Sugar Creek, lower left.

AVERILL FAMILY

With the scanty population, Sangamon County at first was huge, with about the same southern boundary as now but extended a bit further east. The western and northern boundary went clear to the Illinois River. Such a large area was designed to allow government to expand, and was later carved up into many counties, including what are now Sangamon, Menard, Logan, and parts of Christian and Macon. One must understand that there was no such place as Ball Township in 1832. No townships except Springfield had been laid out. There were just little settlements in the woods near the creeks. Because as yet there was no equipment capable of tilling the tall grassland, it was regarded mostly as excellent forage for animals. Winter winds were too bitter in that locale without the shelter of trees. Southerners especially believed that soil not growing trees was infertile.

It was a man's world. People had to make great use of their muscles to subsist, but women had it the hardest--their drudgery was never done. Rebecah and the girls had to work from dawn to dusk. They had to grow flax or even gather nettles for cloth, though men would assist in "breaking" the retted stems, which women and girls spun into thread as they also did wool carded and spun into yarn. They wove cloth, sewed, cooked, preserved food, made candles, grew vegetables, milked cows, and on and on. Though now in his 60's. Philo still felt he should run for public office. He had served as coroner back in Indiana and felt competent for that job, in the 1830 election.



COURT HOUSE, SPRINGFIELD PRECINCT 2 AUGUST 1830

At an election held at the Court House in the Springfield precinct, in the County of Sangamon and State of Illinois, on / the second day of August in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty the following named persons received the number of votes annexed / to their respective names, for the following described offices, to-wit:

John Reynolds had three hundred and twenty nine ~~votes for~~ Governor
William Kinney had two hundred and ten votes for ~~Lieutenant~~ Governor *
Rigdon B Slocumb had two hundred and fifty votes for Lieutenant Governor
Zadok Casey had one hundred and fifty four votes for Lieut. Governor
James Adams had one hundred and fifty nine notes for Lieutenant Governor
Elijah Iles had three hundred and fifty seven votes for Senator
Thomas Cox had five votes for - - - - - - - - - - - - - - Senator
Archer G. Herndon had two hundred and twenty three votes for Senator
William F Elkin had two hundred and ninety six votes for Representative
Jonathan H. Pugh had three hundred and forty votes for Representative
Peter Cartwright had one hundred and forty two votes for Representative
Mordecai Mobley had one hundred and sixty eight votes for Representative
Job Fletcher had one hundred and thirty four votes for Representative
John Dawson had three hundred and forty five votes for Representative
E. D. Taylor had two hundred and ninety ~~six votes for~~ Representative
Samuel Berry had thirty five votes for - - - - - - - - Representative
James D. Henry had five hundred and fifty eight votes for Sheriff
George Powers had twenty four votes for - - - - - - - - - - Sheriff
* Asa S. Shaw had three hundred and forty one votes for County Commissioner
Josiah B Smith had three hundred and five votes for County Commissioner
Zacharih Peter had three hundred and seventeen votes for County Commissioner
John Vance had forty five votes for County Commissioner
Achilles Morris had one hundred and sixty five votes for County Commissioner
Abraham Bowman had one hundred and forty two votes for County Commissioner
John Snider had fifty two votes for County Commissioner
Jonathan Dunn had twenty five votes for County Commissioner
William Kendall had one hundred and forty one votes for County Commissioner
James Shephard had two hundred and thirty one votes for Coroner
Alexander Trent had twenty five votes for Coroner
James Martin had Sixty Seven votes for Coroner
Philo Averille had eighteen votes for Coroner

Certified by us
John Lindsay
James Walters Judges of the Election
John L Laughlin

John B Watson
Attest: Wm Porter Jr. Clerks of the Election

* John L. Thompson had 0 votes for Sheriff

From Works Projects Administration publication, prev. cited, pg 101

By then there were several precincts, not just the courthouse, but not shown here--only one other return survived. Though Philo got a respectable number of votes, he came in third. Young, vigorous southerners were preferred, with lots of family connections. The man who won was probably a man from the town. The election clerks spelt his name "Avrill," "Averill," and "Averille." He was still a respected citizen.

The following winter of 1830-31 is known in Illinois history as "The winter of the Big Snow" - the snowiest winter in history of the state. Some settlers gave up in disgust and went back where they came from the next spring. This is related in various county histories. That for Menard County (then part of Sangamon) relates, "One of the most conspicuous chronological landmarks in the history of Menard County, and all of central Illinois, for that matter, is the "winter of the deep snow." Old settlers, in fixing remote dates, use this as the average mother uses the birth of her children; she says, 'It was the winter after John was born.' The old settler says, 'It was just after the deep snow.' At the old settlers' annual meetings they have badges that are worn by all who were here before 1830, which are inscribed, 'Snow Bird.'"

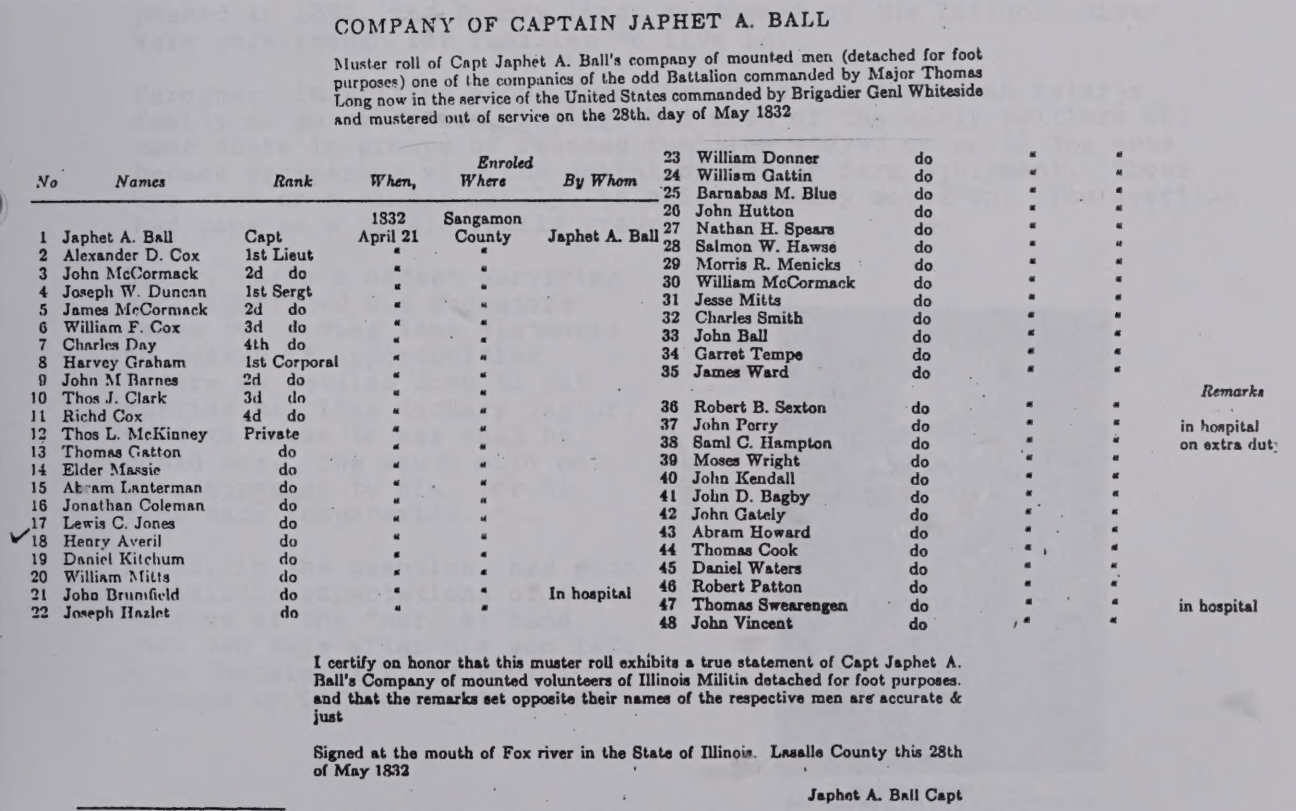
The book about Springfield says, "A great natural disaster occurred that would divert Springfield's attention from problems for a time. The autumn of 1830 was wet and mild until Christmas Eve. Then a foot of snow fell. It continued steadily for nine weeks, and piled up to four or five feet everywhere. The temperature ranged from freezing to 20° below zero. Most of the corn had not yet been harvested and food was scarce. Mr. Enos saved many lives by delivering wood with oxen and a sled. Horses weren't able to get through. Hogs and fowl died by the hundreds, prairie chickens and deer became almost extinct; and several men lost their way and died pathetically close to settlements. Those who arrived in time to witness the "Great Snow" as it came to be called, were ever after known as Snow Birds. The frightening isolation during the snowstorm made settlers acutely aware of their poor transportation facilities.

The following spring was cloudy and damp. Naturally there was much flooding when all that snow melted--but before all the waters could recede there was a sudden, bitter cold snap, and so much ice everywhere that it was not safe for man or beast to walk. It is said that early steamboats, about nine in number, were frozen into the ice on the Ohio River and destroyed in the ensuing floods and ice jams. Where our family lived there was a scarcity of seed for corn or other crops. What they did manage to plant mostly rotted in the ground from the cold and damp. There was not enough to feed the skinny cattle that managed to survive the winter. The wild game people had been used to hunting for extra food had already perished in the deep snow.

The winter of 1831-2 was a virtual "starving time" for those living in isolated areas. This surely was not the bright future Philo and Rebecah had wanted to provide for their children when they moved there. During the Spring of 1832, the settlers there and in

all the surrounding countiesbecame apprehensive about what they regarded as aggression on the part of the Indians. As early as 1827 or sooner, the Drennans had established a postal station and military training ground. Henry JC Averill and possibly his younger brother Norman were among those youths who had drilled there, in what their grandfather, Captain Moses Averill, would have called a "train band," sort of like the one he had led. In 1832, the local one was led by Captain Japhet Ball.

Readiness on the part of the settlers was wise, for all of the local tribes had fought under Tecumseh in the War of 1812, and they were still hostile against the whites; even the few lingering Kickapoos north of the Sangamon, though demoralized, were resentful. Keokuk, chief of the Sauk and Fox tribes, had moved his people across the Mississippi in accordance with a treaty about 1830, regretfully, for they loved their fertile fields Northwest of the Illinois River. In their new spot they, like the whites, were starving because of the same dreadful weather conditionsjust experienced in the region. In early 1832 a splinter group under Black Hawk decided not to honor the treaty and led his supporters back to their home planting grounds in a defiant, beligerent fashion.



COMPANY OF CAPTAIN JAPHET A. BALL

Muster roll of Capt Japhet A. Ball's company of mounted men (detached for foot purposes) one of the companies of the odd Battalion commanded by Major Thomas Long now in the service of the United States commanded by Brigadier Genl Whiteside and mustered out of service on the 28th. day of May 1832

No	*Names*	*Rank*	*Enroled*			*Remarks*
			When,	*Where*	*By Whom*	
1	Japhet A. Ball	Capt	1832 April 21	Sangamon County	Japhet A. Ball	
2	Alexander D. Cox	1st Lieut	"	"		
3	John McCormack	2d do	"	"		
4	Joseph W. Duncan	1st Sergt	"	"		
5	James McCormack	2d do	"	"		
6	William F. Cox	3d do	"	"		
7	Charles Day	4th do	"	"		
8	Harvey Graham	1st Corporal	"	"		
9	John M Barnes	2d do	"	"		
10	Thos J. Clark	3d do	"	"		
11	Richd Cox	4d do	"	"		
12	Thos L. McKinney	Private	"	"		
13	Thomas Gatton	do	"	"		
14	Elder Massie	do	"	"		
15	Abram Lanterman	do	"	"		
16	Jonathan Coleman	do	"	"		
17	Lewis C. Jones	do	"	"		
✓18	Henry Averil	do	"	"		
19	Daniel Kitchum	do	"	"		
20	William Mitts	do	"	"		
21	John Brumfield	do	"	"	In hospital	
22	Joseph Hazlet	do	"	"		
23	William Donner	do	"	"		
24	William Gattin	do	"	"		
25	Barnabas M. Blue	do	"	"		
26	John Hutton	do	"	"		
27	Nathan H. Spears	do	"	"		
28	Salmon W. Hawse	do	"	"		
29	Morris R. Menicks	do	"	"		
30	William McCormack	do	"	"		
31	Jesse Mitts	do	"	"		
32	Charles Smith	do	"	"		
33	John Ball	do	"	"		
34	Garret Tempe	do	"	"		
35	James Ward	do	"	"		
36	Robert B. Sexton	do	"	"		
37	John Porry	do	"	"		in hospital
38	Saml C. Hampton	do	"	"		on extra duty
39	Moses Wright	do	"	"		
40	John Kendall	do	"	"		
41	John D. Bagby	do	"	"		
42	John Gately	do	"	"		
43	Abram Howard	do	"	"		
44	Thomas Cook	do	"	"		
45	Daniel Waters	do	"	"		
46	Robert Patton	do	"	"		
47	Thomas Swearengen	do	"	"		in hospital
48	John Vincent	do	"	"		

I certify on honor that this muster roll exhibits a true statement of Capt Japhet A. Ball's Company of mounted volunteers of Illinois Militia detached for foot purposes. and that the remarks set opposite their names of the respective men are accurate & just

Signed at the mouth of Fox river in the State of Illinois. Lasalle County this 28th of May 1832

Japhet A. Ball Capt

List from: The Black Hawk War 1831-2, Vol. I - Illinois Volunteers Part Two, pages 218-9 by Ill. State Hist. Soc.

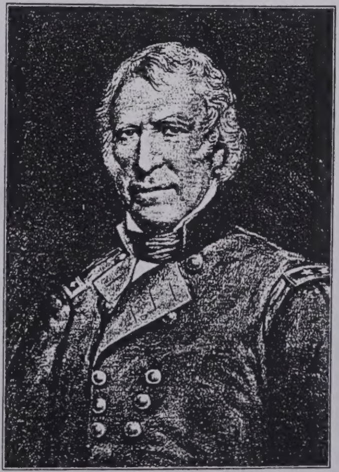
Many of the settlers had vivid memories of atrocities commited during the War of 1812. Some even suspected the British were stirring the Indians to war again. It is a fact that some Indians were hopeful that help would come from Canada; in that they were mistaken. Going on two centuries later, it is hard not to be sorry for Black Hawk and his tragic followers, but in our story we must see things as the settlers saw them. A great many books have been written on the subject, which make interesting reading. Col. Zachary Taylor, then commander at Fort Crawford (in what is now Wisconsin), later a general in the Mexican War, later still US President, was one of the principal military leaders. A mere trooper was later president Abraham Lincoln. None of those people were enlightened enough to see matters from the side of the Indians, nor were the Averills.

The "Battle" did not last long. Private Henry James Cropsey Averill, 22½ years old, who had participated in the military drills at Drennans, started out with a horse, expecting to be part of a cavalry unit, but his company was dismounted for tactical purposes. He spent the spring tramping through woods and mosquitoey swamps trying to espy Indians with very little success. One result of his efforts and those of his companions, is that when spring had passed in 1832, the Bounty Lands Northeast of the Illinois River were safe enough for families to live in.

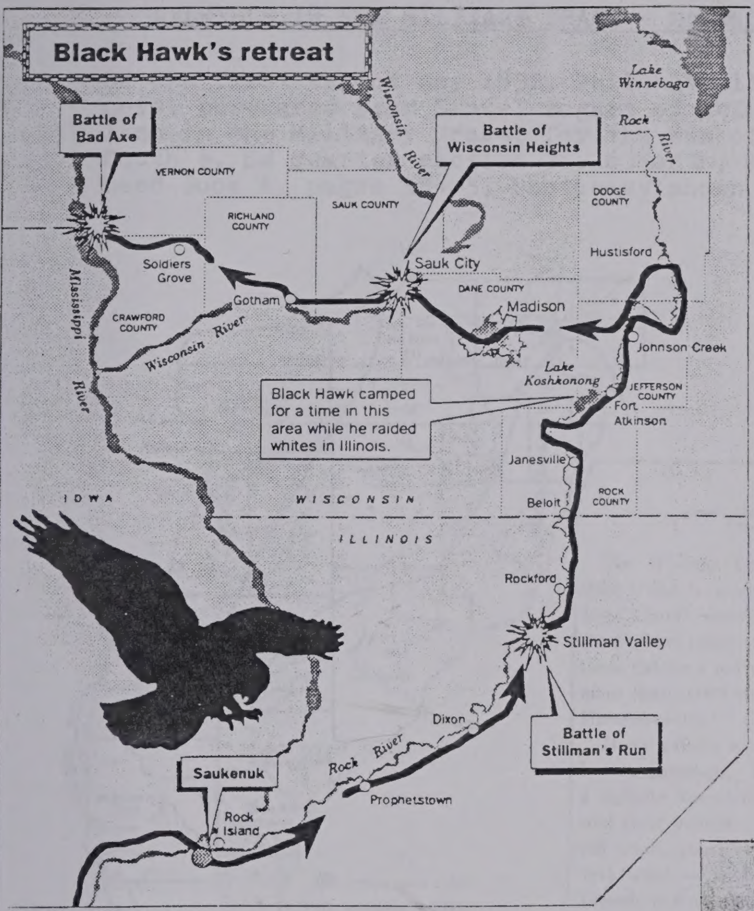
Faragher, in writing about Sugar Creek, cited Zachariah Peter's family as an exception, saying that most of the early settlers who came there in groups of related families stayed on until the area became prosperous with the advent of better farm equipment. Those who came as a single family, he said, usually moved on. The Averills had come as a single family group.

Henry, Philo's oldest surviving son, inherited his ancestors' genes for moving long distances in search of opportunities. Before he settled down to get married he, like Zachary Taylor, went to Texas to see what he could see. The south must not have appealed to him, for he came back temporarily.

Philo, in the meantime, had such optimistic expectations of the outcome of the "war" at hand that ten days after his son left with Captain Ball, he bought acreage up in the Bounty Lands.



COLONEL ZACHARY TAYLOR
Long Commander at Fort Crawford. Later Mexican War hero and President of the United States


Black Hawk's retreat
Battle of Bad Axe
Battle of Wisconsin Heights
Lake Winnebago
Wisconsin River
Rock River
VERNON COUNTY
RICHLAND COUNTY
SAUK COUNTY
DODGE COUNTY
Hustisford
Soldiers Grove
Sauk City
Gotham
DANE COUNTY
Madison
CRAWFORD COUNTY
Wisconsin River
Mississippi River
Johnson Creek
Lake Koshkonong
JEFFERSON COUNTY
Fort Atkinson
Black Hawk camped for a time in this area while he raided whites in Illinois.
Janesville
IOWA
WISCONSIN
Beloit
ROCK COUNTY
ILLINOIS
Rockford
Stillman Valley
Dixon
Battle of Stillman's Run
Saukenuk
Rock River
Prophetstown
Rock Island

Journal graphic by John Pinchard

Victory -END OF CHASE

As THE Army went south to Fort Blue Mounds for rest and supplies. Black Hawk took his weary band north-northwest over the hilly coulee country to the Mississippi River. He hoped to cross the river at a spot 25 miles south of La Crosse, near where the Bad Axe River flows into the Mississippi. The Mississippi is wide here, maybe three miles to Iowa, but except for a main channel, most of the waters are shallow and broken up with islands.

The Indians had no chance. The Army had moved quickly after leaving Fort Blue Mounds. and was at Black Hawk's rear, in the valleys between tall limestone bluffs. To make matters worse, an armed steamboat named Warrior had been ordered up river from Prairie du Chien to stop Black Hawk. The war boat's captain smelled and wanted blood. He would get it. And if some Indians did make it across the river, a war party of Sioux was on the other side eager to kill their old enemies, the Sauk.

On Aug. 1, Black Hawk for the third time tried the white flag. The Warrior steamboat responded by opening fire, cutting down uncounted Indians in and out of the water for two hours. Black Hawk's band had no escape.

Early the next morning Atkinson's 1,300 soldiers and militiamen (reduced from the original 4,500 by discharge and desertion) reached the Bad Axe River. As the sun rose above the bluffs, troops moved south and west, driving the Indians into the water. They killed most of the remaining Indians along the river's edge and in the shrubs on shore. The Sioux got any Sauk who reached the other side.

No one knows how many Indians were killed in the Battle of Bad Axe. It was probably 500 or more. Black Hawk, however, escaped before the final battle with a few followers to the north and was captured three weeks later near Tomah. 35 miles east of La Crosse.

Today the scene of the massacre is a campsite — the Black Hawk Recreation Area — run, ironically, by the Army Corps of Engineers.

Epilogue

IN THE end, only 150 of Black Hawk's band survived. Depending on the account, as many as 1,000 Indians died, from starvation, battles and the massacre at Bad Axe. The rest of the band was disgraced. Their resistance to the whites cost the entire Sauk and Fox nation more land, principally a strip 50 miles wide from Missouri to Minnesota. This cession, known ingloriously as the Black Hawk Purchase, was most of the best tribal land, including rich lead deposits near Dubuque. The war took the lives of 72 white civilians and soldiers.

Black Hawk served almost a year in prison, then went on display along the East Coast. Supposedly the federal government wanted to show the Indian leader how big and powerful the United States was to prevent him from ever trying something again. Six years after the war, he died of old age, on a reservation in Iowa.

Although some soldiers went on to fame — Lincoln, Zachary Taylor, Henry Dodge (Wisconsin's first territorial governor) and Jefferson Davis — there were no white heroes.

Sources: Milwaukee Journal newspaper
15 Sept 1991 and American
Peoples Encyclopedia

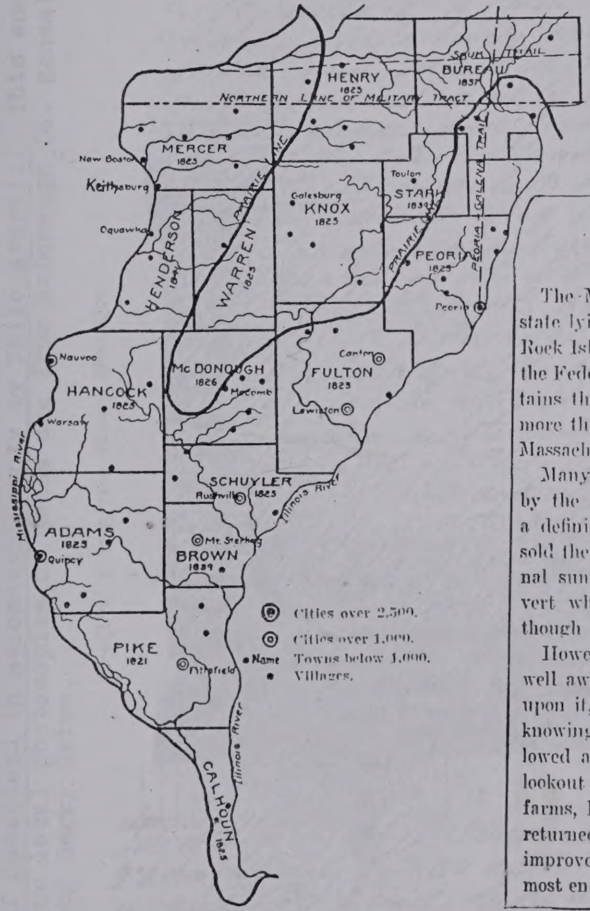
BLACK HAWK, 1767–1838, Sac Indian war chief, born in an Indian village on the Rock River, in Illinois. He formed an early dislike for the Americans, and in the War of 1812 joined the British as leader under Tecumseh. Denouncing the Treaty of 1804 ceding the lands east of the Mississippi River to the United States, he refused to migrate (1823) on the ground that the Indian chiefs were intoxicated at the time of the signing. Forced to withdraw across the Mississippi (1831), he returned at the head of a band of warriors and fought the BLACK HAWK WAR (1832).

ART INSTITUTE OF CHICAGO

Black Hawk Monument, erected at Oregon, Ill., by Lorado Taft, commemorates the Sac Indian Chief

AVERILLS IN THE MILITARY TRACT - McDONOUGH COUNTY, ILLINOIS

On the first day of May 1832, Philo Averill of Sangamon County, Illinois, purchased from Samuel Bogart of McDonough County, a tract of land in the Military Tract, for the sum of $150.00, 160 acres in the South ½, SW quarter section 36, 6 North, 4 West, entered 10 Sep 1832. Deed Book A, pages 134-5. Photocopy shown on the following page.



HENRY 1825
BUREAU 1837
NORTHERN LINE OF MILITARY TRACT
MERCER 1825
New Boston
Keithsburg
Oquawka
HENDERSON 1841
WARREN 1825
PRAIRIE LINE
Galesburg
KNOX 1825
Toulon
STARK 1839
PEORIA 1825
Peoria
PRAIRIE
PEORIA-GALENA TRAIL
SAUK TRAIL
Nauvoo
HANCOCK 1825
Warsaw
McDONOUGH 1826
Macomb
Canton
FULTON 1823
Lewiston
Mississippi River
SCHUYLER 1825
Rushville
Illinois River
ADAMS 1825
Quincy
Mt. Sterling
BROWN 1839
PIKE 1821
Pittsfield
CALHOUN 1825
Illinois River
Cities over 2,500.
Cities over 1,000.
Name Towns below 1,000.
Villages.

THE MILITARY TRACT (1850)

shows the limits of the prairie; less than 20 per cent. woodland. Year indicates date of county organization.

The Military Tract includes most of that portion of the state lying between the Illinois and Mississippi rivers, south of Rock Island county. This territory, which had been set aside by the Federal government for the veterans of the War of 1812, contains thirteen entire counties and parts of three others, in all more than 5,000,000 acres, not far from the area of the state of Massachusetts.[1]

Many grants were made but few were actually settled upon by the grantees. Fearing the toils of pioneer life or lacking a definite knowledge of the value of the lands ceded, many sold their grants, (one hundred and sixty acres each) for nominal sums, considering themselves fortunate when able to convert what seemed visionary wealth into actual wealth, even though it was no more than a cow or a horse.[2]

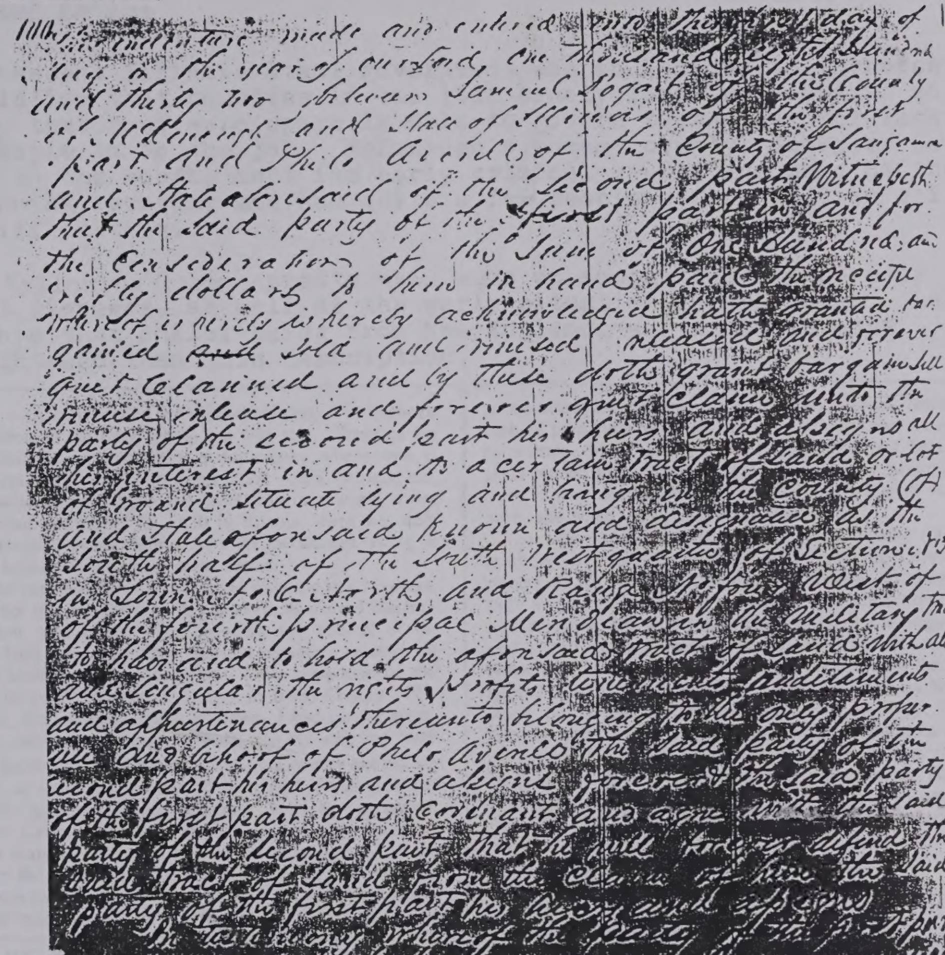
However, the people who resided in Illinois at the time were well aware of the value of the land and proceeded to "squat" upon it, since they were unable to get any valid title to it, not knowing the actual owners. Cultivation by the squatters followed and often trouble came also. Land sharks, ever on the lookout for bargains, watched the increasing value of the farms, hunted up the original owners, bought their claims and returned to Illinois to oust the occupants and profit by their improvements. Forged titles resulted and with these came almost endless chains of entanglements and litigation.

The printed information above is from a University of Wisconsin Bulletin (author Pooley) describing the settlement of Illinois. The map shows status as of 1850 but is important to us because various aspects apply to Averill in-laws as well as to themselves.

As indicated above, the land was considered quite fertile, so that some hopefuls, one supposes mostly from Kentucky, tended to squat there quite early despite very real danger from Indians who had not yet departed.

Purchase of homestead in McDonough County by Philo Averill. This and all the other local photocopies of deeds are from McDonough Co. genealogist Libby Berry Grimm.

McDonough County Deed Book A, p.134-5



This Indenture made and entered into this [illegible] day of [illegible] in the year of our Lord One thousand eight hundred and thirty two between Samuel Bogart of this County of McDonough and State of Illinois of the first part And Philo Averill of the County of Sangamon and State aforesaid of the second part Witnesseth that the said party of the first part for and in the Consideration of the Sum of One hundred and fifty dollars to him in hand paid the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged hath granted bargained and sold and released released and forever quit claimed and by these doth grant bargain sell release and forever quit claim unto the party of the second part his heirs and assigns all the interest in and to a certain tract of land or lot of ground situate lying and being in the County of and State aforesaid known and designated as the North half of the South West quarter of Section [illegible] in Town six North and Range four West of the fourth principal Meridian in the Military tract to have and to hold the aforesaid tract of land with all and singular the rights profits tenements hereditaments and appurtenances thereunto belonging to the only proper use and behoof of Philo Averill the said party of the second part his heirs and assigns forever and the said party of the first part doth covenant and agree with the said party of the second part that he will forever defend the said tract of land from the claim of him the said party of the first part his heirs and assigns

In testimony whereof the party of the first part hath hereunto set his hand and seal the day and year first above written [illegible] (Seal)

Signed sealed and delivered in presence of [illegible]

155

State of Illinois } ss Personally appeared before me
McDonough County } an acting Justice of the peace in and for said County the above named Samuel Bogart who is personally known to said Justice to be the real person who executed the aforesaid deed of conveyance and who then before said Justice acknowledged that he signed sealed and delivered said deed freely and voluntarily for the uses and purposes therein mentioned

Given under my hand and seal this the tenth ~~day~~ of September AD 1832

Robert Cook J P (Seal)

AVERILL FAMILY

The nascent Illinois State government was so anxious to increase population that counties in the 1812 bounty lands were set up so early that most were scarcely able to govern themselves for lack of people to do the job. McDonough's parent county, Schuyler Co. just to the south, kept its early criminal courts and many of the beginning records, and had quite a few people before 1830 in spite of difficulties.

The following item pretty well sums up social customs of many first pioneers, as well as the early situation in McDonough. Let us hope that Philo, being from New England, was a little more enlightened than this description:

> .. A man needed a wife and children. "A bachelor has no business in the Backwoods," it was said. "Imagine the uncomfortableness of inhabiting a log-cabin, where one is obliged to cut wood, clean the room, cook one's victuals, etc. etc." Likewise, a woman needed protection in a world where men controlled everything. In 1820 in Illinois, there was only one case recorded in the census of a single woman trying to maintain a household without a man around.
>
> Within the marriage the husband ruled supreme in all matters. To underscore this relationship, the newlyweds moved immediately to their own house, thus escaping the control of the parents. If land for a new farm was not available nearby, the newlyweds headed toward the frontier. "We were married and came here to live," recalled a pioneer in Bond County. "We didn't *move*, for we had nothing to move. I had an old horse, cow, plow, and some home-made tools, and my wife had some household goods she had made. We had little money but did not need much, as we raised or made all we used." Production and consumption, in a subsistence economy, were not separated. The husband controlled both. In the spring and autumn planting and harvest seasons, all family members worked together in the fields, under the husband's supervision. Boys and girls were expected to turn out for field work from the age of six or seven, and by their mid-teens would be considered full hands. In less hectic times, the children played all they wanted. Inside work, such as preparing food and making clothing, was mostly done by women, while the men and boys hunted and fished. Both sexes tended the animals, and women did the milking. At all times it was clearly the husband who decided what was to be done, and when, how, and who should do it.
>
> The wife's role in decision-making was wholly passive. If conditions became unbearable, however, she might run away. A pioneer in McDonough County, near Peoria, recalled that in 1829 the Indians were still numerous, and often came to their isolated cabin. His wife was terrified of them and begged to return to their earlier homestead twenty miles farther south. Since protection of the family was so clearly his function, the husband refused. Twice while he was away she packed all the household goods, but he returned too soon for her to get away. The third time she had the loaded wagon and two small children as far as the county line before being intercepted. This time she absolutely refused to return, and the family moved south. Four years later, when McDonough County was more heavily settled and the Indians had been expelled, the husband managed to convince her to move back with him. A half-century later the man stated he never regretted the return, though what the wife thought we do not know. *

The UW bulletin previously quoted says that the very first settler in Schuyler County was a New Englander, and that people came from many places besides farther south in Illinois. However, the interior counties filled up much slower. "In McDonough county the settlements at Pennington's Point and Industry in the southern part of the county seem to indicate that the first settlement was made from the counties to the south. Nearly all the pioneers were from Kentucky and Tennessee and it is probable that they followed up the tributaries of the Illinois which flow through Schuyler county. Probably there were not more than sixty voters in the county in 1830."

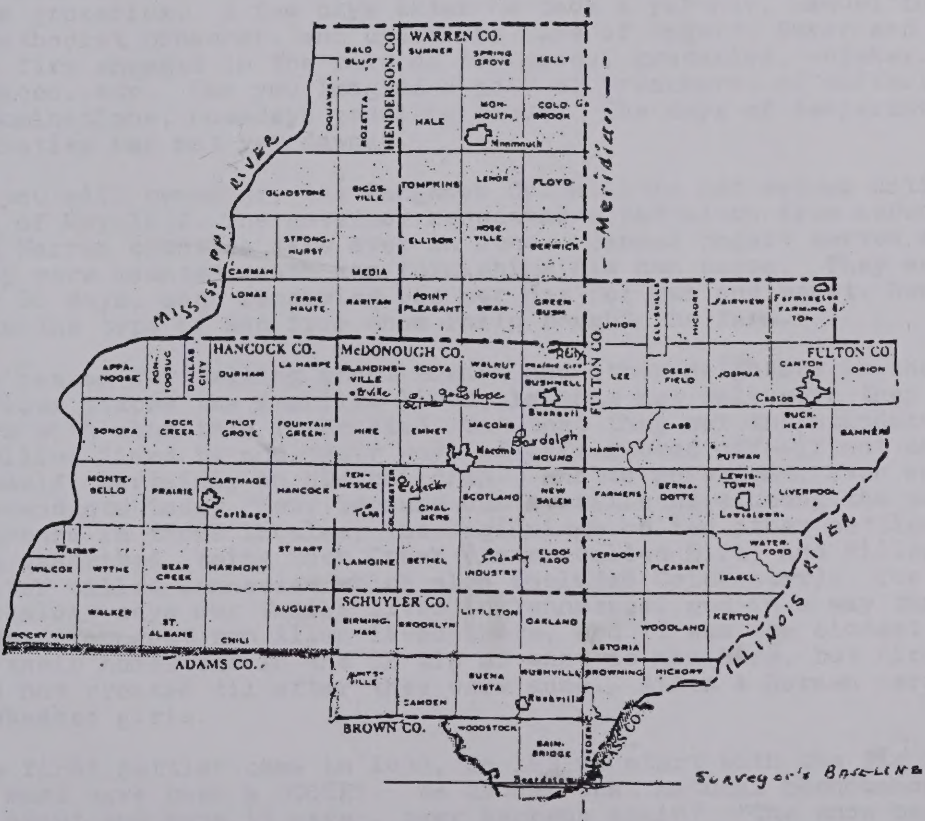
What is now McDonough County, according to the county history,** was when Illinois became a state, part of Madison, then Pike in 1821, then created a county itself in 1826, "when its borders were determined and it was attached to Schuyler County for judicial and recording purposes." Previous to organization of its own court system in 1830, the taxes were assessed and collected by Schuyler.

---

*Illinois, a History by Richard J. Jensen (1978) pages 15-16
**History of McDonough County, Illinois by S. J. Clark (1878) repr. Heritage Books

AVERILL FAMILY

One of the first "acts of our County Commissioners was a request that the authorities of that county furnish them a list of taxes assessed for the coming year, which request was at once complied with." Carter's Settlement, the first in the county, was started in 1826 by William Carter (who before long moved on to Missouri) and Riggs Pennington, first Juatice of the Peace, who also moved on in a few years, winding up in Texas. In 1827 settlers there built a little 18x20 foot two-story blockhouse. The upper story projected out four feet past the lower one on all sides, to avoid being set afire by the Indians. Holes were made in the floor so that an Indian who had come for incendiary purposes could be "gently tapped on the head." Luckily no conflict occurred, but its very presence prevented that. Tribesmen were numerous and not kindly disposed. This was in the SE part of the county bordering Schuyler. Job's Settlement was begun the next spring.


WARREN CO.
HENDERSON CO.
BALD BLUFF
OQUAWKA
ROZETTA
SUMNER
SPRING GROVE
KELLY
HALE
MONMOUTH
Monmouth
COLD BROOK
MISSISSIPPI RIVER
GLADSTONE
BIGGSVILLE
TOMPKINS
LENOX
FLOYD
— Meridian —
STRONGHURST
CARMAN
MEDIA
ELLISON
ROSEVILLE
BERWICK
LOMAX
TERRE HAUTE
RARITAN
POINT PLEASANT
SWAN
GREENBUSH
UNION
ELLISVILLE
HICKORY
FAIRVIEW
FARMINGTON
HANCOCK CO.
McDONOUGH CO.
FULTON CO.
APPANOOSE
PONTOOSUC
DALLAS CITY
DURHAM
LA HARPE
BLANDINSVILLE
B'ville
SCIOTA
Good Hope
WALNUT GROVE
Prairie City
BUSHNELL
Bushnell
LEE
DEERFIELD
JOSHUA
CANTON
Canton
ORION
SONORA
ROCK CREEK
PILOT GROVE
FOUNTAIN GREEN
HIRE
EMMET
MACOMB
Macomb
Bardolph
MOUND
CASS
BUCKHEART
BANNER
PUTMAN
MONTEBELLO
PRAIRIE
CARTHAGE
Carthage
HANCOCK
TENNESSEE
COLCHESTER
Colchester
Tenn
CHALMERS
SCOTLAND
NEW SALEM
FARMERS
BERNADOTTE
LEWISTOWN
Lewistown
LIVERPOOL
Warsaw
WILCOX
WYTHE
BEAR CREEK
HARMONY
ST MARY
LAMOINE
BETHEL
Industry
INDUSTRY
ELDORADO
VERMONT
PLEASANT
ISABEL
WATERFORD
ILLINOIS RIVER
WALKER
ROCKY RUN
ST. ALBANS
CHILI
AUGUSTA
SCHUYLER CO.
BIRMINGHAM
BROOKLYN
LITTLETON
OAKLAND
ASTORIA
WOODLAND
KERTON
ADAMS CO.
HUNTSVILLE
BUENA VISTA
RUSHVILLE
Rushville
BROWNING
HICKORY
CAMDEN
BROWN CO.
WOODSTOCK
BAINBRIDGE
Beardstown
CASS CO.
Surveyor's BASE-LINE

Job's Settlement (present Blandinville TWP) much further north was started almost the same time, and part of it extended into Hire TWP. The Averill homestead was in the extreme SE tip of Hire TWP. The Settlement was started by William Job, his brother, and several brothers-in-law. Though they were happy with their selection of land,

they realized the location was a risky one. Luckily they and some others who came along were warned in time by a friendly brave "who gave alarm by stating that a band of hostile Indians was coming their way and they had better leave." They went back to Morgan Co. for a while.

Macomb, the county seat, was started in spring 1829 by an Elias McFadden and several others, the one we are most interested in being Samuel Bogart, the man who sold Philo the farm. A log courthouse was built there in 1831. By the time court convened on August 7th, Samuel was one of the three justices of the peace.

In April 1831 John Baker, a Baptist minister, received a tavern license, paying $6.50 for it, and a scale of prices for inn-keeping was posted, even lower than prices in Pope Co. and Vevay. He also sold groceries. A few days later he took a partner, Samuel Bogart, a Methodist preacher, and under the name of Bogart, Baker and Company the firm engaged in the sale of dry goods, groceries, whiskey, tobacco, etc. Can you imagine a pair of preachers, of differing denominations, nowadays peddling booze? The days of temperance societies had not yet dawned.

As you will remember, the Sangamon Co. militia had served until the end of May 1832. The governor requested a battalion from McDonough and Warren counties take over in June. Samuel Bogart served as Major. They were mounted, each man furnishing his own horse. They were out for 86 days, each receiving 86¢ per day for man and beast. Now you know the type of man from whom Philo bought the farm.

The reason for telling about Bogart and other neighbors in the various places the Averills lived, is that not only were they neighbors with whom they interacted, but that they set the standards our families lived by and their ways of life rubbed off--if not on Philo himself, certainly on his children. And to an extent, even on us descendants today. Now, because our Averills were among the early pioneers in those locales, the beginnings of two other settlements are described, being Rock Creek (later called Hire) and Hillsgrove (later called Tennessee which also included Colchester). The Averill genealogy says our family lived in Tennessee, and in a way that is true. Youngest son Allen lived there, and it was the closest village to their homestead in the SE tip of what is now Hire, but Hire TWP was not created til after they were gone. Allen & Norman married Tennessee girls.

The first settler came in 1830, so let us start with the Big Snow. It must have been a DOOZEY. We wonder what natural phenomenon brought it about and hope it never, ever happens again! "The snow began to fall the night of 29 December and continued for three days and nights until it reached an average depth of about four feet, drifting as high as 18 or 20 feet. The depth remained at four feet about three months. All kinds of wild game starved to death.

The first settler in Hillsgrove, Roswell Tyrrell, was born in western Connecticut but moved to Ohio in childhood. He was only 14 when the War of 1812 broke out, but 16 when he joined up during a crisis. Later he discovered there was some irregularity in his discharge papers, so he walked all the way to Washington DC to get the matter straightened out, so anxious was he to receive bounty land. Determined to get his land, he took off for Illinois far too early to be practical, so he stayed in Madison County for four years and Fulton for one, during which time he married. Leaving his family behind, in 1830 he entered land in Section 26 of what later became Tennessee TWP, cleared some land and built a cabin, and went back to get his family. But by the time they were ready the Big Snow started and they didn't get back until spring.

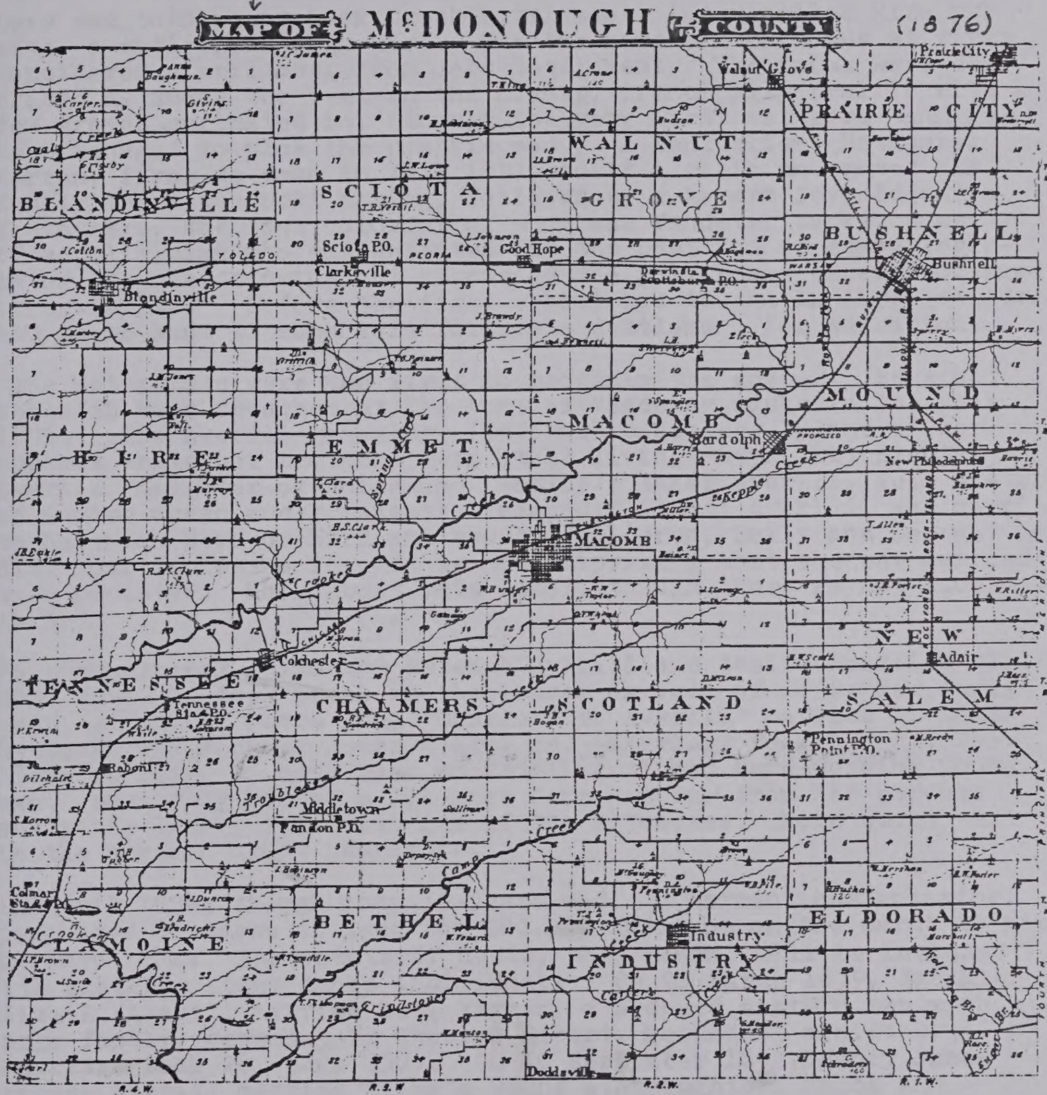
For a whole year they were in the wilderness alone, until 1832 when James Fulkerson and family settled on the quarter section next door. On the first day they got there, they were preparing to set up a campsite, having no other shelter, and cook a noonday meal, when their dogs began to bark, and looking about were alarmed to see a large black bear which took off with the dogs after it. Soon their dogs were joined by those of the Tyrrells, and the bear fought ferociously and tore some of the dogs in a terrible manner. Fulkerson followed and managed to kill the creature with his shotgun. After he wangled his prize back to camp, dressed and weighed, it brought the beam down at 200 lbs. This turned out to be the only bear killed in the county.

When Tyrrell's dogs returned home, he discovered that they were badly torn. Being ignorant of what had occurred and supposing it was caused by his neighbors' dogs, he was somewhat offended; but "on receiving a huge chunk of the bear's meat and learning the particulars of the killing, he was satisfied." Tyrrell was an extremely earnest, moral, hardworking person, though he was not a church member and had treated Sunday as any other day, being in the wilderness. On becoming good friends with the new neighbors, who were devout Methodists, his family stopped working on Sundays "so as not to hurt the Fulkersons' feelings."

Fulkerson came there from Washington County, Tennessee, joined not long after by a number of Methodists from the same place. This was very important to our Averill family, for they included the Clayton family who came with Rev. James King, a Methodist preacher, in a two-family group from Jonesboro, East Tennessee, camping out under the stars all the way, with the good reverend preaching the gospel whenever they came to a settlement, and holding forth daily services with only the two families present the rest of the time, rain or shine. The Claytons are our ancestors so a great deal more will be told about them later. They entered land in Section 25 near the Tyrrells and Fulkersons, for he was a War of 1812 veteran. Our Norman and brother Allen both married Clayton daughters.

Hillsgrove got its name from a Mr. Hill who established a post office there. The evangelist Rev. Peter Cartwright preached sometimes at the Fulkerson home before churches were built. (See page 152.)

AVERILL FAMILY


MAP OF
McDONOUGH
COUNTY
BLANDINVILLE
SCIOTA
WALNUT GROVE
PRAIRIE CITY
BUSHNELL
HIRE
EMMET
MACOMB
MOUND
TENNESSEE
CHALMERS
SCOTLAND
NEW SALEM
LAMOINE
BETHEL
INDUSTRY
ELDORADO
Walnut Grove
Prairie City
Sciota P.O.
Clarksville
Good Hope
Scottsburg P.O.
Blandinville
Bushnell
Bardolph
New Philadelphia
Macomb
Colchester
Tennessee Sta & P.O.
Adair
Pennington Point P.O.
Middletown
Fandon P.O.
Colmar Sta & P.O.
Industry
Doddsville
Crooked Creek
Troublesome Creek
Camp Creek
Grindstone
R.4.W.
R.3.W.
R.2.W.
R.1.W.

(1876)

Sec 36

Philo and Norman Averill's homesteads were in SW¼ Sec 36, Hire TWP. Charlotte (Averill) Teas lived in Sec 34 nearby. Henry and Eliza's Warren in-laws lived in Sec 33, Emmet TWP. Norman & Allen's in-laws, William Willis & Martha (Vest) Clayton's homestead was in Sec 25, Tennessee TWP. Allen lived in Tennessee village. Electa (Averill) Hurd probably lived in Sec 12, Colchester, at least her widower did.

Less was told about Rock Creek settlement, later called Hire TWP after a citizen, George Hire. The far northern part was at first considered a spillover from Jobs Settlement. The farms were described as among the best in the county, principally prairie with a few groves sprinkled in. (Though the very first settlers could not have managed to plow the prairie sod.) A Kentuckian, Nathaniel Herron, first to come in fall 1827, built a cabin and moved his family there the next spring, followed by a Robert Seybold and a few others, the most colorful of whom was Vandever Banks, somewhat of a politician who was defeated for the position of state legislator "by the throwing out of one of the poll books because of some irregularity." Before the first school was taught in 1838, children had to be sent to some more fortunate settlement for education.

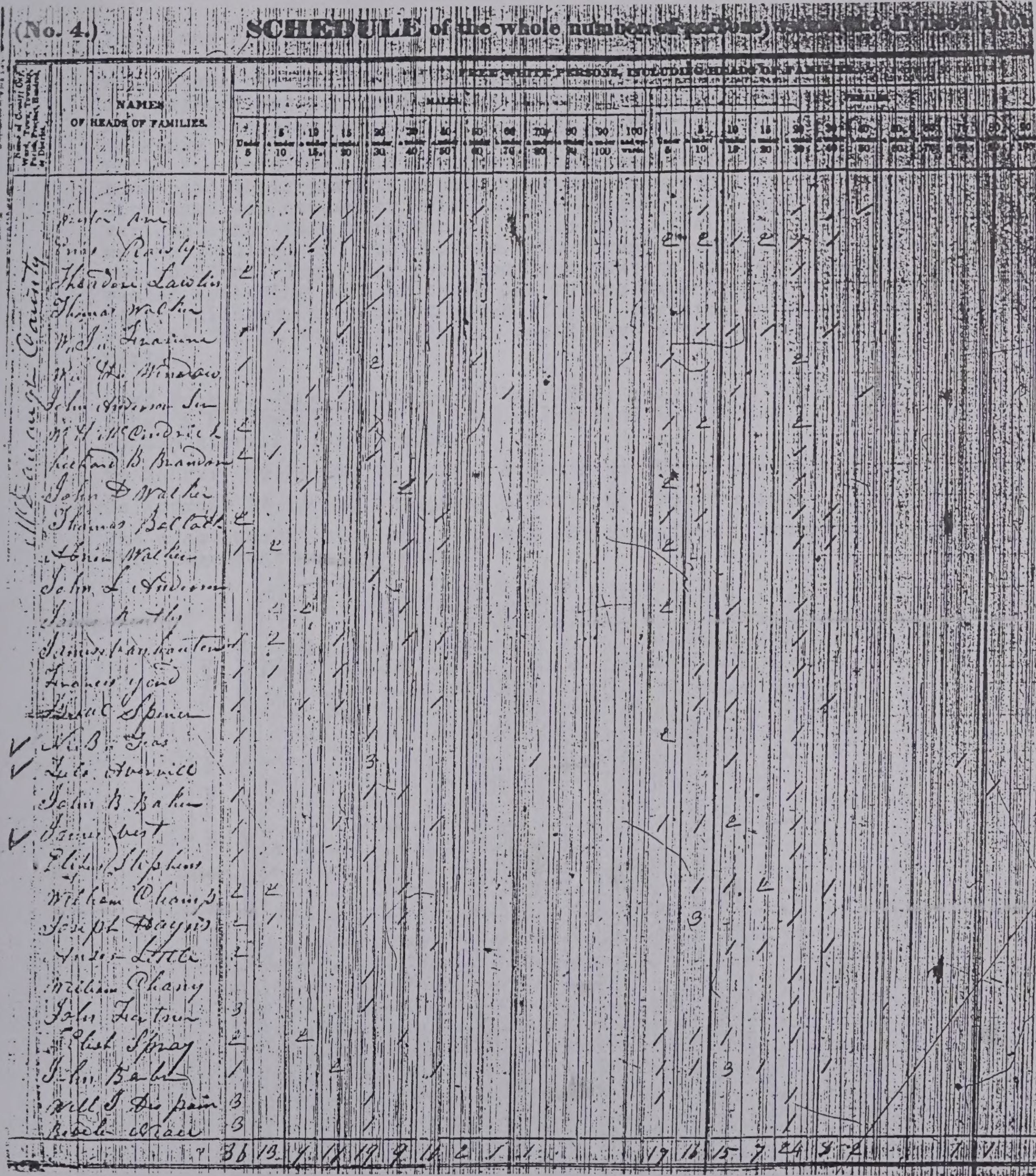
"The Methodists were the first to proclaim the gospel. Reverend Nehemiah Hurd preached at the home of Vandever Banks in the year 1836." The Averill genealogy (informed doubtless by one of her nephews while her brothers were still living) says that Electa Averill, daughter of Philo and Charlotte Baker Averill, full sister of Rowlen Green and Elizabeth (later Gilliland) Averill, was married to Nehemiah Herd or Hurd and had two children, Emily and George, and died near Tennessee IL. It is not surprising that she was married to a minister. More about this later, though there is not much to tell.

It appears that Philo and Rebekah Averill and their unmarried children moved to Rock Creek in the summer or fall of 1832, for early next spring, 07 March 1833 "Charlott B. Averill" married Nicholas R. Teas. ceremony by James Clarke JP, (Marriage Book 4, page 28). Nicholas seems to have been an intelligent and hard-working young man. When they bought a 160-acre farm not far from her parents six years later, Philo was one of the witnesses. More about that in the section about Charlotte.

In April 1834, though only 19-years old, Norman, our ancestor, purchased 80 acres of land for $80.00, adjacent on the north to his parents' home. Photostats of deeds, when shown, will be included with sketches about those individuals. On 20 March 1839, daughter Eliza D. Averill married Levi Warren, a widowed eastern man with a large family, ceremony by Charles Hobart, Methodist minister. (Marriage Book 28, page 330). On 10 September 1840, Henry James Cropsey Averill married Eliza's young stepdaughter, Hulda Ann Warren (Marriage Book 36 page 397).

The 1840 census apparently was taken before Henry's marriage, for page 215, line 19, McDonough Co., shows "Filo" Averill with three males between 20 & 30 (Allen, Norman & Henry), a girl between 10 and 15 who might be Emily Hurd, a grand-daughter, and man and woman between 70 & 80, (Philo and Rebecah--who was only 65 but probably looked older). Nicholas and Charlotte Teas are shown next door with a little boy and two little girls. Two doors away on the other side was James Vest, Norman's future wife's uncle, another of those "Tennessee Methodists."

1840 US Census, McDonough Co. IL Page 215



(No. 4.) **SCHEDULE** of the whole number of persons) within the division allot

FREE WHITE PERSONS, INCLUDING HEADS OF FAMILIES.

MALES. FEMALES.

NAMES OF HEADS OF FAMILIES.

McDonough County

	NAMES OF HEADS OF FAMILIES.
	[illegible] Ame
	[illegible] Rawly
	Theodore Lawlin
	Thomas Walker
	W. J. Grarune
	Wm. H. Windsor
	John Anderson Sr
	Wm H McKendrick
	Richard B. Brandon
	John D Walker
	Thomas Bellack
	Lorin Walker
	John L Anderson
	[illegible] Neatly
	James Vankouten
	Francis Yond
	[illegible] Spencer
✓	N. B. Geas
✓	Lute. Averill
	John B Baker
✓	Isaac West
	Elih. Stephens
	William Champ
	Joseph Haynes
	James Little
	William Chaney
	John Tatum
	Eliab Spray
	John Baker
	Will J. Dupain
	Beadle Wade

7 36 13 4 11 19 9 14 2 1 1 17 12 15 7 24 8 2 1 1

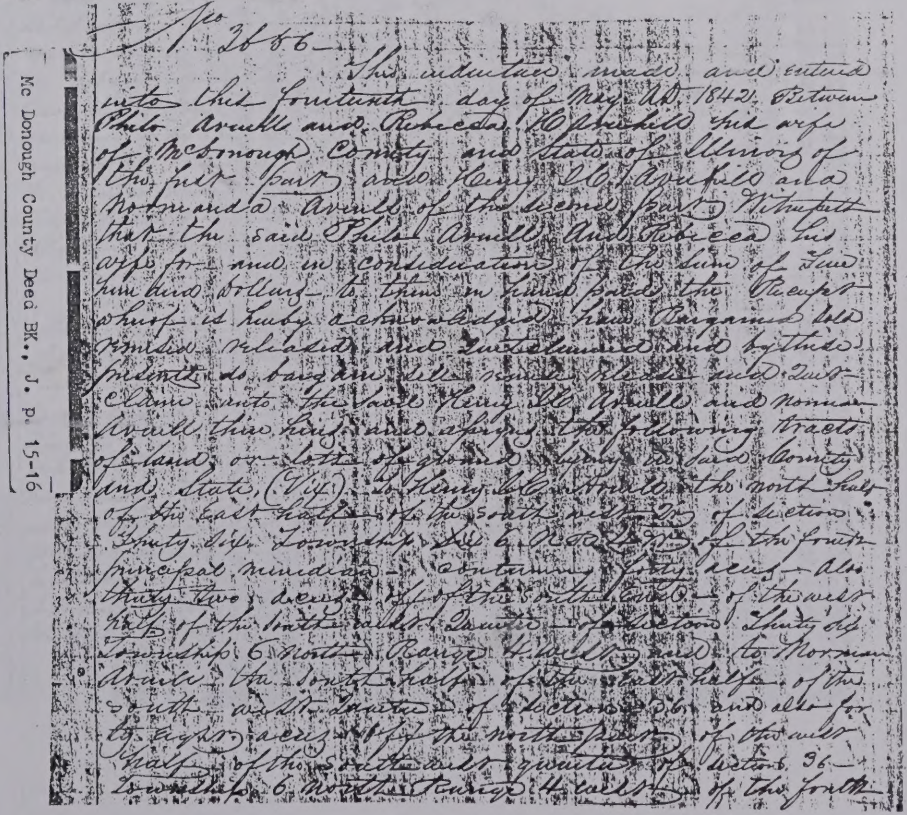
Philo and Rebecah were getting elderly by the time that census was taken. With no daughters left at home, the young grand-daughter would have been a tremendous help. Presumably Allen and Norman, and perhaps Henry, would probably have been doing the farm work, for Philo was getting on. On 14 May 1842 it was decided to sell the farm to Henry and Norman, who had accumulated some cash. Considering that Philo had paid just $150.00 for it ten years before, the $500.00 the sons paid their parents sounds high but in truth it was a bargain. Rich land was now under cultivation, housing much improved, with various other farm structures. Which son, if either, got the house was not spelled out, but Norman, who already owned 160 acres of his own adjacent, logically received land next to his own. If the parents wanted something to meet their own future expenses or to pass on to other children, the amount sounds fair; compared to what farms were selling for in the vicinity, it would have sold for more on the open market.

Deed Book J, Page 15, dated 14 May 1842, shows that Philo and Rebecca H. Averill sold the following land to Henry J.C. Averill and Norman Averill, for $500.00

To Henry: N½ E½ SW¼ 40 acres & South W½ SW¼ 32 acres; all Sec 36 6N4W

To Norman: S½ E½ SW¼ 40 acres & North W½ SW¼ 48 acres; ditto

The exact amount each son paid was not specified. Photostat follows this page continued to next.

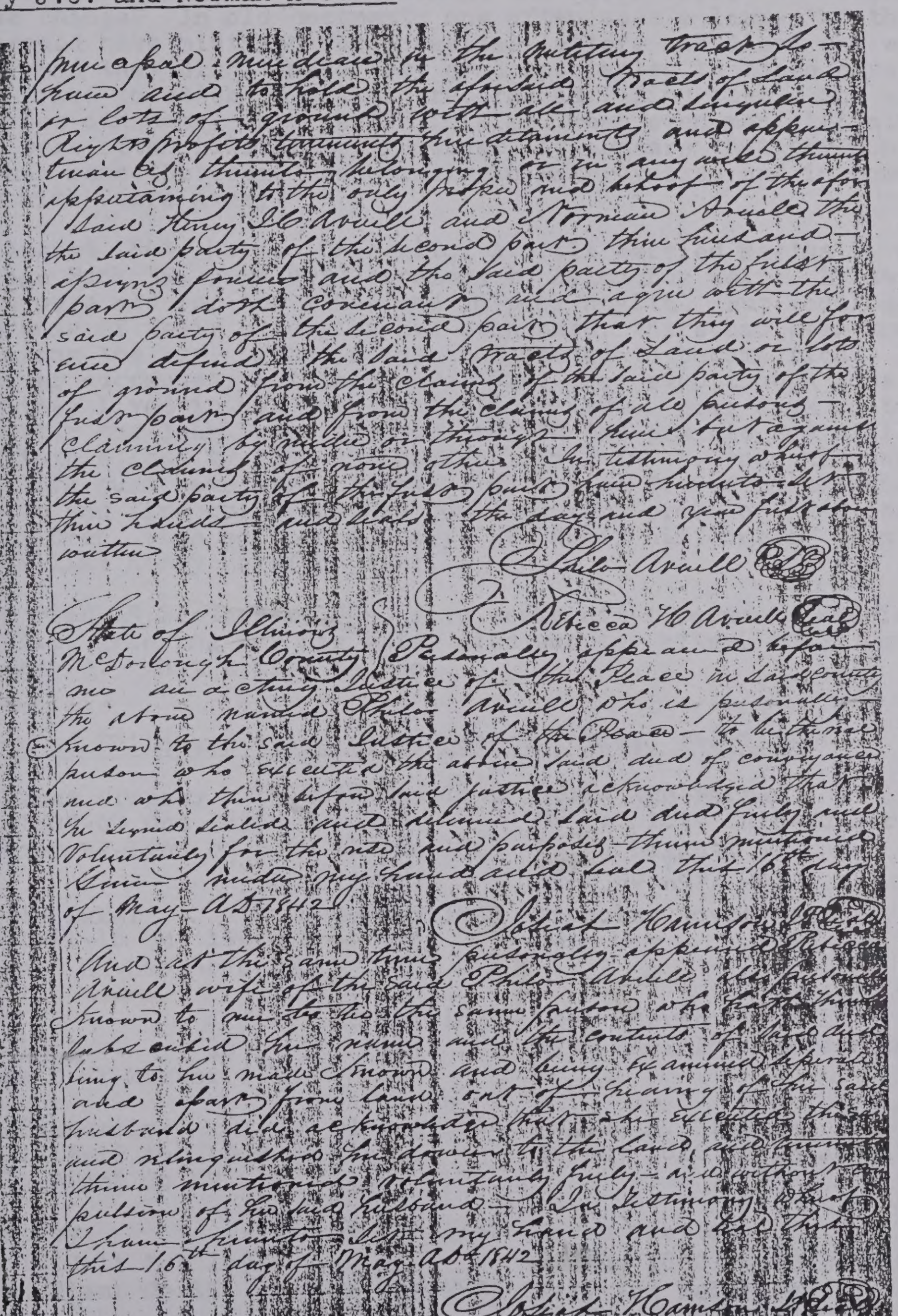


Mc Donough County Deed BK., J. p. 15-16

No 2686 —

This indenture made and entered into this fourteenth day of May AD 1842 Between Philo Averill and Rebecca H Averill his wife of McDonough County and State of Illinois of the first part and Henry J C Averill and Norman Averill of the second part Witnesseth that the said Philo Averill and Rebecca his wife for and in consideration of the sum of five hundred Dollars to them in hand paid the Receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged have Bargained sold remised released and Quitclaimed and by these presents do bargain sell remise release and Quit-Claim unto the said Henry J C Averill and Norman Averill their heirs and assigns the following tracts of land or lotts of ground lying in said County and State (Viz) to Henry J C Averill the north half of the East half of the south west qr of Section Thirty Six Township No 6 N R 4 W of the fourth principal meridian containing forty acres Also thirty two acres off of the south end of the west half of the South west Quarter of Section Thirty six Township 6 North Range 4 West and to Norman Averill the south half of the East half of the south west Quarter of Section 36 and also forty eight acres off of the north part of the west half of the South west quarter of Section 36 Township 6 North Range 4 West of the fourth

Continuation, deed of sale - Philo and Rebecca H. Averill to sons, Henry J.C. and Norman Averill



[illegible] mentioned in the [illegible] tract To
have and to hold the aforesaid tracts of Land
or lots of ground with all and singular
Rights profits tenements hereditaments and appur-
tenances thereunto belonging or in any wise there
appertaining to the only proper use and behoof of the afore
said Henry J.C. Averill and Norman Averill the
the said party of the second part their heirs and
assigns forever and the said party of the first
part doth covenant and agree with the
said party of the second part that they will for
ever defend the said tracts of Land or lots
of ground from the claims of the said party of the
first part and from the claims of all persons
claiming by under or through them but against
the claims of none other In testimony whereof
the said party of the first part have hereunto set
their hands and seals the day and year first above
written

Philo Averill (Seal)

Rebecca H Averill (Seal)

State of Illinois }
McDonough County } Personally appeared before
me an acting Justice of the Peace in said County
the above named Philo Averill who is personally
known to the said Justice of the Peace to be the real
person who executed the above said deed of conveyance
and who then before said justice acknowledged that
he signed sealed and delivered said deed freely and
voluntarily for the uses and purposes therein mentioned
Given under my hand and seal this 16th day
of May AD 1842

Josiah Hamilton J.P. (Seal)

And at the same time personally appeared Rebecca
Averill wife of the said Philo Averill also personally
known to me to be the same person who hath there
subscribed her name and the contents of said deed
being to her made known and being examined separate
and apart from and out of hearing of her said
husband did acknowledge that she executed the same
and relinquished her dower to the land and tenements
therein mentioned voluntarily freely and without com-
pulsion of her said husband In testimony whereof
I have hereunto set my hand and seal this
this 16th day of May AD 1842

Josiah Hamilton J.P. (Seal)

Earlier legal documents referred to Three-Great Grandma as Rebekah or as Rebecah, but in this last document the clerk copied it Rebecca H. Why the change? In old documents one often sees a large "h" that the clerk could have mistaken for a capital letter, and also, she was elderly and they didn't make very good spectacles in those days. I have tried to stick to written records as I find them. She always signed her own name, in a period in time when even men, let alone women, were often illiterate. However, it appears that her sons spelt her name "Rebecca," especially in later years, and in communication with Clara Avery.

On 01 August 1844, Norman Chancellor Averill married Martha E. Clayton (Marriage Book 59, page 495) ceremony by Felmachus Weir. By then his parents were old for the times and in poor health. But looking back, though some of their struggles had been hard, there had been many adventures along the way. Perhaps they had wanted to become rich. If so, they never succeeded, but they were never poor even though some of the places they lived in had been rather primitive. Boom days of bumper crops after the John Deere tractor tackled the prairie sod still lay in the future, but by 1844 the hardest times in the community were long past. Life must have been pleasant, with nice Methodist neighbors to chum with and fine children they could be very proud of, and beautiful grandchildren, with more on the way. To humor him, one of them had been named William Henry Harrison Averill.

Rebecca died 09 September 1844, five weeks after Norman's wedding, age 69. Philo, grieving for his wife, died shortly after, on 22 October 1844, age 76. What a life he led!

Children of Philo and third wife, Rebecca (Rice) Averill:

Henry James Cropsey 20 Jul 1809-04 Oct 1897 Stillwater NY-Lynn OR	1- 10 Sep 1840 IL 2- 01 Jan 1861 OR	Hulda Ann Warren 02 Oct 1824 Ohio-20 Apr 1859 OR Sarah Liggett 1816 MO-1897 OR
Charlotte Baker Feb 1811-16 Oct 1901 Saratoga C NY-Neosho C KS	07 Mar 1833 IL	Nicholas Royal Teas 1812 IL - KS
Eliza 1813- 18 Saratoga C NY-Mercer C IL	10 Mar 1839 IL	Levi Warren 1798 Mass-18 Mercer Co IL
+Norman Chancellor 11 Jan 1815-12 Feb 1902 Vevay IN-Miami Co KS	01 Aug 1844 IL	Martha E. Clayton 10 Oct 1822 VA-03 Jan 1908 KS
Allen Wiley 04 Feb 1817-11 Feb 1891 Vevay IN-Miami Co KS (reburied IL)	1- 07 Jan 1847 IL 2- 20 Apr 1853 IL	Sarah Clayton 10 Aug 1830 TN-22 Dec 1851 IL Mary Ann Delbridge 26 Jun 1828 OH-26 Dec 1892 IL

AVERILL FAMILY

Since our descent is through the second youngest son, Norman Chancellor Averill, his siblings will be told about first. The little that is known about Malissa, Orilla, Rowlen Green and Elizabeth has already been related.

A mystery man, Patterson Averill, mentioned nowhere in the genealogy, should be mentioned next for the sake of thoroughness. On 24 Nov 1841 he was married to Martha Moore by A. Fulkerson, JP (Book 43, page 361). Fulkerson, a fellow Methodist, probably knew our family; nevertheless, I wonder if he wrote the last name correctly or if he scribbled. The entry has now been transcribed into various state records. On 11 Mar 1846, Patterson Aber was married to Mrs. Ann Jones by Robert R. Bean, JP (Book 69, page 591), who also lived in Hillsgrove. My guess, for what it is worth, is that this was the same man's second marriage, spelled correctly by Bean.

Electa Averill, youngest? daughter of Philo and Charlotte Baker Averill, was born about 1795, for she was married to Nehemiah Hurd before the family moved west in 1813. There were four Hurd families listed in the 1810 census index for Saratoga Co NY--Samuel, Philo, and Rosavel plus N. Hurd over 45. Nehemiah must have been son of one of these, perhaps the last. There had been Hurd families in Litchfield Co CT, some of whom intermarried with Cogswells, and a contingent of both families moved to Sandgate, Vermont (See map page 75, arrow #4), straight east of Saratoga Co NY, which by then was a more prosperous locale. Though no effort has been made to confirm this, it is possible Nehemiah was Electa's distant cousin through the Cogswell line.

It seems as though the young couple must have moved to western New York, perhaps to Onondaga Co., thence south to Pennsylvania, maybe through Steuben Co. NY, for their daughter Emily was born in PA about 1827/8. There may have been other children, but only George and Emily are known at this time. PA records have not been searched. They came to McDonough Co IL to be near Electa's family about 1832/3 but she died a couple of years after their arrival.

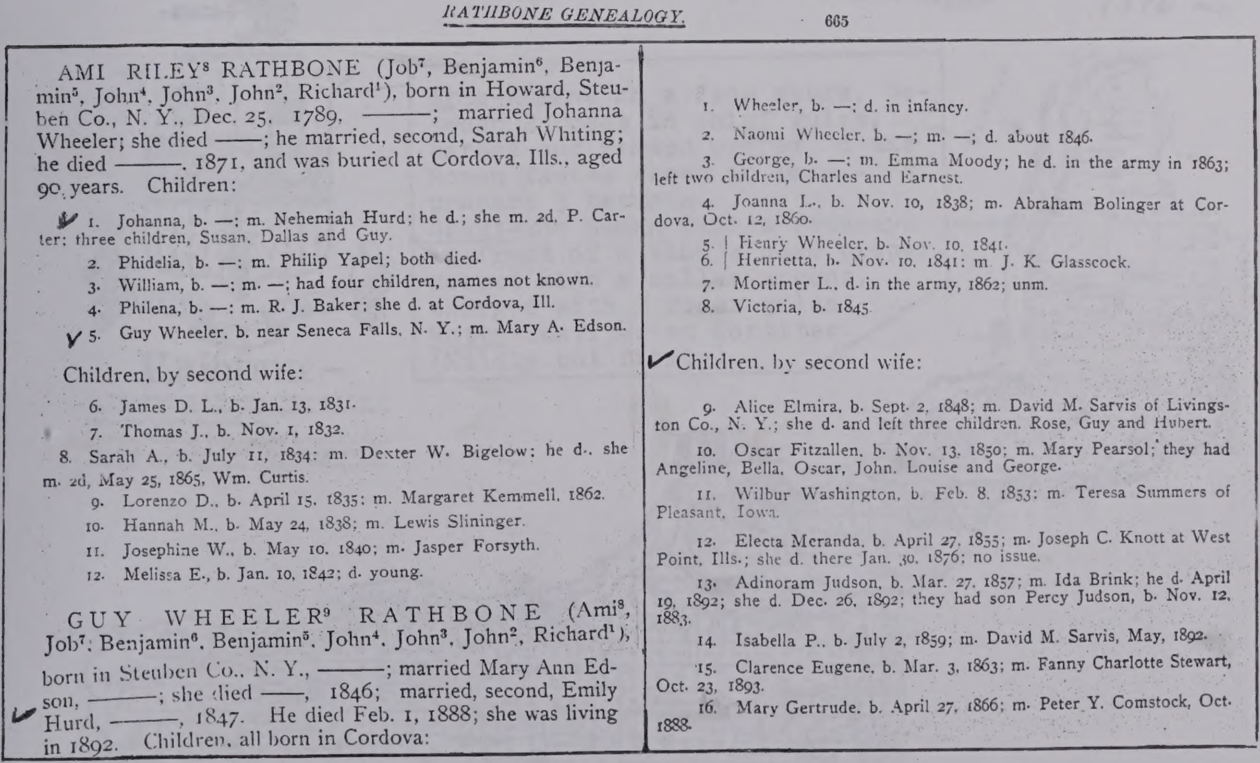
The Averill genealogy says Electa was married to Nehemiah Hurd and had two children, George who seems to have died rather young, and Emily who married a "Geny Rathburn" (taken by Avery, page 560, to mean "Eugene") and was living in IL in 1891. Electa, it was said, died near Tennessee IL. She may have been dead by 1836, when the county history called Nehemiah a Methodist minister "preaching at the home of Vandever Banks" in Rock Creek/Hire TWP. The conversion to Methodism must have come about somewhere on the frontier. He managed to dodge all census-takers in Illinois. Genealogist Libby Grimm in Macomb IL was a big help in providing land records, as follows:

On 13 July 1836 (Book C pg 119) N. Hurd & Jesse Neece purchased from Wm. P. Richards the W ½Sec 12 in what is now Colchester 5N4W, then Hillsgrove/Tennessee. On 31 Oct 1837 Nehemiah Hurd and Joanna L., his wife, sold half of it (80 acres) to Jefferson Welch who the same day mortgaged it back to them for $1016.09. On 29 Mar 1850 (Bk N, pg 439) JCD Carmack mortgaged the land, ½W½ to Administrator of N. Hurd. In other words, Nehemiah was now deceased.

So who was Johanna L. Hurd? That didn't sound like Electa, and it wasn't, but it was necessary to make sure. Thank you, Clara Avery, for supplying a clue, for I lucked out again. She was Johanna Rathbone. Though no Hurd genealogy I have found mentions Nehemiah, the Rathbone genealogy, crumbling with age, was found on the shelf in Madison WI, where friends and I drive to do research from time to time.

Emily Hurd's husband, "Geny Rathburn," was not Eugene. He was Guy Rathbone, descended, it is said, from a Richard Rathbone bca 1574 who married Marion Whipple, sister of our own Matthew Whipple living in Ipswich at the same time as William Averill the first. The Whipples are our Averill ancestors through the Cogswell line. Small world, isn't it? 1850 and 1870 census searches of Rock Island Co. IL confirm what the Rathbone genealogy says about Emily Hurd's children, and add that she was born ca 1827/8 in PA. Cordova IL is on the Mississippi River at the far north tip of the county, not in the urban area to the south.

As one can deduce by reading the following, Guy Rathbone married his older sister Johanna's stepdaughter, Emily Hurd, and Emily named a daughter (Guy's child #12) Electa after her own mother. Ordinarily this book will not list grandchildren of siblings of those in our direct line, but this is a special case.



RATHBONE GENEALOGY. 665

AMI RILEY^{8} RATHBONE (Job^{7}, Benjamin^{6}, Benjamin^{5}, John^{4}, John^{3}, John^{2}, Richard^{1}), born in Howard, Steuben Co., N. Y., Dec. 25. 1789, ———; married Johanna Wheeler; she died ——; he married, second, Sarah Whiting; he died ———. 1871, and was buried at Cordova, Ills., aged 90 years. Children:

✓ 1. Johanna, b. —; m. Nehemiah Hurd; he d.; she m. 2d. P. Carter; three children, Susan, Dallas and Guy.

2. Phidelia, b. —; m. Philip Yapel; both died.

3. William, b. —; m. —; had four children, names not known.

4. Philena, b. —; m. R. J. Baker; she d. at Cordova, Ill.

✓ 5. Guy Wheeler, b. near Seneca Falls, N. Y.; m. Mary A. Edson.

Children, by second wife:

6. James D. L., b. Jan. 13, 1831.

7. Thomas J., b. Nov. 1, 1832.

8. Sarah A., b. July 11, 1834; m. Dexter W. Bigelow; he d., she m. 2d, May 25, 1865, Wm. Curtis.

9. Lorenzo D., b. April 15. 1835; m. Margaret Kemmell, 1862.

10. Hannah M., b. May 24, 1838; m. Lewis Slininger.

11. Josephine W., b. May 10. 1840; m. Jasper Forsyth.

12. Melissa E., b. Jan. 10, 1842; d. young.

GUY WHEELER^{9} RATHBONE (Ami^{8}, Job^{7}, Benjamin^{6}, Benjamin^{5}, John^{4}, John^{3}, John^{2}, Richard^{1}), born in Steuben Co., N. Y., ———; married Mary Ann Edson, ———; she died ——, 1846; married, second, Emily ✓ Hurd, ———, 1847. He died Feb. 1, 1888; she was living in 1892. Children, all born in Cordova:

1. Wheeler, b. —; d. in infancy.

2. Naomi Wheeler, b. —; m. —; d. about 1846.

3. George, b. —; m. Emma Moody; he d. in the army in 1863; left two children, Charles and Earnest.

4. Joanna L., b. Nov. 10, 1838; m. Abraham Bolinger at Cordova, Oct. 12, 1860.

5. | Henry Wheeler, b. Nov. 10, 1841.
6. | Henrietta, b. Nov. 10, 1841; m. J. K. Glasscock.

7. Mortimer L., d. in the army, 1862; unm.

8. Victoria, b. 1845.

✓ Children, by second wife:

9. Alice Elmira, b. Sept. 2, 1848; m. David M. Sarvis of Livingston Co., N. Y.; she d. and left three children. Rose, Guy and Hubert.

10. Oscar Fitzallen, b. Nov. 13, 1850; m. Mary Pearsol; they had Angeline, Bella, Oscar, John. Louise and George.

11. Wilbur Washington, b. Feb. 8. 1853; m. Teresa Summers of Pleasant, Iowa.

12. Electa Meranda, b. April 27, 1855; m. Joseph C. Knott at West Point, Ills.; she d. there Jan. 30. 1876; no issue.

13. Adinoram Judson, b. Mar. 27. 1857; m. Ida Brink; he d. April 19, 1892; she d. Dec. 26, 1892; they had son Percy Judson, b. Nov. 12, 1883.

14. Isabella P., b. July 2, 1859; m. David M. Sarvis, May, 1892.

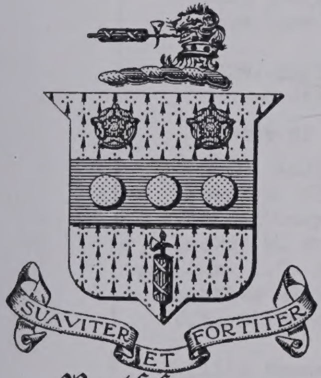
15. Clarence Eugene, b. Mar. 3, 1863; m. Fanny Charlotte Stewart, Oct. 23, 1893.

16. Mary Gertrude, b. April 27, 1866; m. Peter Y. Comstock, Oct. 1888.

Having only so recently discovered the Rathbones, no in-depth search has been made. They quickly left Ipswich for Rhode Island. McDonough Co. Deed Book indexes, Book A:343, date not mentioned, show that Charles Teas sold land to "Amie R. Rathbun," so he must have been there for some brief period. Maybe some of them were in other townships, but anyhow Emmet Pioneers show the following:

Nathan Rathburn of Maumie City, Lucas Co. OH bought and sold land in Sec 5 during 1840. (Maumie is a little SW of Toledo at the west tip of Lake Erie, a logical stop on the way for a pioneer from NY or NW PA to take.) Later Harriet Rathburn m. 22 July 1858 Joseph B. Overton--permission by Hannah Rathburn. Lastly, Jane Rathburn age 13, was living in Stephen Gillihan household in Sciota TWP, 1860 census. Early people probably confused folk by pronouncing both Rathbone and Rathburn as Rathbun!

Nehemiah Hurd seems to have dodged every census-taker during his lifetime, but in 1820 in Steuben Co. dwelt an Aaron Hurd, and in nearby Tioga an Abraham, Ambrose in Saratoga, Anthony in Jefferson. The same year in northwest PA were George and Randolph in Venango and Isaac in Beaver Co bordering on Ohio. Emily was born 1828 or so in Pennsylvania. Nehemiah might have followed a route west similar to Nathan Rathbun's. We don't know.


SUAVITER
ET
FORTITER

Rathbone-

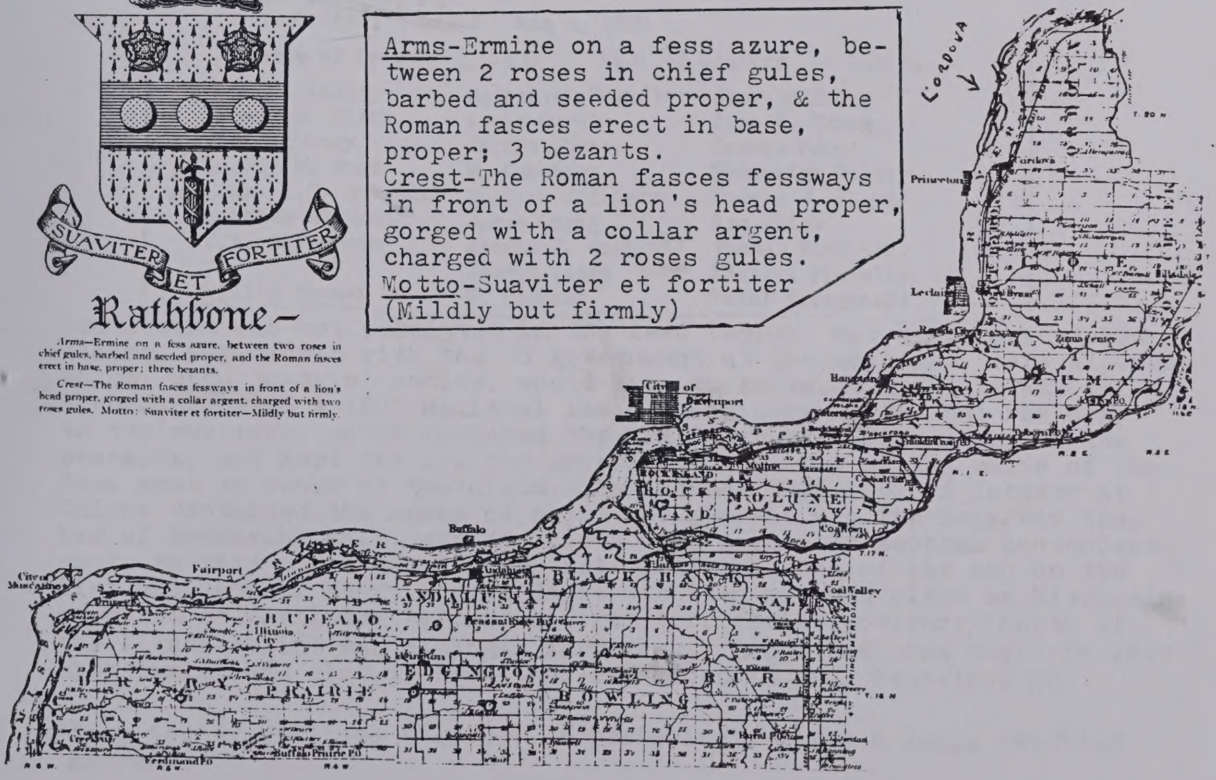
Arms—Ermine on a fess azure, between two roses in chief gules, barbed and seeded proper, and the Roman fasces erect in base, proper; three bezants.

Crest—The Roman fasces fessways in front of a lion's head proper, gorged with a collar argent, charged with two roses gules. Motto: Suaviter et fortiter—Mildly but firmly.

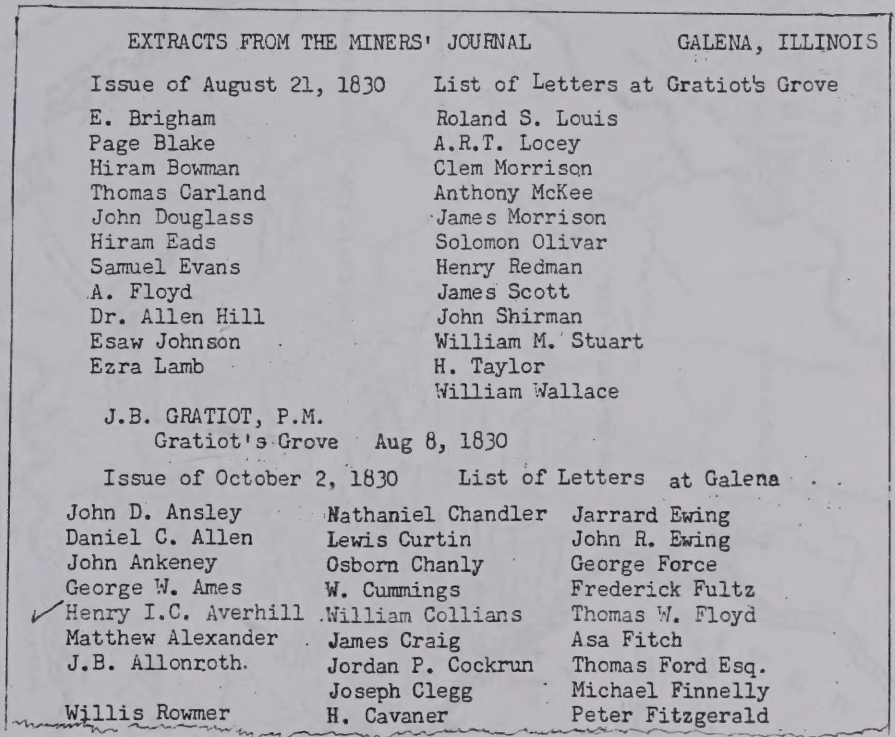
Arms-Ermine on a fess azure, between 2 roses in chief gules, barbed and seeded proper, & the Roman fasces erect in base, proper; 3 bezants.
Crest-The Roman fasces fessways in front of a lion's head proper, gorged with a collar argent, charged with 2 roses gules.
Motto-Suaviter et fortiter (Mildly but firmly)

MAP OF ROCK ISLAND COUNTY

1876 map


CORDOVA
Princeton
Cordova
Le Claire
COE
ZUMA
Hampton
City of Davenport
Port Byron
ROCK ISLAND
MOLINE
Coal Valley
Buffalo
Fairport
City of Muscatine
BLACK HAWK
ANDALUSIA
BUFFALO
Illinois City
EDGINGTON
BOWLING
RURAL
BUFFALO PRAIRIE
Ferdinand P.O.
Buffalo Prairie P.O.

Henry James Cropsey Averill, oldest son of Philo and Rebekah (Rice) (Cropsey) Averill, was born, he said, on 20 July 1809 at Stillwater New York the year after his parents' marriage, and in the fall of 1813 they left this same place for Ohio where they "lived for about a year" before settling in Vevay, Indiana Territory. He grew up there and in Pope and Sangamon Cos. IL where at age 22½ he served a month in the Black Hawk War under Capt. Japhet Ball, with the promise of 80 acres of bounty land some time in the future. Two years before that, however, the young adventurer, probably as assistant to some older local man who staked a claim, tried his hand at lead mining.*



EXTRACTS FROM THE MINERS' JOURNAL GALENA, ILLINOIS

Issue of August 21, 1830 List of Letters at Gratiot's Grove

E. Brigham
Page Blake
Hiram Bowman
Thomas Carland
John Douglass
Hiram Eads
Samuel Evans
A. Floyd
Dr. Allen Hill
Esaw Johnson
Ezra Lamb

Roland S. Louis
A.R.T. Locey
Clem Morrison
Anthony McKee
James Morrison
Solomon Olivar
Henry Redman
James Scott
John Shirman
William M. Stuart
H. Taylor
William Wallace

J.B. GRATIOT, P.M.
Gratiot's Grove Aug 8, 1830

Issue of October 2, 1830 List of Letters at Galena

John D. Ansley
Daniel C. Allen
John Ankeney
George W. Ames
✓Henry I.C. Averhill
Matthew Alexander
J.B. Allonroth.

Willis Rowmer

Nathaniel Chandler
Lewis Curtin
Osborn Chanly
W. Cummings
William Collians
James Craig
Jordan P. Cockrun
Joseph Clegg
H. Cavaner

Jarrard Ewing
John R. Ewing
George Force
Frederick Fultz
Thomas W. Floyd
Asa Fitch
Thomas Ford Esq.
Michael Finnelly
Peter Fitzgerald

Settlement was not permitted in the lead region, but temporary staked claims, registered with the US government at the smelters, were allowed which, upon 30-days' notice, would have to be vacated. This was in accordance with a 1807 national law. The miners hauled the raw ore to the smelters, which rendered the ore, charged a fee of 10% of the proceeds, and kept the ore for government use. 90% of the value of the lead went to owner of the claim. The October 1830 list of letters at Galena contained the names of about 200 men--it was the only way they had of receiving mail, and the lists were posted in several convenient spots so they could go pick up their letters. One of the men on the list was General Henry Dodge. There was then no such place as Wisconsin, of which he was later to become first territorial governor. North of the IL state line was Michigan Territory. Dodge had come there in 1827 with family and slaves, from the lead mines in Ste. Genevieve MO.

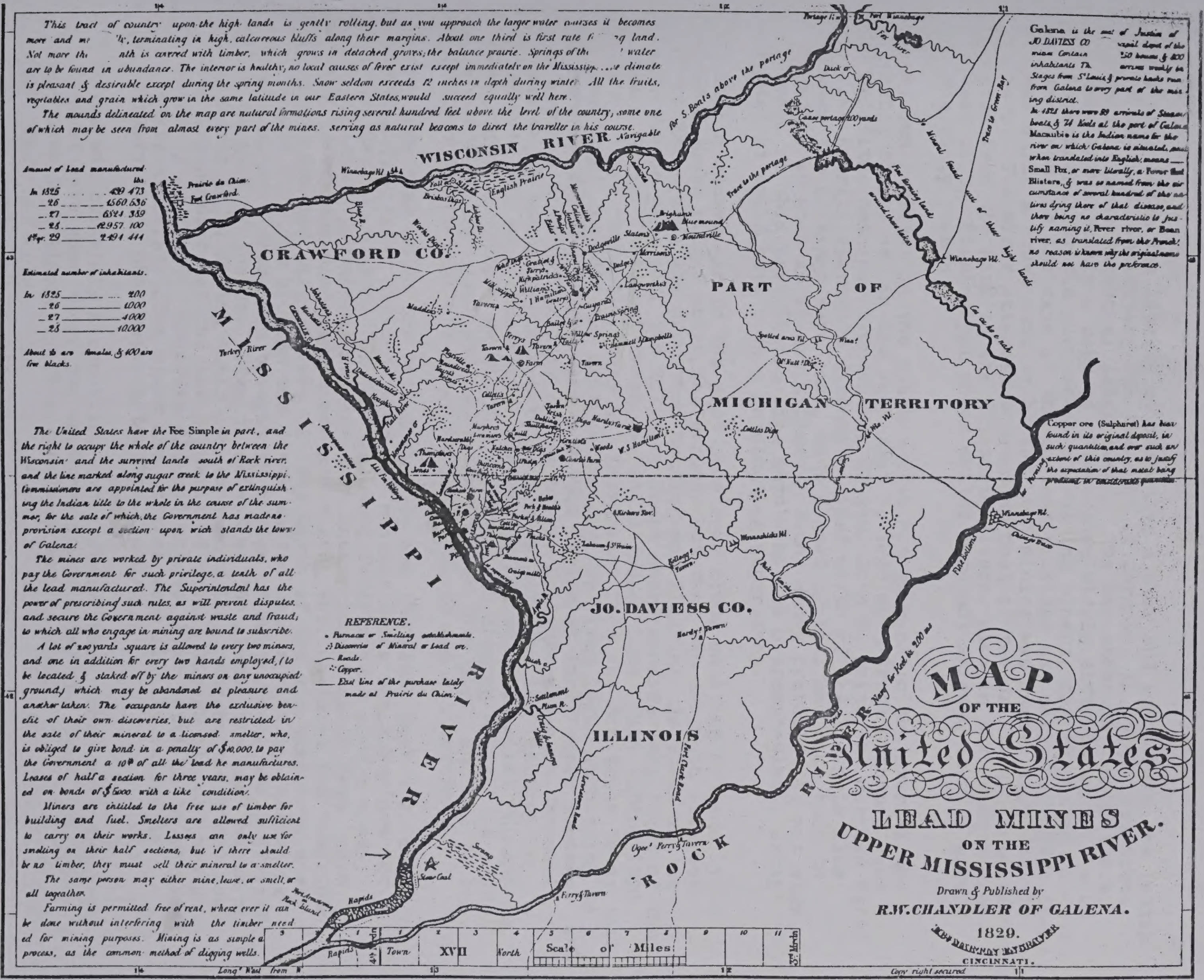
---

*Iowa County Heritage Vols 3-4, a periodical, gives a long, detailed account.

AVERILL FAMILY

176

Vol. XI P. 400



This tract of country upon the high lands is gently rolling, but as you approach the larger water courses it becomes more and m[illegible]ly, terminating in high, calcureous bluffs along their margins. About one third is first rate f[illegible]ng land. Not more th[illegible]nth is covered with timber, which grows in detached groves; the balance prairie. Springs of th[illegible] water are to be found in abundance. The interior is healthy, no local causes of fever exist except immediately on the Mississip[illegible]e climate is pleasant & desirable except during the spring months. Snow seldom exceeds 12 inches in depth during winter. All the fruits, vegetables and grain which grow in the same latitude in our Eastern States, would succeed equally well here.

The mounds delineated on the map are natural formations rising several hundred feet above the level of the country; some one of which may be seen from almost every part of the mines, serving as natural beacons to direct the traveller in his course.

Amount of Lead manufactured.

	lbs
In 1825	439 473
— 26	1560.636
— 27	6824 389
— 28	12957. 100
1st qr. 29	2491. 444

Estimated number of inhabitants.

In 1825	200
— 26	1000
— 27	4000
— 28	10000

About [illegible] are females, & 100 are free blacks.

The United States have the Fee Simple in part, and the right to occupy the whole of the country between the Wisconsin and the surveyed lands south of Rock river, and the line marked along sugar creek to the Mississippi. Commissioners are appointed for the purpose of extinguishing the Indian title to the whole in the course of the summer, for the sale of which, the Government has made no provision except a section upon wich stands the town of Galena.

The mines are worked by private individuals, who pay the Government for such privilege, a tenth of all the lead manufactured. The Superintendent has the power of prescribing such rules, as will prevent disputes, and secure the Government against waste and fraud; to which all who engage in mining are bound to subscribe.

A lot of 200 yards square is allowed to every two miners, and one in addition for every two hands employed, (to be located & staked off by the miners on any unoccupied ground,) which may be abandoned at pleasure and another taken. The occupants have the exclusive benefit of their own discoveries, but are restricted in the sale of their mineral to a licensed smelter, who, is obliged to give bond in a penalty of $10,000, to pay the Government a 10th of all the lead he manufactures. Leases of half a section for three years, may be obtained on bonds of $5000 with a like condition.

Miners are entitled to the free use of timber for building and fuel. Smelters are allowed sufficient to carry on their works. Lessees can only use for smelting on their half sections, but if there should be no timber, they must sell their mineral to a smelter.

The same person may either mine, lease, or smelt, or all togeather.

Farming is permitted free of rent, where ever it can be done without interfering with the timber needed for mining purposes. Mining is as simple a process, as the common method of digging wells.

Galena is the seat of Justice of JO. DAVIESS CO [illegible] capital depot of the mines Contains [illegible] 250 houses & 800 inhabitants Th[illegible] arrives weekly in Stages from St Louis & private hacks run from Galena to every part of the mining district.

In 1828 there were 89 arrivals of Steam boats & 24 Keels at the port of Galena. Macaubie is the Indian name for the river on which Galena is situated, and when translated into English, means — Small Pox, or more literally, a Fever that Blisters, & was so named from the circumstance of several hundred of the natives dying there of that disease, and there being no characteristic to justify naming it, Fever river, or Bean river, as translated from the French; no reason is known why the original name should not have the preference.

Copper ore (Sulphuret) has been found in its original deposit, in such quantities, and over such an extent of this country, as to justify the expectation of that metal being produced in considerable quantities.

REFERENCE.

- • Furnaces or Smelting establishments.
- ⁘ Discoveries of Mineral or Lead ore.
- ⁓ Roads.
- ⁘ Copper.
- — East line of the purchase lately made at Prairie du Chien.

MAP OF THE United States LEAD MINES ON THE UPPER MISSISSIPPI RIVER.

Drawn & Published by
R.W. CHANDLER OF GALENA.
1829.
[illegible] ENGRAVER
CINCINNATI.

Copy right secured

I have taken the liberty of inserting a star and arrow near the bottom of the map, indicating the location of Cordova, IL, where his niece, Emily (Hurd) Rathbone, later lived. The map shown on the previous page was actually a copy of a broadside widely distributed by the US Government for the purpose of attracting miners, for the nation needed the lead and the days of the easiest pickings had passed by 1829. There was still a great deal to be had, but mining was harder work than before. The mines extended throughout most of the driftless (unglaciated) area from the Rock to the Wisconsin Rivers, also in the Dubuque area west of the Mississippi where whites were not allowed at all, except the early French.

My own interest in the subject lies not so much in the Averill boy being there, as in the fact that by 1826 my 3-Great Grandpa, John W. Griffith, maternal grandfather of Rev. John W. White who married Sarah Jane Averill (Norman's daughter) mined north of the Illinois line when the pickings were easy, made a good profit, and came back to settle as soon as it was allowed. Young Henry probably did not stay long, so this part of his life should not be overemphasized, except that it would have been a fascinating experience.

Indian squaws had in the past done some crude smelting of lead lying in exposed ridges above the ground, but that was too much like work for the braves who preferred hunting and fighting. As shown on the sketch on page 160, the Military Tract ended considerably short of the Rock River. All past there was still Indian land. But before 1820 2 or 3 men surreptitiously got permission from the Fox tribe to do some smelting. In 1822 two Kentuckians got the first legal permission to mine on the Fever River above Galena in Indian land. Their success caused a wide influx from as far as New England, and even Cornwall and Wales where they had already been miners and the industry in Britain was in a recession. Our map/broadside tells more. "Mining is as simple a process as the common method of digging wells," it says, not adding that lead and rocks are heavier than dirt, and had to be lugged to the smelters. They were careful to map out taverns.

At some time after the mining episode and the Black Hawk War, our young adventurer decided to go see whether Texas was the place for him, date uncertain, but the following facts should give a clue:
The Mexican government had been in uneasy independence from Spain, led by various dictators since about 1821 who, unwisely for their own cause, granted large blocks of land north of the Rio Grande to speculators like Sam Houston and Steve Austin with a view to increasing population. These men brought in hordes of southerners who preferred to be part of the US. Despite defeat at the Alamo, the next month on 02 March 1836, flying their own lone star flag, the settlers declared the independence of the new Republic of Texas, though all did not go smoothly at first. Congress did not accept their petition to become a state at first. The stars and stripes were finally raised in February 1845, nine years after the Alamo.

Texas was certainly a republic, not a state, when Henry went there. He must have gone there two or three years after the Alamo, for he was back in Illinois by 1840, ready to settle down.
Sort of.

On 10 Sep 1840 Henry, now 31 years old, married Hulda Ann Warren, not quite 16 years old (born 02 Oct 1824 in Ohio), daughter of Levi Warren, an Eastern man living in adjacent Emmet Township. More about Hulda's family will be divulged in the section about Henry's sister Eliza, for he had married her young step-daughter. A year and a half later his parents, Philo and Rebecca, sold their farm to him and his brother Norman. He received the south part, consisting of 72 acres, and farmed there, perhaps staying at the beginning with his parents and two brothers, for the parents were getting elderly and would have welcomed Hulda's help.

In 1844 his parents died. That same year almost every able-bodied man or youth enlisted in the McDonough Co. militia, for the situation with the overbearing Mormons had reached a crisis. More about that in the sections about Norman and Eliza, for her husband (Hulda's father) was chosen as a leader.

Taking after his father, who may have taught him the rudiments, and other Averill ancestors back to the 1600's, Henry was good at surveying. In 1843 he ran for county surveyor on the Whig ticket, but lost. He ran again in 1846 and won (552 over 517), and in 1847 (439 over 335). As well as surveying residential and commercial land, he obviously surveyed highways, an example of which is diagramed on the following page. He may have been elected later in Mercer Co., two counties to the north.

State of Illinois public domain records show that on 12 November 1847, (Vol 710 pg 184) he purchased 40 acres of public land at $1.25 per acre in Sec 20 15N 02W, NENE meridian 4 in Mercer Co. IL. On o8 Jan 1849 (Vol 819 pg 001) he purchased 40.64 acres at $1.25 per acre in described as Lot 7S 25W, Sec 16 15N 02 West. The first purchase cost $50.00, the second $50.75.

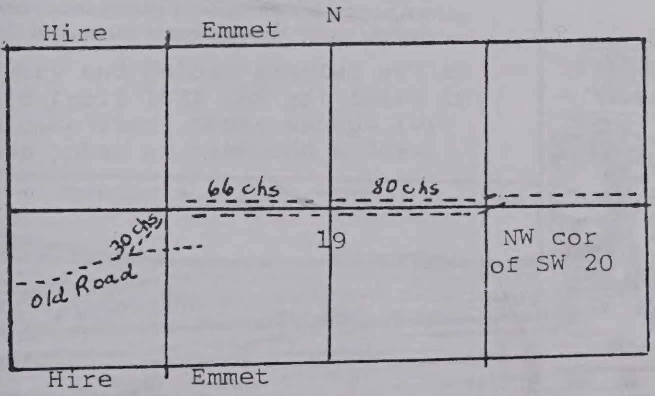
The 1850 federal census for Mercer County, taken 28 October shows his family at household 767 in a township called "15 North Range 2 West" which later on would be named Pre-emption Township, a little easier to say. He was called a farmer aged 40 and Huldah aged 25, with four little boys ranging in age from two to nine. His real estate was then said to be worth $350.00, which sounds right including the house. Levi and Eliza, living next door at residence 766, with a large number of males, had real estate valued at $1800.00.

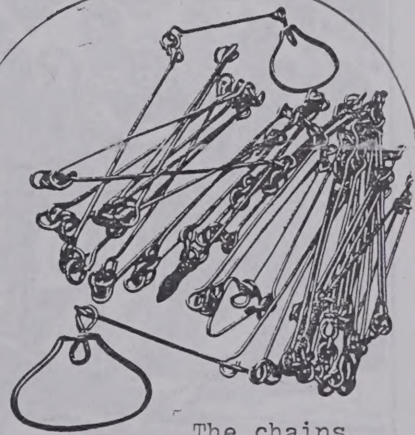
By then wanderlust had struck again. He had decided to better his condition by moving to Oregon Territory which, that very year, announced that it would guarantee considerable tracts of land to farmers if for four years they would cultivate the homesteads alloted to them. At that time there were only slightly over 13,000 Oregon territorial residents including present Idaho plus parts of Montana and Wyoming until statehood nine years later. The fertile Willamette Valley had been settled first but actually lost population during the 1849 gold rush, though many later came back. Though the bulk of emigrants on the Trail outfitted their wagons in Missouri, it was more logical for Henry and Hulda to start out at Nauvoo, using the well-established Mormon trail at first.

> Surveyors were usually self-trained. In the early nineteenth century, before this trade became a profession, many aspirants learned their skills from local practitioners like John Messinger, one of the first surveyors in the Illinois Country, "a celebrated artizan," as John Reynolds remarked, who summarized his learning in *A Manual, or Hand Book, Intended for Convenience in Practical Surveying,* published in St. Louis in 1821. Other men taught themselves by studying Messinger's text or other useful little books such as Able Flint's *A System of Geometry and Trigonometry* (1804) or Robert Gibson's *A Treatise on Practical Surveying* (1803). Abraham Lincoln, who laid out several town sites north of the Sangamon River during the 1830s, later remembered that he "procured a compass and chain, studied Flint and Gibson a little and went at it."[1]
>
> Lincoln made it sound easy, but surveying was hard outdoor labor. In all kinds of weather, over all kinds of country, the men moved directly on the compass lines to make their measurements, through shoulder-high prairie grasses, over upland, swampland, and timber. The deputy surveyor, or "land-looker" as people sometimes called him, directed the operation through the sights of his mounted magnetic compass, called a "circumferator." His crew included two chainmen, to stretch the traditional four-rod measuring chain on the line; at least one flagman, to mark the spot determined by the deputy and toward which the chainmen aimed; one or two axmen, to clear the line of vision as well as blaze and mark the corners; and sometimes a hunter and cook.
>
> \- "Sugar Creek" pp 39-40 -Faragher

1850's tintype

Below: An early example of Henry J.C. Averill's survey work.





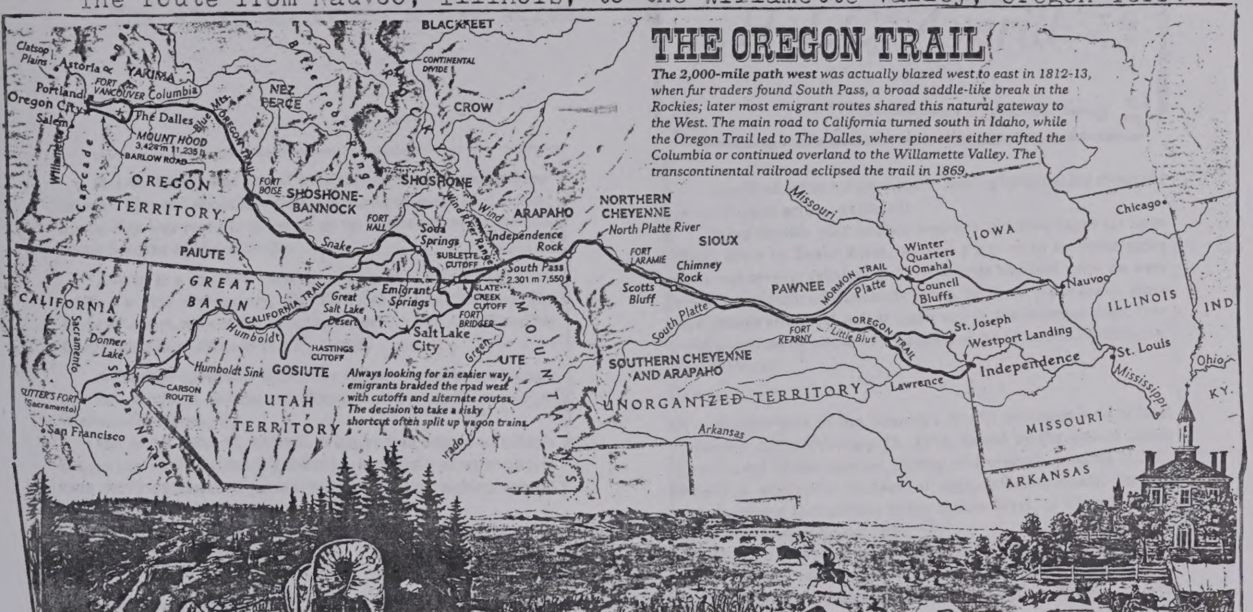
The chains were 4 rods long.

In August 1847 the court ordered HJC Averill & two others to view and locate a road to begin at the NW corner of SW½, Sec 20 6N3W, then west on the N line of the SE & SW¼ of Sec 19 to the NW corner of the SW¼ Sec 19, then in a SW direction until it intersects the Burlington Road near Eyers by way of G.W. Head's land. Stake at W end of G.W. Head lane 2½ rods north of the NW corner of SW quarter, Sec. 20. Map from page 13, Old Road Book, labeled relocation of road leading from Burlington Road near Eyers via G.W.Heads to the Carthage Road at Banks Lane. Source: Emmet Township Pioneers by Marjorie Guy Harris, McDonough Gen. Soc. page 299

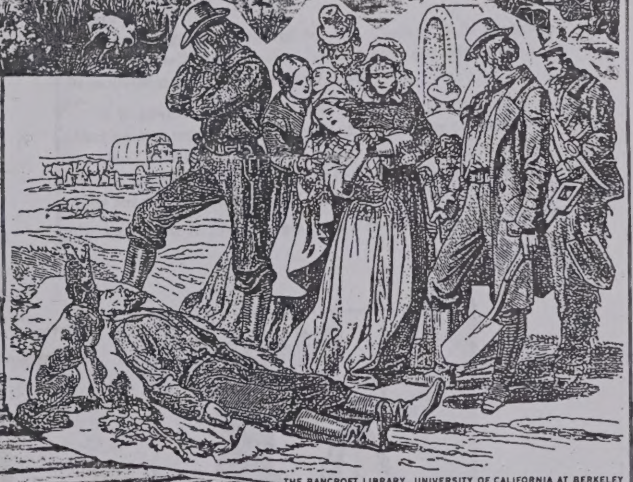
The route from Nauvoo, Illinois, to the Willamette Valley, Oregon Terr.

THE OREGON TRAIL

The 2,000-mile path west was actually blazed west to east in 1812-13, when fur traders found South Pass, a broad saddle-like break in the Rockies; later most emigrant routes shared this natural gateway to the West. The main road to California turned south in Idaho, while the Oregon Trail led to The Dalles, where pioneers either rafted the Columbia or continued overland to the Willamette Valley. The transcontinental railroad eclipsed the trail in 1869.


BLACKFEET
Clatsop Plains
Astoria
YAKIMA
FORT VANCOUVER
Columbia
Portland
Oregon City
Salem
The Dalles
MOUNT HOOD 3,424 m 11,235 ft
BARLOW ROAD
Willamette
Cascade
OREGON TERRITORY
Blue Mts.
OREGON TRAIL
NEZ PERCE
Bitterroot Range
CONTINENTAL DIVIDE
CROW
FORT BOISE
SHOSHONE-BANNOCK
SHOSHONE
FORT HALL
Snake
Soda Springs
Wind River Range
Wind
ARAPAHO
NORTHERN CHEYENNE
North Platte River
Independence Rock
SUBLETTE CUTOFF
South Pass 2,301 m 7,550 ft
SIOUX
FORT LARAMIE
Chimney Rock
Scotts Bluff
PAIUTE
GREAT BASIN
CALIFORNIA TRAIL
CALIFORNIA
Great Salt Lake
Great Salt Lake Desert
Emigrant Springs
SLATE CREEK CUTOFF
FORT BRIDGER
Salt Lake City
HASTINGS CUTOFF
Humboldt
Donner Lake
Sacramento
Humboldt Sink
GOSIUTE
CARSON ROUTE
SUTTER'S FORT (Sacramento)
San Francisco
Sierra Nevada
UTAH TERRITORY
Green
UTE
Colorado
ROCKY MOUNTAINS
Missouri
IOWA
Winter Quarters (Omaha)
MORMON TRAIL
Platte
Council Bluffs
PAWNEE
South Platte
FORT KEARNY
Little Blue
OREGON TRAIL
St. Joseph
Westport Landing
Independence
Lawrence
SOUTHERN CHEYENNE AND ARAPAHO
UNORGANIZED TERRITORY
Arkansas
Chicago
Nauvoo
ILLINOIS
IND.
St. Louis
Ohio
Mississippi
KY.
MISSOURI
ARKANSAS

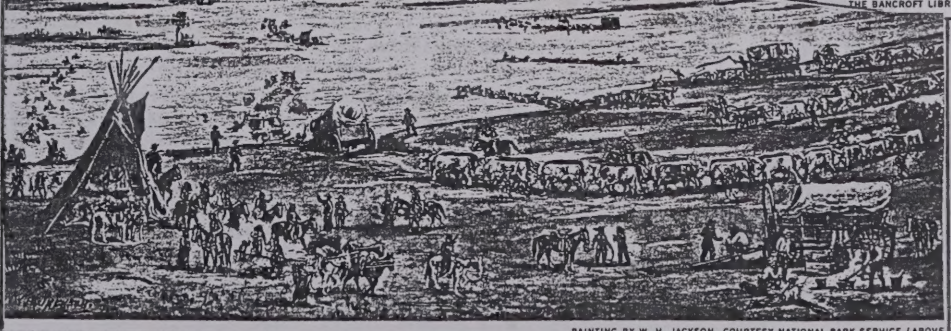
Always looking for an easier way, emigrants braided the road west with cutoffs and alternate routes. The decision to take a risky shortcut often split up wagon trains.



THE BANCROFT LIBRARY, UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA AT BERKELEY

***Death came quickly to emigrants**; at least 20,000 lost their lives, mostly to accidents and Asiatic cholera.*

Henry and Huldah started out in mid-April 1852 and got there in mid-October, broke except for two yokes of oxen and a cow.



PAINTING BY W. H. JACKSON, COURTESY NATIONAL PARK SERVICE (ABOVE

AVERILL FAMILY

The story in Henry's own words.

Past Times

H.J.C. Averill

By Margaret Standish-Carey

H.J.C. Averill was one of Linn County's prominent pioneer citizens. Material about this man who surveyed much land around the county was recently given to us by a descendant of Averill, James Stanard of McMinnville.

Averill is a familiar name in these parts. Two of the local area's weekly newspapers, *The Times* of Brownsville and *The Halsey Review*, were at different times run by Virgil Averill and his family, also decendants of H.J.C. Averill.

A familiar landmark is the little yellow Averill house located on the southeast corner of Stanard and Averill streets in Brownsville's north side.

But H.J.C. Averill, himself, is not as well known to today's generation. Part of Stanard's collection included a paper written in both the first and second person; but presumably autobiographical about the man, Henry J.C. Averill.

The manuscript has been slightly edited for this column but retains the flavor of the original.

* * * *

"Henry James Cropsey Averill was the eldest of five children of Philo Averill and Rebecca Rice-Averill. Philo was born March 20, 1768. Rebecca was born April 27, 1775.

"Henry J.C. Averill, born July 20, 1809, at Stillwater, Saratoga, Co., N.Y. Left there the fall of 1813 for Ohio. He was one year there, then in 1814 settled in Vevay, Switzerland, Co., Indiana.

"In 1818 moved to Illinois, settled near Elisabethtown, Pope Co. In 1824 moved to McDonough Co., Illinois. Settled near McComb in said county. Was married there to Huldah Ann Warren September 10, 1840.

"Lived there eight years, then moved to Mercer County (Illinois). In 1850 . . . sold out with intention of coming to Oregon, but failed to get pay for place.

"Stopped in Henderson County a little of year. In the spring of '52, the 15th day of April, started for Oregon. On the 8th of October started to cross the Cascade Mountains.

"IN 5(?) days got across the mountains and got into Linn County, Oregon, near Albany without a cent, and (with) a family of wife and 4 children. Had 2 yoke of oxen, one cow. Took up a claim four miles from Albany and built a log house and covered it in the rain with clapboards.

"Moved-in without any floor. Built a fire in the middle of (the) house. "Cut fir brush to put our bed on, then split out puncheons and hewed them out and made a floor.

"Our furniture consisted of three (?), 4 stools and split boards and made a table. Made a bed stead by putting boards from cracks in wall, with posts to hold them up.

"Lived at that place 4 years, It being so sickly lost 4 children; then on the river. Moved out on Albany Prairie 5 miles from Albany. Wife died there April 20, 1859. Kind neighbors took 2 of the children and two oldest stayed at home.

"In 1860 (?), moved to near Brownsville where I (H.J.C. Averill) have since resided. "Was elected county surveyor 7 times, served 14 years. Elected 3 times in Illinois."

* * * *

Averill added to his story the following information about the trip to Oregon across the plains:

"Had trouble with Indians one day. Cholera raged (?) from Platte River to Snake River. At one place when we came along there was seventy (victims?). "For several hundred miles we were never out of sight of somebody dying, or a new made grave. Have seen people alive and well at night and in the morning dead. Our train consisted of about 100 wagons, some bound for California, some Oregon.

* * * *

Another item in Jim Stanard's Averill collection is an official document dated February 15, 1893, issued by the United States Department of the Interior, Bureau of Pensions, granting H.J.C. Averill a survivor's pension of eight-dollars-a-month for the latter's service as a private in the Indian Wars, in Captain Ball's Company, Illinois Volunteers.

Of local interest is the handwritten "In Memorium" prepared by the Brownsville Lodge, No. 36 AF&AM, DATED Nov. 5, 1897, following the death of one of its fellow Masons, H.J.C. Averill.

The eulogy was prepared by J.P. Cooley, W.B. Blanchard and F.M. Powell, and was read for the Lodge and submitted to the Brownsville newspaper fopr publication.

It is obvious that Averill was a man who commanded the affection and respect of his peers and the citizens of Brownsville and Linn County.

Our thanks to Jim Stanard for sharing these glimpses into the life of another pioneer of Linn County. ☐

Copyright © 1982 by Calapoola Publications

NOVEMBER 25, 1982,

J. E. BLACKBURN

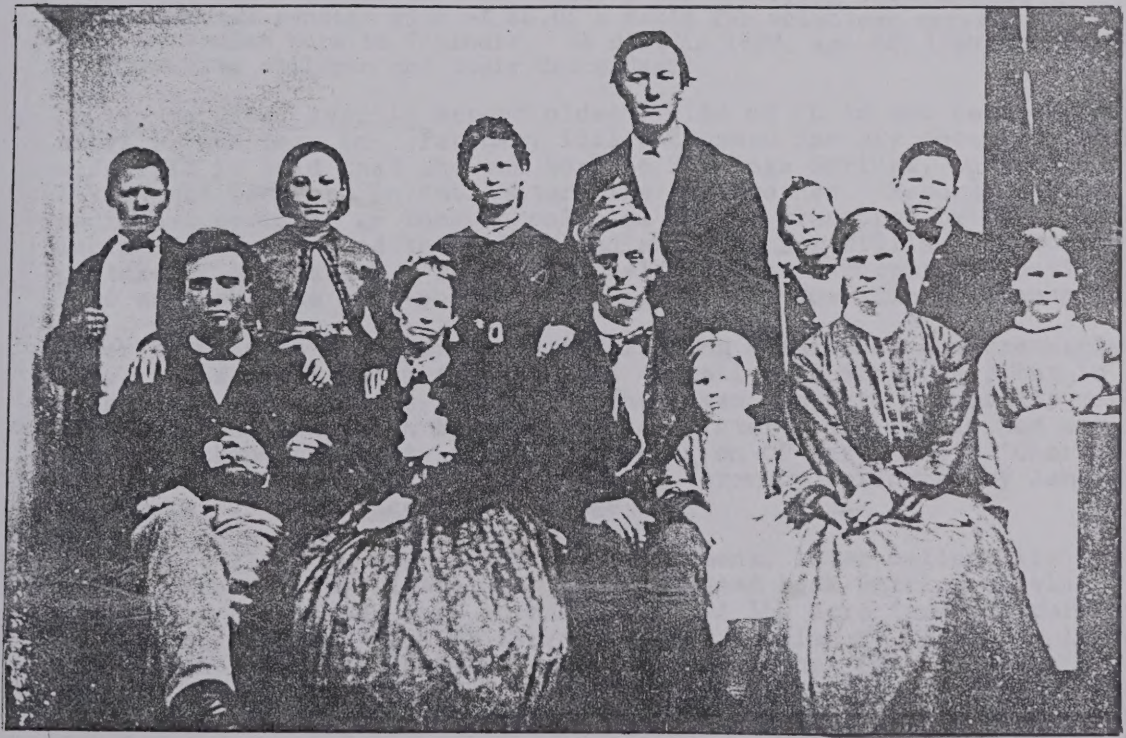
Surveyor with Level at work in mountainous setting

Mrs. Meredith Bolton, Oregon descendant of H.J.C. Averill, sent a photocopy of this to Mrs. Billie Pringle, Columbia MO, writer's sister.

The children who died were: Charles Baker, in Illinois, died 184? age one week; James Wiley, died 1855 Albany, Oregon, age 13; Albert Washington 1854, age 5; Harriet Isabella 1852, age 6 mos.; and Charles Wilbur, who died in May 1859, age one week, the same month as his mother, 35-year old Hulda Ann (Warren) Averill.

The children who stayed at home when their mother died were WHH, age 15½ and Alfred, age 13½. The children who were taken in by kind neighbors were Henrietta, 5½ and Joseph, 2. All four of those children survived the hard times, grew up and had children of their own, and prospered. WHH became a successful merchant and was for a time county commissioner. He had eleven children, including newspaper owners and editors, college educated. Alfred Alexander was ancestor of Meredith (Averill) Bolton (Mrs.Charles) educated wife of a teacher. The sister, Henrietta Willametta married twice, had five children, and lived in Oakland, CA. Joseph Pearne stayed in the area, at Joseph, Oregon.

In 1861, HJC married Mrs. Sarah Jack, a widow with an interesting past of her own. Born Sarah Liggett in Missouri in 1816, at age 17 she married a Methodist minister, Rev. Leander Belieu. In Spring



This might be Henry and Sarah's 1861 wedding picture, for little Arminta Clive Averill is not shown. The Averills are the ones who are smiling. Front row: R. Stout, Eliza (Belieu) Stout, HJC Averill, Mary Jack (twin) Sarah (Liggett-Belieu-Jack) Averill, Sarah Jack (twin). Back row: Francis Marion Jack, Henrietta Willametta Averill, Julia (Belieu) Hall, either William H.H. or Alfred Alexander Averill, Joseph Pearne Averill?, Jasper Newton Jack.

1845 they left for Oregon; but they had the misfortune to be in a wagon train led by a man named Meek who attempted to find a shortcut through the mountains. They got lost and wandered around for several months before they finally reached the Dalles in a famishing condition. In 1849, when gold fever broke out in California, Rev. Belieu took a ship but perished aboard and was buried on an island, leaving her a widow with children. In 1851 she married another Methodist minister, Rev. N. D. Jack, and they moved to Brownsville, Oregon where he died a few years later. (Sept.1857) In 1861 Sarah and HJC were married, and had one daughter, Arminta Olive, who married and had a family in Brownsville. Sarah (Liggett)(Belieu)(Jack) Averill died 19 Nov. 1894 at age 78. She had borne 12 children of three husbands, eight of whom were then living, and had 53 grandchildren and 41 great grandchildren and 2 great great grandchildren at the time of her death!

In later years, Henry James Cropsey Averill became a familiar figure in the area, well liked, and neighborhood children called him "Grandpa Averill" whether they were relatives or not.

In 1892, "when he was too old to carry his surveying instruments," HJC received pension #936 of $8.00 a month for volunteer service in the Indian Wars in Illinois. He died in 1897, age 88, leaving behind five children and their descendants.

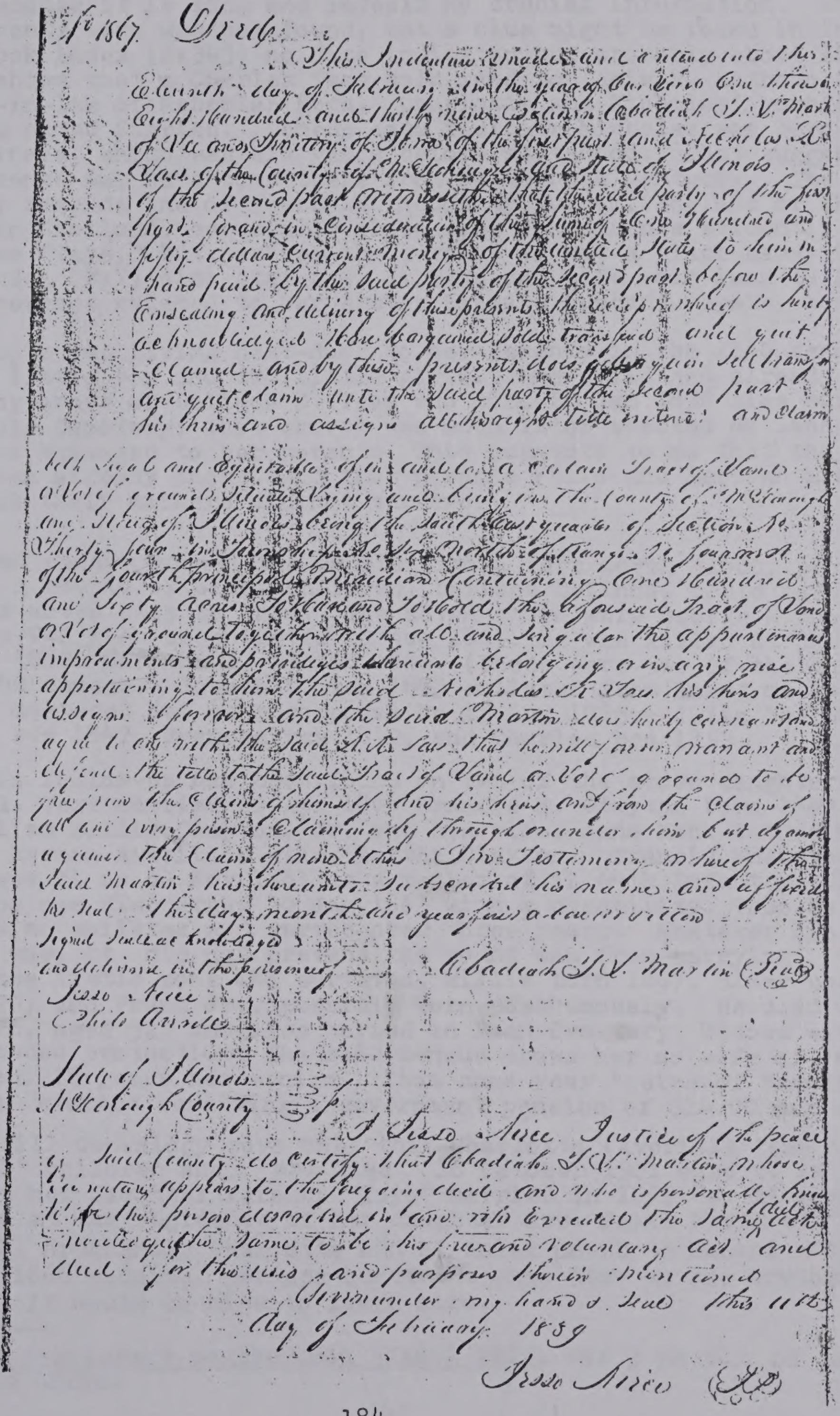
Charlotte Baker Averill second oldest child of Philo and Rebecca (Rice) Averill, was born in February 1811 and named for his deceased second wife. It is said that she was born in Saratoga Springs, but more likely she was born in Stillwater like her brother. Reports of the medicinal springs go back to colonial times, treasured by the Mohawk Indians who persuaded the ailing Indian agent Sir William Johnson to partake of the waters. The town itself was not incorporated until 1826 when she was a 15-year-old living in Ball Township, Sangamon Co.

After being able to report such interesting details of her brother's life, it is a letdown not being able to tell more about her, but in those days not much was told about the women, anyway. Hopefully more will be found which can be inserted here later. The family had not been in McDonough County a year yet when, on 07 March 1833, "Charlott" B. Averill was wed to Nicholas R. Teas, ceremony performed by James R. Clarke, JP (Marriage book 4, page 28).

The couple lived in the Rock Creek Settlement, later called Hire. Because there is so little else to tell, deed book entries showing their land purchases start on next page. A 160 acre farm was purchased in the SE¼ Section 34 6N 4W for $50.00from Obadiah TV Martin on 11 Feb. 1839 (Deed Book 5 pages 447-8). Witnesses were her father, Philo Averill and Jesse Neece, JP. Times were hard then--the 1837 recession in the east had a delayed reaction on the frontier, for they were too far from markets for surplus goods, anyway. Most of what these folk had they made themselves. Excess produce would be fed to livestock, if it could not be used. But Nicholas was a good manager. On 19 May 1840, he was able to acquire an additional 160 acres adjoining by paying sheriff William Randolph the $4.42 in overdue taxes that the previous owner had not been able to come up with. (Deed Book H pages 412-3). The records show quite a few sheriffs' sales about that time.

AVERILL FAMILY

Deed of Sale - Obadiah T.V. Martin to Nicholas R. Teas, Philo Averill a Witness.



No 1867 Deed

This Indenture made and entered into this Eleventh day of February in the year of Our Lord One thousand Eight Hundred and thirty nine Between Obadiah T. V. Martin of [illegible] and Territory of Iowa of the first part and Nicholas R. Teas of the County of McDonough and State of Illinois of the second part Witnesseth that the said party of the first part for and in consideration of the sum of One Hundred and fifty Dollars current money of the United States to him in hand paid by the said party of the second part before the Ensealing and delivery of these presents the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged have bargained sold transferred and quit claimed and by these presents does grant bargain sell transfer and quit claim unto the said party of the second part his heirs and assigns all the right title interest and claim both legal and equitable of in and to a certain tract of land and lot of ground situate lying and being in the County of McDonough and State of Illinois being the South East quarter of Section No. Thirty four in Township No. Six North of Range No. Four west of the Fourth principal Meridian containing One Hundred and Sixty Acres To have and to hold the aforesaid tract of land and lot of ground together with all and singular the appurtenances improvements and privileges thereunto belonging or in any wise appertaining to him the said Nicholas R. Teas his heirs and assigns forever and the said Martin does hereby covenant and agree to and with the said N. R. Teas that he will forever warrant and defend the title to the said tract of land and lot of ground to be free from the claims of himself and his heirs and from the claims of all and every person claiming by through or under him but against against the claim of none other In Testimony whereof the said Martin has hereunto subscribed his name and affixed his seal the day month and year first above written

Signed sealed acknowledged
and delivered in the presence of
Jesse Arice
Philo Averill

Obadiah T. V. Martin (Seal)

State of Illinois
McDonough County } ss

I Jesse Arice Justice of the peace of said County do certify that Obadiah T. V. Martin whose signature appears to the foregoing deed and who is personally known to me to be the person described in and who executed the same duly acknowledged the same to be his free and voluntary act and deed for the uses and purposes therein mentioned

Given under my hand & seal this 11th day of February 1839

Jesse Arice (J.P.)

AVERILL FAMILY

I do have a copy of the 1840 sheriff's sale of foreclosed land to Nicholas R. Teas for payment of overdue taxes, but will not show it here because it is long and reveals no crucial information. Whom his parents were was not found, but a clue might be found in in a deed book index (A:343) no date indicated but probably about 1832/3, which shows that a Charles Teas sold land to "Amie R. Rathbun," father-in-law of Nehemiah Hurd. Charlotte and Nicholas' youngest son was named Charles. Census data indicate Nicholas was born 1812 in Illinois, which was six years before statehood. That suggests his parents may have come there from or through Kentucky. The name vaguely reminds one of Teesdale in County Durham, England or the Tays river in Scotland, especially since some descendants evidently spelt the name "Tays," but perhaps the surname is not a place name. The deed index (F:7) Also states N. R. Teas and wife sold land to John D. Post, perhaps related to her sister Eliza's husband. Again, no date.

The couple was living next-door to her parents in the 1840 census, with a little boy and two little girls. One child had already died. The tiny grave of Delinda J. Teas who died 20 Jan 1836 lies buried in Argyle Cemetery; that church was much later erected on land which had once belonged to her parents. This suggests to me that the little grave was already there, and that perhaps Philo and Rebecah are there also but their markers did not survive,

The 1860 census showed the couple with a farm worth $1800, property $415. A couple of older children, besides Delinda, could have married or moved away by then. The seven shown were George H bca 1836, of Hire TWP when he enlisted 10 Aug 1861. He was killed at Shiloh 06 Oct 1862. Maranda b. 23 Jan 1840. (These were two of the three in the 1840 census.) Joseph C. bca 1843 enlisted from Emmet on 14 Aug 1862 & mustered out as a corporal on 15 Aug 1865. Julia bca 1845, Louise bca 1847, Frances bca 1849, and Charles bca 1853.

A little follow-up has been found on two of the above daughters. Julia A. Teas married 22 Apr 1866 Francis M. Clayton born 1843, son of William Willis Clayton, Jr. and his wife, Jane Monk & thus nephew of our Norman Averill's wife, Martha Clayton. Francis enlisted from Tennessee IL on 04 Nov 1861 as a member of IL 64th Infantry, Civil War, and was discharged 30 Jan 1865 with a disability. Thus he was 18 when he enlisted and served over three years. Whatever his disability was, it did not prevent the young man from marrying. They had three little sons who survived, Willis born 1867, Elmer born Apr 1870, and Frank Jr., possibly born posthumously. He died 09 Sep 1876, aged 32, and lies buried in Bean Cemetery. Widows with children needed protection. The 1880 census shows her as wife of Jessie D. Bowen, 18 years her senior. That same year "heirs of Francis M. Clayton" started receiving a government pension of $14.00 per month.*

The Averill Genealogy says only that Charlotte (Averill) Teas had "several" children and she died 16 October 1901 aged 90 in Erie KS, and that her daughter Maranda "Tays" married in 1861, A. Zimmerman anddied at the residence of her daughter Mrs. Pearl Hiatt of Nowate, Oklahoma. Apparently Charlotte and Nicholas moved to Kansas after Julia's 1866 wedding, perhaps about the same time as her brother Norman. It would be nice to learn more.

---

*List of Pensioners on the Roll -Jan 1 1883, Vol 3 pg 523, US Govt. Printing Office

Eliza Averill, third child of Philo and Rebecah Averill, born in Saratoga Co NY in 1813, was a small infant when the family migrated west, and was a part of all the various removes. In her day activities of the womenfolk were not usually detailed but some may be inferred from data about their husbands and children and, in her case, her numerous stepchildren. On 20 March 1839 she married Levi Warren, ceremony performed by Charles Hobart, Methodist minister (MB28-330). Eliza was 26, Levi about 42, a widower with a houseful of children, living in the nearby hamlet of Spring Creek, later called Emmet TWP, Section 32-3.*

The Averill genealogy does not tell what happened to Eliza, but in the section about her brother Henry who married her stepdaughter Huldah Ann, it says Huldah's brothers were George, Worcester, William. James and Henry. That is an understatement. From what I can glean, there were at least nine stepchildren. My data is from various sources with little detail, so 100% accuracy is not guaranteed! However, this should serve as a guide to anyone wanting to learn more.

An Arnold Warren was a "land grantee in NW Section (Emmet) in 1818." He appears nowhere in records, and it may be that he was a War of 1812 veteran who was granted land for his services but did not settle, for permission to take up land in the bountylands was not granted that early for obvious reasons. That year Illinois became a state, mostly unexplored. Perhaps an older relative? I conjecture that Levi was probably taken to New York state as a child by his parents and thence to (Ross County?) Ohio where he married and probably became acquainted with members of the Post family. At least his family was uncommonly connected with the Posts later on. Levi was a "land grantee" between 1823-1838 in SE Sec 10, sold in 1841. Levi and Lumen in SE Sec 32, date not stated.

One account says, "Levi Warren came to County about 1833, settled in Sect 33. Was an eastern man and served through the Black Hawk War."* (That was in 1832.) "Had large family of children and moved to Mercer Co, IL, where he died." I have been unable to find out whom his first wife was. (One of those Posts, unless his mother was one?) He married quite young, about 1819, in Ohio? and his first wife died, probably in Spring Creek about 1836, not long after giving birth to her ninth child. With many sons to help, he appears to have been rather prosperous.

The 1840 census shows Levi age 40-50, Eliza 20-30, six boys 15-20 on down, and two girls +- 15, (Hulda Ann & Jane). Son Lyman living in Rock Creek (Hire TWP) with wife, both 20-30, had a daughter under 5, Two young ladies, Emily Warren who m. 15 Feb 1845 a Geo. Thompson and Amy Warren who m. 18 Aug 1853 John Durflinger, must somehow have been related.

I do not know how or whether this fits in, but a Margaret Post, wife of John J. Post, died in Emmet on 22 July 1840, aged 48 y, 5m, 10d (thus born 1792). A Jacob Nicholas Post, born 1809 in Ross Co. OH also came to the county. Some Posts did not leave Ohio.
As we progress, you will note how many Posts married or lived with our various family members, Averills and Claytons included.

---

*Emmet Township Pioneers, prev. cited, page 269

Though the following episode applies to Norman and Henry Averill, Valentine and William Willis Clayton Jr., all privates; a Vest cousin who was a lieutenant, and numerous others, it will be related here because Levi Warren was Lieutenant Colonel, second in charge of many hundreds of men sufficiently alarmed to organize themselves into a militia, leaving their wives and children at home under a small guard. Their families were frightened of being attacked while their menfolk were gone, and mightily relieved when they came home without incident.

When I first read about it, my first thought was, "Here we go again!" I grew up in Caldwell County, Missouri. Our farm acreage once included the site of a since-vanished Mormon village of Salem. Now, there are at least two sides of every conflict and, living in that county, we heard a great many versions from both sides, about "battles" that took place there. Briefly, the Mormons were driven out of Kirtland, Ohio and came to Missouri about 1830 or so. Though their religion was different, they were zealots much like the Puritans two centuries before, intolerant of dissent. They did not at that time respect the rights of others any more than Puritans did, and similarly tried to exile non-believers from their areas of settlement. In fact, Caldwell Co. was chosen precisely because it was prairie land where, like Sugar Creek in Sangamon Co. IL, it was only with great difficulty that the compacted deep roots of grass up to ten feet high could be turned over. They didn't expect anyone else to live there, though a few did. With sweat and determination, they made the land productive; but what with proselytizing, masses of Saints began arriving, needing more space and treading on the rights of others whom they wished to dislodge, so that they could, like Gov. Winthrop, establish their own "City upon a hill," by armed force if needed.

Needless to say, Missourians already there, the majority from Kentucky, found Mormons and their religion wierd and suspect. Cattle rustlings and so on were commited by both sides as Mormons in increasing numbers tried to take over ever-expanding territory. At length feeling against the Mormons became so intense that Missouri governor Lilburn W. Boggs issued an order for their expulsion. In winter 1839, 12,000 Mormons, driven from their homes in Missouri, took refuge in Illinois, where they purchased the town of Commerce and renamed it Nauvoo, in Hancock Co. (See illustration on page 164. Nauvoo was located in the NW of the county, in the little part that projects to the Mississippi River. Carthage, the county seat, is more centrally located. You can see how close that is to our family's homes in the western part of McDonough Co.)

A charter named Joseph Smith, founder of the sect, as mayor of the town and commander-in-chief of the militia. After all they had been through, those people became very militant. The city became the Mormon capital and those people, truly believing they were God's chosen people who had been twice persecuted, were embittered and even more beligerent to outsiders, and acted just as they had in Missouri with a vengeance. Proselytizing in Europe brought large numbers to Hancock Co., over 1600 from England alone in 1842. Courts were so stacked with Mormon jurors that no one else could receive a fair trial if their property was taken. By 1844 a divine "revelation of celestial marriage" (polygamy) was received from on high by Joseph Smith.

Though the hierarchy did not officially announce the revelation for a few more years, somehow an anti-Mormon newspaper in Carthage got wind of the fact and published it. A mob then destroyed his press and all his property. As usual, he could not prevail in court, nor could anybody else whose windows were smashed or cattle stolen. The idea of polygamy was sickening to most people in McDonough Co., though a few Mormons had started moving there too--not many, but by then the handwriting was on the wall.

At last Illinois Gov. Thomas Ford was appealed to. When he attempted to negotiate, the Mormons announced that he had no authority over them. When Ford arrived in Carthage on 21 June 1844, in his own words, he "found an armed force assembled, hourly increasing in number, composed of men from Hancock, McDonough and Schuyler Counties, and immediately placed all under military command of their proper officers." McDonough Co. history goes on for several pages about the issues and the stand-off. The combined militia managed to arrest a number of leading Mormons, but all were released except Joseph Smith and Hyrum Smith, his brother, confined to jail in Carthage 27 June 1844. The Schuyler and McDonough Co. men were released from duty at 2:00 PM that day by the governor's permission, leaving the prisoners guarded by the "Carthage Grays."

Being confident that the matter would now be resolved by a properly constituted jury, the governor now took off for Springfield, the new capital of Illinois. The Carthage Grays, who had suffered from stacked juries, were less sure. On the 28th a scheme was hatched up whereby the eight guards carried guns loaded with blanks to look legitimate when a mob with mud-blanketed faces stormed the facilities. Of course when they fired there was no effect but noise. They were unaware that a friend had sneaked a six-barrel pistol in to Joseph Smith who shot when the door was battered down, wounding three assailants. Someone shot his brother Hyrum, killing him instantly. Cornered, Joseph attempted escape by jumping out a second-story window, and was stunned when he lay on the ground below and was shot. Others say he was shot in the air. Four balls went through his body. In August 1844 Brigham Young was elected to take his place.

The McDonough County men, who knew nothing of the killings,probably felt, as the governor did, that they had helped establish proper law and order, were greeted enthusiastically by their relieved families. The story went on at length. The Mormons realizing that they could no longer succeed in Illinois, still wanted pay for their homes and property left behind. The situation was stormy and chaotic, but by 1846 most had started the long trek, going through Iowa and winding up in the desert near the great Salt Lake. They made the desert bloom, but that is not part of our story. A few years later Henry JC and Huldah Ann (Warren) Averill with their children would take the Mormon Trail most of the way to Oregon.

Many hundreds of McDonough Co. men were part of the "militia." Most, like the Clayton & Averill brothers, were second-generation men.That Levi, now in his late 40's was in charge of so many men says much about the esteem others had for him.

Notes on Levi Warren's older children (Eliza's stepchildren):

1. Lyman Warren, bca 1820 in OH, was living in Hire TWP at time of 1840 census with wife and very young daughter. Others unknown. Living with his father and Eliza's family in 1850 census, called laborer, aged 29. Had his wife and child died?
2. Francis W. Warren bca 1822 OH, died 13 May 1865, aged 34y6m of wounds received at Battle of Shiloh, buried at Spring Creek Cem. He married 13 Oct 1859 Agnes Atkinson b 1833 in England, dau of Simeon Atkinson. On the way over, age 8, her mother died. Francis and Agnes had three children, Columbus b 1863 living in Camas MT Louis b 1861 and William b 1865 who lived in Shenandoah IA. Agnes Warren m.2, 16 Aug 1868 Edward Duncan. She died 1916 in Saunders Co. NW Montana, buried in Shenandoah IA.
3. Worcester Warren bca 1823 OH, was living in Preemption TWPnext door to Levi and Eliza on the 1870 census, with wife Ann and 8 children, real estate 17,000, personal property $1400, thus very well-fixed financially. Said to have been a member of the 57th IL militia in 1837. That date sounds wrong.
4. Hulda Ann Warren born 1824 in Ohio m. 10 Sep 1840, Henry James Cropsey Averill and is told about in previous pages of this book.
5. Jane Warren bca 1826 in OH, m. 15 Apr 1848, Allen Post, born ca 1821 in New York, was living between his brother John and her sister Huldah Ann Averill, and 2 doors from her father in Preemption TWP, Mercer Co. IL. They had a year-old son Charles W. Also in their home Lydia Post, age 17 b. OH, Sandford Post a carpenter age 29 b. OH, and Levi J. Post age 25, wagonmaker b. OH.
6. George Warren bca 1828 OH m. Mary Jane Yard, dau of Frances (Chorley)(Yard) Atkinson, step-sister of his brother Francis' wife. Her widowed mother married Simeon Atkinson after his first wife died. George and Mary Jane, newly married, were living with the Atkinsons in the 1850 census. They moved with a group to Putnam Co. MO. In 1887 they visited her brother, T. C. Yard in Emmet. His death date is unknown. She died Oct. 1907 in Putnam Co. MO.
7. William Warren bca 1831/2 is shown in his father's home in 1850. farmer age 18. No further information.
8. "B.B." Warren was living with parents in 1850. NFI. Is this Henry?
9. John Warren, living with parents in 1850. NFI.(B.B. b. 1833 & John bca 1836 said to have been born in Ohio but probably this was a mistake.) Perhaps his mother died when he was born.

Children of Levi and Eliza (Averill) Warren according to the 1850 and 1870 census, the two youngest with parents in 1870. No follow-up:

1. James Warren bca 1840 IL
2. Francis Warren bca 1843 in IL (same name as older son of Levi)
3. Zachariah Taylor Warren bca 1846 IL. (see photo page 158)
4. David Warren born 1849 IL
5. Martha E. Warren, born ca 1852 in Preemption TWP, Mercer Co IL. It was hard to make out her age on the film.

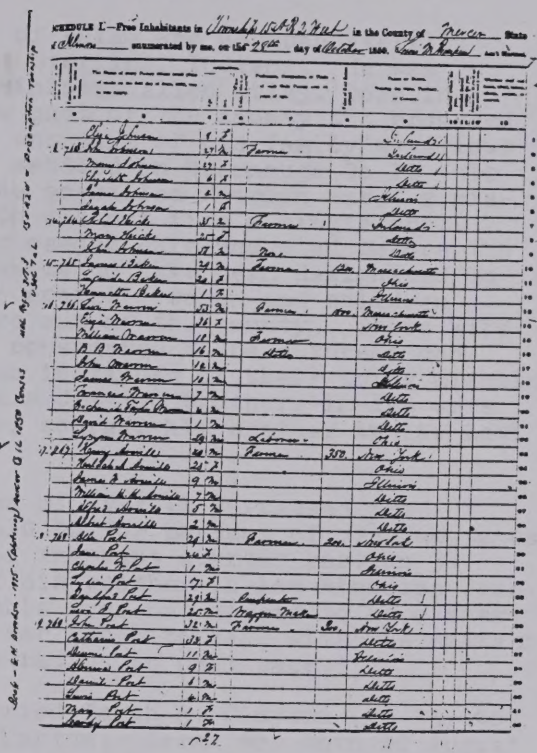
The 1870 census shows Levi age 75 and Eliza age 57 with David & Martha, real estate $4000, property $2000. They are not listed in the Mercer Co. History index. A modern detailed atlas shows the area flat as a pancake, good for growing grain. I do not know when he died. She was still living in the 1890's.

AVERILL FAMILY

1850 census, Mercer Co. IL

Eliza (Averill) Warren shown in the 1850 Census living next door to her son-in-law/ brother and step-daughter/sister-in-law Henry and Huldah Ann (Warren) Averill.

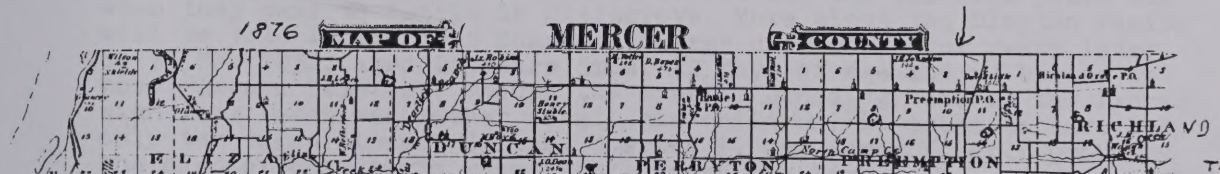
They lived in what was later named Preemption Township (upper right of map).



SCHEDULE I.—Free Inhabitants in Township 15 N R 2 West in the County of Mercer State of Illinois enumerated by me, on the 28th day of October 1850.

	Name	Age	Sex	Occupation	Real estate	Birthplace
	[illegible] Johnson	9	F			Ireland
718	[illegible] Johnson	27	M	Farmer		Ireland
	[illegible] Johnson	27	F			Ditto
	Elizabeth Johnson	6	F			Ditto
	James Johnson	4	M			Illinois
	Sarah Johnson	1	F			Ditto
[illegible]	Robert Hicks	35	M	Farmer		Ireland
	Mary Hicks	25	F			Ditto
	John Johnson	17	M	[illegible]		Ditto
[illegible]	James Baker	24	M	Farmer	[illegible]	Massachusetts
	Lucinda Baker	20	F			Ohio
	Henrietta Baker	1	F			Illinois
746	Levi Warren	53	M	Farmer	800	Massachusetts
	Eliza Warren	36	F			New York
	William Warren	18	M	Farmer		Ohio
	B B Warren	16	M	Ditto		Ditto
	John Warren	12	M			Ditto
	James Warren	10	M			Illinois
	Francis Warren	7	M			Ditto
	Zachariah Taylor Warren	4	M			Ditto
	[illegible] Warren	1	M			Ditto
	[illegible] Warren	19	M	Laborer		Ohio
747	Henry Averill	28	M	Farmer	350	New York
	Huldah A Averill	25	F			Ohio
	James F Averill	9	M			Illinois
	William H. H. Averill	7	M			Ditto
	Alfred Averill	5	M			Ditto
	Albert Averill	2	M			Ditto
748	Allen Post	24	M	Farmer	200	New York
	Jane Post	[illegible]	F			Ohio
	Charles W Post	1	M			Illinois
	Lydia Post	7	F			Ohio
	[illegible] Post	21	M	Carpenter		Ditto
	[illegible] Post	25	M	Wagon Maker		Ditto
749	John Post	32	M	Farmer	[illegible]	New York
	Catharine Post	[illegible]	F			Ditto
	[illegible] Post	11	M			Illinois
	[illegible] Post	9	F			Ditto
	Daniel Post	6	M			Ditto
	Lewis Post	4	M			Ditto
	Mary Post	1	F			Ditto
	[illegible] Post	1	M			Ditto

27


1876
MAP OF MERCER COUNTY
DUNCAN
PERRYTON
PREEMPTION
Preemption P.O.
RICHLAND GROVE
T15N
ELIZA
MERCER
Aledo
Millersburg
NEW BOSTON
MILLERSBURG
GREENE
Viola
RIVOLI
T14N
KEITHSBURG
Keithsburg
New Boston
MISSISSIPPI RIVER
ABINGTON
Sun Beam
OHIO GROVE
SUEZ
Norwood
NORTH HENDERSON
T13N
Duck Creek
R.6.W.
R.5.W.
R.4.W.
R.3.W.
R.2.W.
R.1.W.

Allen Wiley Averill, youngest child of Philo and Rebecah Averill, was born 09 July 1817 at Vevay or Mt Sterling, Indiana. He was named for circuit-riding Methodist minister Allen Wiley, born in Frederick Co VA, who lived in the NW part of the county and preached frequently in Vevay. The little boy was part of his family's various removes, and was about 15 when they settled in McDonough Co IL His mother died just two weeks before the so-called "Mormon War," a misnomer because folks from McDonough Co did not fire a single shot. His seriously ill 76-year-old father needed care and died before the ensuing month was over, so Allen seems to have been designated to look after him and keep a lookout on scared women and children nearby while most of the menfolk were out of the county. There were a few Mormons living in the county, considered to be a threat considering the circumstances, though no instances of their doing mischief has been reported. Both of his future Clayton brothers-in-law were gone, and his older brothers plus, of course, his brother-in-law Levi Warren.

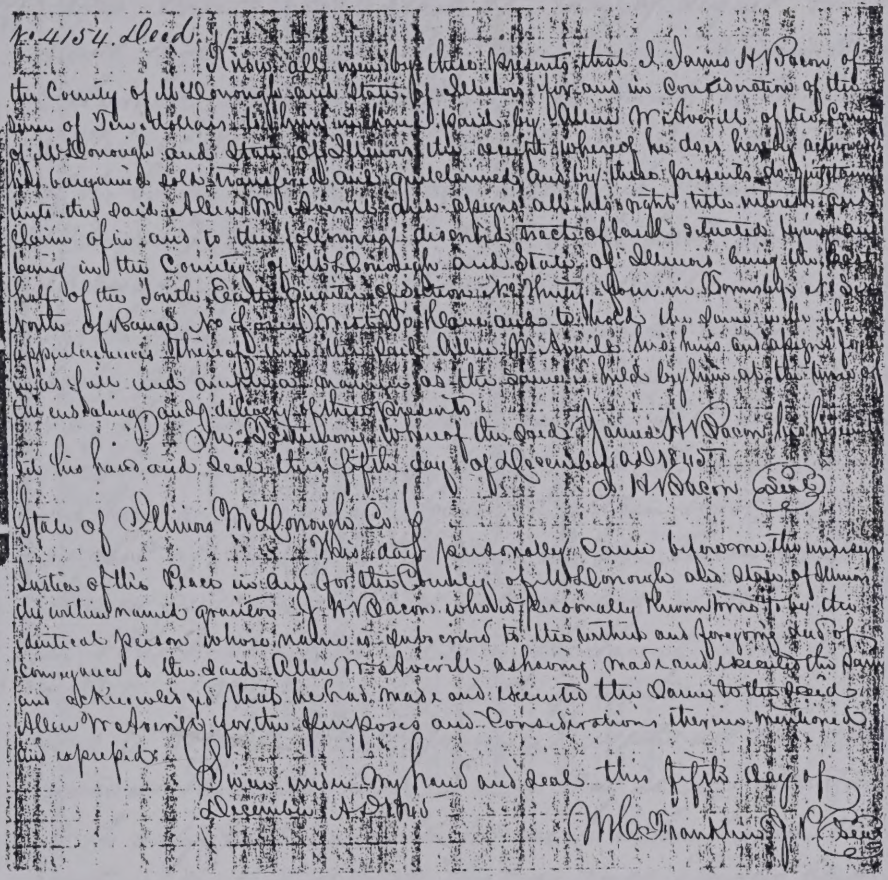
On 05 Dec 1845 (Deedbook J:347) Allen W. Averill purchased from James H. Bacon in consideration of $10.00 for payment of overdue taxes, 80 acres of land in the south half of the east quarter section 34 T6N R4W. His land adjoined that of his brother-in-law Nicholas Teas. Unless I misinterpret the record, this does not appear to be a sheriff's sale per se, but rather a way for Bacon to deal with the matter without being foreclosed. (See illustration on next page.)

On 07 Jan 1847, Allen W. Averill married Sarah E. Clayton (MB 75:640) sister of his brother Norman's wife Martha. Sarah was born 10 August 1830 near Jonesboro, Washington Co Tennessee, and was five years old when they came to settle in Hillsgrove. More about the Clayton family will be told in the next chapter. Sarah died only four years later on 33 Dec 1851, aged 21 years 5mos, 12 days of age and is buried in Mount Auburn Cemetery. Though the Averill genealogy was of the impression that Sarah was mother of all his children, it seems to have been only the three oldest, Martha, Charles P. and Sarah E. Jr.; probably she died of childbirth when little Sarah was born.

The 1850 census shows Allen and Sarah and their two oldest children, He is called a farmer, with $500.00 in real estate. Undoubtedly he was industrious in improving the property, still that seems like a good return on a $10.00 investment. Warren Post, aged 20, wagonmaker born in Ohio, was living with them, the same age as Sarah. He would continue to be a close friend.

On 20 Apr 1853, Allen W. Averill married Mary Ann Delbridge (MB__:300) ceremony by Lewis Mourning, JP. Mary Ann was born 26 June 1828 in Ohio. They had at least eight children, of whom three died very young. As you will notice on the list later, the cemetery records are evidently mixed up regarding them, so it is hard to know just when they were born and thus where to place them on the list.

Because subsequent censuses show Allen as a farmer living in Tennessee TWP, property value not stated on the printed versions, the following deed records are presented, photocopies of the first two shown.



No. 4154. Deed

Know all men by these presents that I, James H. Bacon of the County of McDonough and State of Illinois for and in consideration of the sum of Ten dollars to him in hand paid by Allen W. Averill of the County of McDonough and State of Illinois the receipt whereof he does hereby acknowledge have bargained sold transferred and quitclaimed and by these presents do quitclaim unto the said Allen W. Averill his heirs and assigns all his right title interest and claim of in and to the following described tract of land situated lying and being in the County of McDonough and State of Illinois being the East half of the South East Quarter of Section No. Thirty four in Township No. Six North of Range No. Four West [illegible] to have and to hold the same with the appurtenances thereof unto the said Allen W. Averill his heirs and assigns forever as full and ample a manner as the same is held by him at the time of the ensealing and delivery of these presents.

In Testimony whereof the said James H. Bacon has hereunto set his hand and seal this fifth day of December AD 1845.

J. H. Bacon (Seal)

State of Illinois McDonough Co.

This day personally came before me the undersigned Justice of the Peace in and for the County of McDonough and State of Illinois the within named grantor J. H. Bacon who is personally known to me to be the identical person whose name is subscribed to the within and foregoing deed of conveyance to the said Allen W. Averill as having made and executed the same and acknowledged that he had made and executed the same to the said Allen W. Averill for the purposes and considerations therein mentioned and expressed.

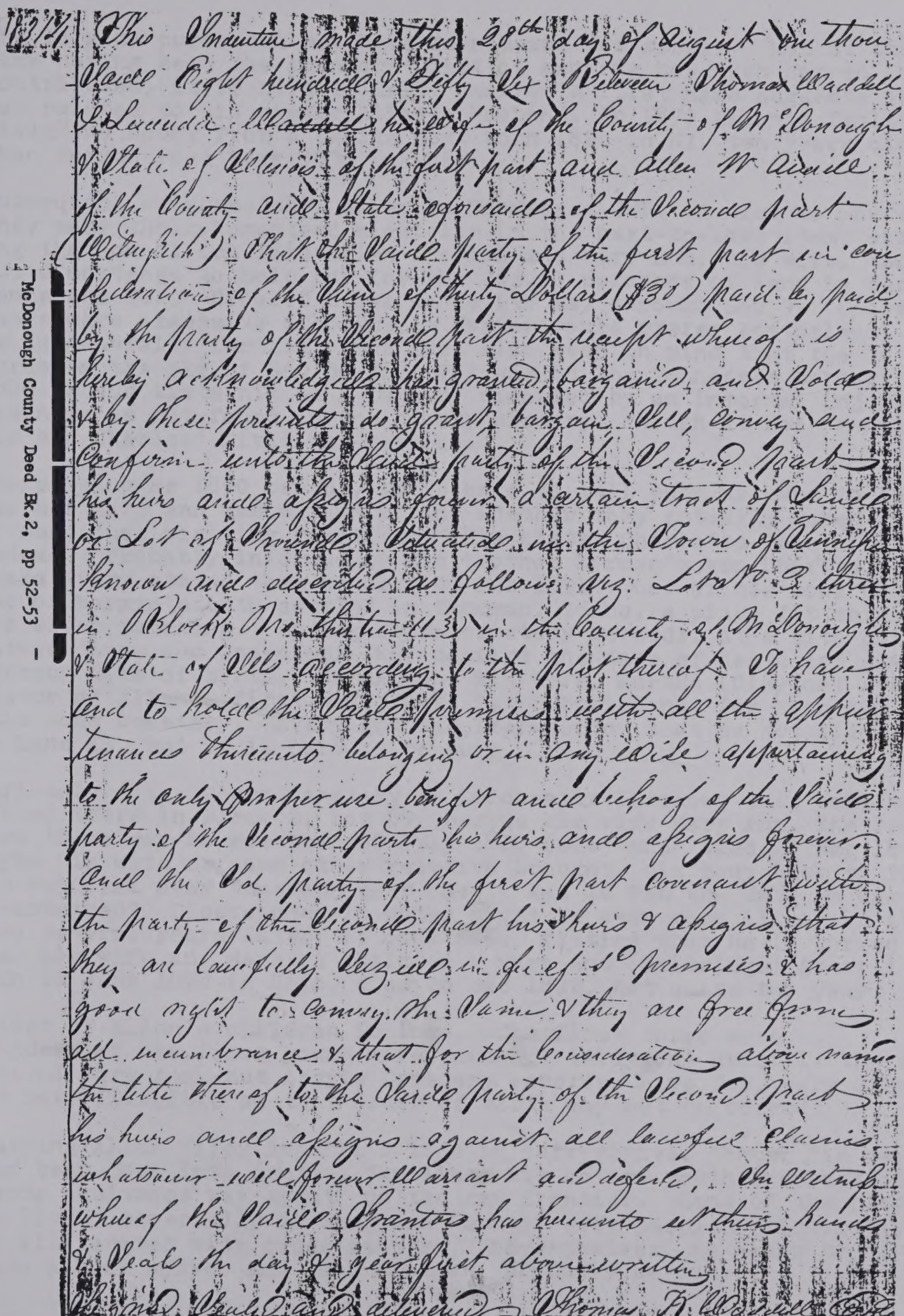
Given under my hand and seal this fifth day of December A.D. 1845

M. C. Franklin J. P. (Seal)

McDonough County Deed Bk J, p. 347

Bk/pg	date	Grantee/Grantor	Description	price
J 345	05 Dec 1845	Allen W. Averill/ James H, Bacon	$E\frac{1}{2}$ $SE\frac{1}{4}$ Sec 34 Hire TWP	$10 taxes due
2:52-3	28 Aug 1856	Allen W. Averill/ Thos. & Lucinda Waddell	Lot #3 TN Twp & appertenances	$30
5 547	12 Oct 1857	AW Averill-Warren Post/ Gene & Ellen Allen	Lot #2& added land Cockerhan's East Addition	$1000
Mtg Bk KM 600	07 Dec 1857	AW Averill-Warren Post/ David & Parlee Ann Cockerhan	Lot in Tennessee Subdivision according to plat	$1000
KM 548	01 Oct 1858	AW Averill & Mary Ann/ Stephen&Rachel Cockerhan	Lot #6 NW Sec 9, TN Cockerhan's E. Addn	$65
KM 599	01 Oct 1858	AW Averill/ Andrew& Eliza Osborn	Lot #5,Block 1 TN acc. to plat	$400

McDonough County Deed Bk.2, pp 52-53 -



1324. This Indenture made this 28th day of August one thousand Eight hundred & Fifty Six Between Thomas Waddell & Lucinda ~~Waddell~~ his wife of the County of McDonough & State of Illinois of the first part and Allen W Averill of the County and State aforesaid of the Second part (Witnesseth) That the Said party of the first part in consideration of the Sum of thirty Dollars ($30) paid by said by the party of the Second part the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged has granted, bargained, and Sold & by these presents do grant, bargain, Sell, convey and Confirm unto the Said party of the Second part his heirs and aſsigns forever a certain tract of Land or Lot of Ground Situated in the Town of Tennessee known and described as follows viz. Lot No. 3 three in Block No. thirteen (13) in the County of McDonough & State of Ills according to the plot thereof To have and to hold the Said premises with all the appurtenances thereunto belonging or in any wise appertaining to the only proper use benefit and behoof of the Said party of the Second part his heirs and aſsigns forever. And the Sd party of the first part covenant with the party of the Second part his heirs & aſsigns that they are lawfully Seized in fee of sd premises & has good right to convey the Same & they are free from all incumbrance & that for the Consideration above named the title thereof to the Said party of the Second part his heirs and aſsigns against all lawfull claims whatsoever will forever Warrant and defend. In Witness whereof the Said Grantors has hereunto set their hands & Seals the day & year first above written

Signed Sealed and delivered Thomas K Waddell (Seal)
[illegible] Lucinda M Waddell (Seal)

The largest purchases may have been meant for resale. Not at this time having seen the grantors' list or knowing how much Warren Post contributed, it is hard to tell. Warren's first name suggests he was related to his sister Eliza's husband. In 1870 Allen's family lived two doors from a George Post born 1820 in NY, ten years older than Warren Post born 1830 in Ohio.

Subsequent censuses show Allen in Tennessee TWP. A clue to where they made their homestead might lie in the next-to-last item, showing that on 01 Oct 1858 Allen Averill and Mary Ann, his wife, took out a mortgage to help pay for the $65.00 purchase of land in Sec 9, Tennessee TWP. Crooked Creek wends its way through Sec 9. Unless there were excessive flooding, a farmer would prefer bottomland, for it is generally fertile. One must also keep in mind that the 80 acres in the SE¼ of Sec 34 Hire TWP was on the Tennessee border. The 1880 census lists him as a farmer, disabled by an internal injury. His name is not found in the county history, though it does mention his son Charles' Civil War service.

There being no 1890 census, it is hard to tell when he went to Kansas, whether Mary Ann was with him, and whether they actually moved there or were just visiting relatives. His sister Charlotte Teas lived in Kansas. Probably informed by his brother Norman's son Charles, Clara Avery stated that he died 04 Feb 1891. One of his sons and one of Norman's both settled in Thurman, Idaho, a place fit mainly for sheep ranching. Spring Grove cemetery records, at a site halfway between Lane and Osawatomie KS, confirm the date of death and give his correct date of birth. Norman and his wife, Martha (Clayton) Averill, sister of Allen's first wife, were later buried not far from him in this same cemetery. Avery got the impression that he actually lived in Lane KS, but it is hard to be sure.

Curiously, Mt. Auburn Cemetery in Colchester IL shows this same man buried there in Block 2, Lot 89, beside his wife Mary Ann. The records there say he was born 09 July 1818 (sic) and died 16 Feb 1891. Maybe his wife or some other relative brought his body back to IL for reburial near numerous dear ones. Was 16 Feb the date he was re-interred? Discrepancy in dates might be even more likely if it were several years later; it does seem fitting that he is buried near his wife and several children. Mary Ann (Delbridge) Averill born 26 June 1828 in Ohio, died 26 Dec 1892, not quite two years later.

A list of Allen's children follows. The first three were children of his first young wife, Sarah E. (Clayton) Averill, the rest were of Mary Ann, but Argyle Cemetery records, Hire TWP, were older and more illegible so that order of birth may not be correct.

Putting Allen Wiley Averill's life in perspective, though his parents had been born into genteel families, his entire youth and part of his young adulthood was spent on the raw frontier. Some of the places he lived, especially in Sangamon County, were peopled principally by illiterates with crude manners. Nevertheless, he seems to have been a hard worker and good manager, probably devout.

Allen Wiley Averill's Children:

1. Charles Pinkney Averill born 1847. enlisted in the Civil War as a volunteer, 64th IL Regt. Co. A (same outfit as his cousin Francis Clayton) on 17 Feb 1864 & mustered out on 11 July 1865. On 14 Nov 1878 he married Eliza J. Creasy. **Avery** said they lived in New Mexico. Perhaps they did, though both are buried in Mt. Auburn Cemetery, Colchester, block 3, lot 36, with an unnamed infant son who died there 10 Apr 1888. Charles died in 1913. Eliza, b 1858, died in 1944.
2. Martha E. Averill (named for her maternal grandmother Martha E. (Vest) Clayton) was born 1849. and married 01 Feb 1871, Frederick Ferring, death date not known. Avery said she later lived withher sister in Fontanelle, a small farming community in Adair Co. SW IA
3. Sarah E. Averill, named for her mother, was born about the time her mother died in 1851. In Colchester on 25 Dec 1872 she married John W. Ellis who died 03 Aug 1888. Later she married a Mr. Ewing. Was Sarah the sister in IA with whom Martha lived?
4. John M. Averill, born 01 Feb 1854 died 11 June 1909 at Colchester. On 01 Jan 1881 he married Annie McCann. Possible children or her death not mentioned.
5. Ira Warren Averill, born 26 Feb 1857, married 05 Sep 1876, Elizabeth Laird, who died after the birth of their only child, Arthur Allen Averill on 11 July 1878. Ira age 23 with his year-old son were living with his parents on the 1880 census, called a miner. (Coal mining was a thriving business there at the time.) Later he and the son moved to Iowa, where he was employed as a miner at Mystic, Appanoose Co IA NW of Centerville. Young Arthur married a lady named D. B. Zingenfelter. A Rathbun dam creates a lake in that vicinity.
6. Delinda J. Averill born Jul 1859 died 11 Sep 1860, bur. Argyle cemetery located by her grandparents' former farm.
7. Henry C. Averill born 03 Dec 1860 died 05 Apr 1861, " " "
8. Carie Averill b____d 02 Apr 18__) " " "
9. Clarie Averill b___d 02 Jan 1864)twins? " " "
10. Frank A. Averill, born ca 1865, was said by Avery to have lived at Mt. Vernon WA and Thurman, Idaho. Mt. Vernon is located on Puget Sound, thus part of the Pacific Tidewater region. Thurman, Idaho is no longer on the map. He was not on the 1910 Idaho census, but his cousins from Kansas, also said to be living at Thurman, were shown to be living at Mayfield, Elmore Co., SE of Boise, where most residents were engaged in a then-thriving sheep industry. He is not to be confused with Frank H. Averill from Maine, living in Latah County.
11. Burton Averill, born in Jan 1870, who was listed with his parents on the 1870 census, must have died by 1880.
12. Laura E. Averill, born 1873, was listed on the 1880 census. No further record. If her parents really lived for a while near Lane, Kansas, it is conceivable she stayed there and had a family.

This list shows rather dramatically how dangerous it was to bear children or to be a little child in the mid-1800's, particularly during the Civil War years. Perhaps War casualties of the young men was partially offset by young ladies dying in childbirth. Of all of Allen's children, it appears as though only John and maybe Charles left male Averill children who stayed in Illinois to carry on the name. All of his brothers' sons moved on.

NORMAN AND FAMILY

Norman Chancellor^{6}Averill (Philo^{5}Moses^{4}Isaac^{3}William^{2}William^{1}) was born 11 January 1815 on the outskirts of Vevay, Indiana, next-to-last child of Philo and Rebecah (Rice) Averill. His birth was in a small log home wherein his parents operated a tavern. The village was so newly settled that none of the people except, perhaps, the original Swiss had been there long enough to build substantial homes as yet. With all the comings and goings, the baby was soon used to having many people around. Vevay was in a lovely setting. Pure, sparkling water in the Ohio reflected back rows of grapevines growing in profusion along south-facing hillsides along the stream, destined to produce fine Swiss wine, some of it served to his family's patrons.

Each of the baby's siblings had been named after some particular admired person, and we may be sure he was as well, though searches have not revealed whom that was. Chancellor was not then a common American name. The only line I could identify was of ancient Norman-English descent and settled in Virginia (hence the town Chancellorsville),* though connections with our Philo seem remote. Perhaps the person our Norman was named for was a sort of hero-of-the-day, noted for a short period of time. Whatever the case, the baby's name has a certain air of elegance.

Norman's babyhood playmate was little Charles Averill, son of his adult half-brother Rowlen Green Averill; but within a year or two Rowlen died. The grieving widow took Charles home with her to New York, where it was safer. In 1817 a new baby brother was named for the local Methodist minister. Philo, impressed by the beauty of the Vevay area, had thought he might profit by being an enterprising early settler in an area with much growth potential, following the example of his grandfather, not realizing that so many people would be attracted so quickly. Within five years the family discovered to their dismay that their new area was turning dangerous because of sudden overcrowding, and decided they must move on, They were held back temporarily because of Betsy's romance with John Gilliland, prominent in local politics, who did not wish to leave. They stayed around long enough for a nice wedding in December 1819, then set off down the Ohio River.

If Rowlen's death was not by accident, perhaps it was from one of the maladies described by writers after they left. Dufour wrote, "At Vevay, where rapid influx of settlers resulted in congestion, two or three families to the house, one out of six died of bilious fevers during the summer and fall of 1820." (Poor sanitation due to overcrowding.) It was as bad or worse in nearby parts of Ohio, where the Scioto Telegraph reported, "Along the Scioto bottoms, whence deleterious exhalations rise, the angel of disease and death, ascending from his oozy bed, along the marshy margin of the bottom grounds... floats in his aerial chariot..." (Plus malaria?) A reader called Philo, in a rather sensible letter, responded that those "asotic" diseases which came from poisonous effluvia might be avoided by erecting homes at a distance above such sites.

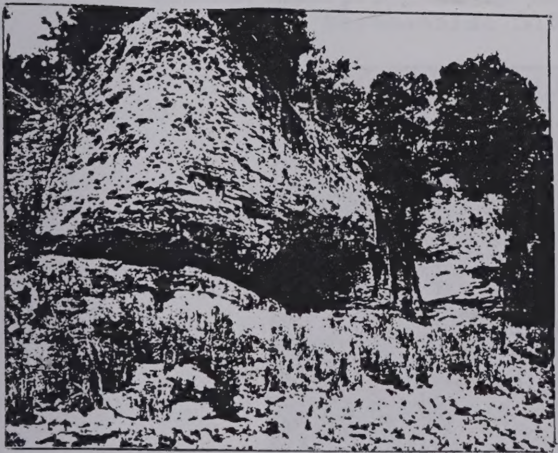
---

*William & Mary Quarterly, 2nd series 15:178 et seq (1935); also The Norman People anon. (1874-London pg 104 repr 1989 GPC) & other sources.

We may imagine that Norman, almost four, enjoyed floating down the Ohio River to their new home, and that his adventurous 10-year-old brother Henry was entranced. Illinois, with most of its meager population in the south near the Ohio or especially along the flood-plains on the eastern Mississippi bank, had hardly become a state; yet the area they selected was better ordered and healthier than chaotic Vevay. They purchased a small farm just a little north of Elizabethtown and became part of the social scene, with his father Philo a justice of the peace. The climate was balmy there, and cypress trees common. The whole area was called "Little Egypt" because the lush canebrakes reminded folks of bullrushes along the Nile. When the children were not busy with farm chores they could play in the sunshine. Education was available and affordable.

There were interesting sights to see throughout the area. For instance, with adults present for safety one could explore the notorious caves in the rocks at nearby Cave-in-Rock, where dangerous pirates not long before had preyed on river traffic and unsuspecting travelers. If one looks for them, very old books can yet be found that describe the many encounters. There is not room to tell about them here (and the stories are too gruesome) but some of them regard the insane outlaw brothers, Big and Little Harpe, who plundered and killed for the pure joy of it. They also made many raids into Kentucky, where they eluded authorities for years before finally coming to a bad end. The Averill children heard all the stories.

Here is a small sample:



Courtesy of the Illinois Department of Conservation

Cave-in-Rock on the Ohio River

--continued--

horse was frightened and at the same time forced to run toward the edge of the cliff, and before long the blindfolded animal with the naked man tied on its back ran off the bluff and fell a distance of more than one hundred feet to the rough and rocky shore below. Then the Harpes pointed to the mangled remains of man and horse as evidence of another triumph over law and order. . . .

It is probable that their hasty departure took place some time in May, 1799. . . . A few days later—July 22, 1799—they murdered a young son of Chesley Coffey, on Black Oak Ridge, about eight miles northwest of Knoxville. One version has it that the boy was hunting strayed cows and while in the woods was slain by the Harpes, who took his gun and the shoes he wore, and left his body lying under a tree. Another account is that "Young Coffey was riding along the road one evening to get a fiddle. These terrible men smeared a tree with his brains, making out that his horse had run against the tree." *

---

*The Prairie State - A Documentary History of Illinois, edited by Robt. P. Sutton (1976) This is from Vol I pg 107 segment by Otto A, Rothert.

AVERILL FAMILY

Our Hardin County map on page 134 shows a McFarlan Township close to where our family lived, though when they lived there all of the area may have been part of Monroe TWP. According to local histories, the first settler in the whole region was James McFarlan, Sr., "who had a contract with the United States to furnish beef for the garrison at Fort Massac. He settled at the present site of Elizabethtown in 1808, where the trail crossed from Nashville Tennessee, to the salt works at Equality. Here McFarlan ran a ferry across the Ohio for twenty years."

Old Fort Massac, on the north shore a little NW of where Paducah KY is now, was vitally important post in the old Northwest Territory. The salt works at Equality, some miles almost due north of Elizabethtown, on the Saline River, had long been vital in providing about the only method then known of preserving meat, or people would not have come there all the way from Nashville. In an early day there were also lead and zinc mines at nearby Rosiclare, though the technology used in smelting ore was not very good. Other early settlers whom the Averills may have met were James King, a cabinetmaker, Mr. Elwell, a teacher, and several ministers, as well as a William McFarland related to James. All this shows that the quality of life was far from primitive when Norman's family was there. And they probably knew James McFarlan pretty well, for he continued to run the ferry across the Ohio River the whole time they were there. *

The 1820's were busy years of riverboat travel on the Ohio and Mississippi. Towns like Elizabethtown, Rosiclare, Cave-in-Rock and Shawneetown profited by selling food and fuel to the crews, in turn purchasing merchandise not available locally.

MAIN STREET LOOKING TOWARD THE OHIO RIVER, ELIZABETHTOWN

Picture of Elizabethtown & mention of McFarlan taken from History of Southern Illinois pg 479

* Re McFarlan see pg 139 ¶6 line 5

Life was so pleasant the family stayed there nearly seven years, while the children grew. But Philo had, after all, left New England to seek fortune. He eventually grew bored and cast his eyes elsewhere, there being little locally. Roads had long crossed the area leading from Shawneetown to the first capitol at Kaskaskia. Later the state legislature, to attract more settlers, established a new one in the wilderness at Vandalia. Some people went to live there, but the site was not especially popular. Then he heard about a new wilderness area quite a bit further north, said to have much potential, and decided to try it.

It is an irony of fate that Vevay survived its problems in due time. Even Mt. Sterling, started by Philo himself, did all right. whereas the Mississippi flooded so often it eventually ate up Kaskaskia. The Ohio River towns like Elizabethtown, Rosiclare, Cave-in-Rock and Shawneetown, which did so well when most freight was carried by boats on the river, began to shrink when railroads eventually took over. Elizabethtown and her neighbors are now mere shells surrounded by the Shawnee National Forest. It was a good place of refuge when Illinois was yet unexplored and unsurveyed, but now it was time for the family to move on.

This was the first long trip by ox-cart forNorman. At age 11 he was considered old enough to do some of the work. like herding animals and the like. The family had nice horses, even in Indiana, being so close to Kentucky where breeding them was a thriving industry, but oxen, though slow, were better for pulling heavy loads for long distances. There were few if any bridges in Illinois that early so the journey had to be made in nippy weather when water levels were low so that creeks could be forded more easily. Dry or frozen ground prevented being mired in mud. Ferries like that of the Pulliams across the Kaskaskia were godsends but expensive. Having been in a mild climate all those years, family members found themselves shivvering until they got used to chilly breezes. They followed the old Kickapoo trail, now widened from constant use, up to Drennan's Prairie. (See page 147)

His father Philo had to pay a good price for the farm in what was considered to be a good location. Their new neighbors had started squatting there in 1818. Surveyors came by in 1821, and a land office not far away in 1824. By now (1826) the very best land had been snapped up. They found their new neighbors to be a bit clannish, mostly southerners, many of them illiterate and prejudiced against Yankees. Still, the family tried to socialize with them. One of the most colorful, Martin Pulliam, son of the man who built the first sugar camp there in 1817/8, loved to talk. Averill children listened to some of his stories intently, and so did their parents.

Martin said he grew up at Wood River a little above Cahokia on the American Bottom. Not far away was a ridge he and his friends sometimes climbed to enjoy a nice view of the confluence of the Missouri

River on the other side. It did not matter to the neighbors if the Mississippi overflowed because they did not grow many crops, depending more on goodsized gardens. They raised hogs and cattle who fed on the mast in the woods. In summertime cattle were herded a short distance so they could forage on grass and fatten up. The men went on extended hunting trips for fresh meat and pelts.

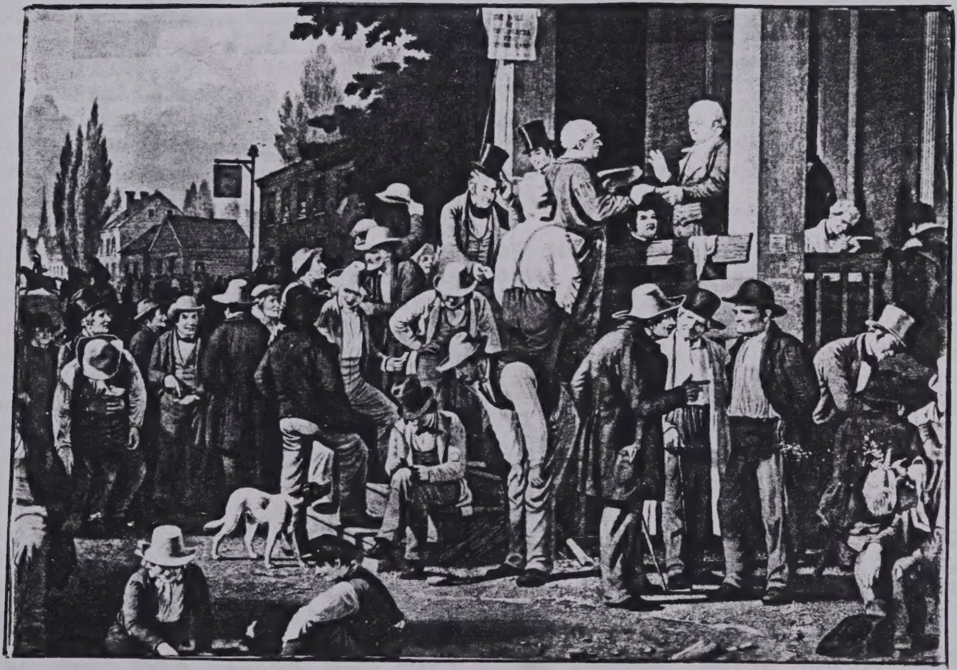
The problem was that the Kickapoo wanted the same land the settlers squatted on, so that there were frequent skirmishes between the races. It seems that even before the settlers came right after the Revolutionary War, different tribes had fought each other for this strategic fertile ground leading to the interior. (Neither race then realized it, but that had been going on in the same area since at least 700 AD, as archeological digs slightly downriver at old Cahokia have since shown, and a particular tribe seems to have had an a rather advanced civilization before Columbus discovered America.) Really bitter violence broke out after the Kickapo joined the British cause during the War of 1812 and went on the warpath, commiting many atrocities. Martin was only seven when his playmates, the neighbor Reason children and their mother, were tomahawked and scalped. Martin said that even after he was grown, he sometimes had nightmares about the screaming babies who were tossed into the huge boiling kettles as their mothers made soap over bonfires in their own back yards. Later, as an old man, he had all his teeth, which he attributed to clean living.

Pulliam sounds like a sort of lovable though somewhat eccentric character but his descriptions of the lifestyles of the cattle drovers on the American Bottom sound for all the world like earlier Celtic tribes in Wales or clans in Scotland in the 1600's or before, whose livelihood depended on migrating herds of cattle--or even the backwoods of America where some of their descendants wound up by the time of the American Revolution--like at the famous Battle of Cowpens South Carolina. The majority of the early settlers who lived near the Averills shared that same culture, and it clashed greatly with the ways of thinking of a hardworking, idealistic New Englander like Philo, who valued literacy for his children and an enterprising spirit. His neighbors had an innate distrust of northern ways, though they may have liked him personally. Being a Methodist helped his cause.

In 1826 when the Averills first arrived in the Sangamo country, a few remnant Kickapoo who did not choose to accompany the rest of the tribe to the Osage River in southern MO, maintained a small village north of the Sangamon River, much addicted to alcohol which they hoped to obtain from the whites. Occasionally they came in very small groups to deal with or beg from the whites, who kept a close eye on them because of their unpredictably. The group was too small to attack in force, but they were adept at theft. The sight of them and Pulliam's stories reminded Philo of Tecumseh's followers and their abandoned camp back at Mt. Sterling. He told the children about that. How do you think Norman and his brothers and sisters felt about Indians? Did they consider them noble savages? It would be almost another century before any of their family understood that concept.

Boys, especially those who learned a New England work ethic from their parents, worked hard, but they had much more freedom than their sisters. At age 11 or 12, once he knew the way, a boy was considered old enough to go to a mill to have the family's grain ground into flour or meal as the case might be. Even though it was hard to turn over the prairie sod with its deep-tangled roots, A modest beginning in young Norman's neighborhood is evidenced by Robert Crow's mill (see page 153) south of Drennan's Prairie, though it probably was much enlarged by the time the photo was taken. Mills were very busy places. Clients awaiting their turns could take advantage of a skinny-dip in the millpond during warm weather.

Boys usually got to accompany their fathers to the annual August elections, for crops usually did not need tending at that particular time of the year. The atmosphere was festive, a time when isolated farmers could relax and enjoy mingling with crowds of acquaintances, Even back when George Washington ran for the Virginia House of Burgesses, he put out a big spread of food and assorted alcoholic drinks. In the 1830's, free drinks resulted in many votes. Donors could not easily be fooled about whether recipients voted for him, either.



Above is a copy of the famous painting, "County Election" (1851) by noted artist George Caleb Bingham (1811-1879) in frontier Missouri 25 years later, but the procedure was the same.
--From The Register of the Kentucky Historical Society cover, Vol 72#1, Jan 1974.

there were separate lines for each office to be filled - one line for sheriff, another each for county surveyor, assessor, etc., with about three hopefuls for each. Lines formed on the left, as shown in our picture. When Norman's father Philo got to the front of the line for sheriff, for instance, he would then announce his name and his chosen candidate. The clerk would then call out, loudly and clearly, "Philo Averill (votes for) John Doe." so that the recorder could hear well and write it down. Philo would then go to the back of another long line, ad infinitim, until he had voted for all the openings to be filled.

Having served well as coroner back in Indiana, Philo at age 62 ran for that office in 1830. Though he won a respectable number of votes, he came in third. One reason mightbe that most candidates were more youthful, thus considered more physically fit for the rigors of the job which involved traveling throughout a then rather vast area to view the corpses; but the most important was probably that as an "Eastern man" he was not part of the Kentucky-bred in-crowd with inter-related family connections.

With the method of voting just described, the process took all day, which was just as well for the courthouse at Springfield was about eight miles away, thus necessitating a long ride through the prairie with its fierce, huge, horseflies & other critters. If the wounds became infected they could cause blindness or death to man or beast. The insects were less active at night. Generally the men and boys of several families rode together for companionship and safety. With so many boys in the group, they had a gay old time swapping stories and playing games. Voting in early august was one of the most enjoyable times of the year, looked forward to with great anticipation in spite of the long lines.

Norman was a young teenager most of the time they lived in Sangamon County. As far as is known, he never sought public office anywhere, but after they left, older brother Henry JC served many years as county Surveyor. A history of the settlement of Illinois reports that some of the earliest of the miners at Galena at the far northwest tip of the state came there as a group from Sangamon County. How they got there is difficult to determine, for there were no roads going there that early. In fact, the whole of Sangamon County was almost entirely without ferries, bridges, or roads most of the time the family was there. Perhaps they went by water, except that the report says they lived in their wagons and cooked their own food, with their oxen browsing at night. We know Henry was there in 1830, when he was 21, but the miners' journals are very incomplete; perhaps he went even earlier. It would be interesting to known more details, especially about travel.*

This same book claims that many early people after the war (of 1812?) moved west, some as far as Missouri or Michigan but mostly to Indiana

---

*Settlement of Illinois 1778-1830 by Arthur C. Bogess (1970) pages 158, 172.

or Ohio. "Emigration from New England resulted largely from financial and industrial disorganization caused by the close of the War, and a year of such continued cold weather as to produce famine." Many Vermonters, very close to Saratoga Co. NY, were part of a mass migration that stopped short of Illinois. It is a little late to be mentioning the phenomenon, but perhaps it was one of the reasons Norman's parents moved to Indiana.*

The book also states, "A pursuit that was once common and profitable is described by a lawyer who traveled the first Illinois circuit, consisting of the counties of Greene, Sangamon, Peoria, Fulton, Schuyler, Adams, Pike and Calhoun, in 1827 as follows: 'On this circuit we found but little business in any of the counties--parties, jurymen and witnesses were reported in all the counties after Peoria, as being absent bee and deer hunting--a business that was then profitable, as well as necessary to the sustenance of families during the winter.'"**

This brings to mind the early law career of Abraham Lincoln, conducted in a similar manner following the circuits to pick up business in the various courthouses. As a youth he drove his father's oxcart from Indiana in Spring 1830, settling north of the Sangamon River, though his law career seems to have commenced about the time the state capital was relocated from Vandalia to Springfield in 1837. By then the Averill family had moved on. Like Lincoln, Norman's brother Henry had served in the Black Hawk War in 1832. While Henry was gone, realizing that now land up in the Military Tract NE of the Illinois River would be safe from Indian attack, their father purchased wilderness land in McDonough County. Philo was then 64-years-old--at an age when modern men are counting the days to retirement. Perhaps, knowing that soldiers who had been granted land for their War of 1812 service would be coming from many states, not just from the south, he thought the change would be good for his children. Probably he was right, though later some northerners did live in the Springfield area.

Though our family had not arrived there quite yet, we must not neglect McDonough County's role in the Big Snow. Being a little farther north than Sangamon County, it appears it was even colder and the snow even deeper. The same source says, "A man in Macomb related that it took his wife about three hours to shovel the snow from their cabin while he, with a good-sized family, did not yet have his corn gathered, so he went out and, wherever he could spy a stalk of corn above the snow, pulled off the ears, gathering enough forthe day. There were no mills, so each family pounded its own corn with mortar and pestle. A few had graters which worked better. A fire was built up early each morning to boil a pot of water into which corn was thrown to boil it until it softened. It was then taken out to make good wholesome bread. That, plus what game they could get, sustained them through the winter.. Before the snow fell the deer were fat as could be, but before it passed away they were so poor they were not fit to eat. Wild turkeys fell from the limbs of trees."

---

*ibid 120, **ibid 178

Diets like that poor family had to subsist on, of cornmeal and little else, frequently led to Pellagra, a painful, debilitating disease that must have been common during the ensuing so-called spring of 1831. It was so cold that all those snow piles were late in melting; then summer was so cool and damp that seeds rotted in the fields instead of sprouting, with none left for next year's planting. Famine followed. Some families went back south. Others like, for instance, Rev. Samuel Bogart, had the wherewithal to buy from elsewhere to tide his family over.

In spring 1832, when soldiers from Sangamon and other mounted regiments came through, some impoverished settlers watched enviously while the soldiers' horses were fed with the precious grain that had been brought along. When the coast was clear they rushed in to scavenge kernels that had been dropped, to use as seed corn. (Perhaps young Henry Averill's steed had spilled some of the contents of its feedbag in just such a manner??) Weather was normal that year. Norman was a serious-minded, hard-working youth of seventeen when our family moved there. He set about doing even more than his share of improving the family homestead. His father was still muscular from a lifetime of hard work, but not nearly so strong as a teenager. Young Allen was fourteen and a half, Henry twentythree.

Many of our ancestors believed that land "not fit to grow trees" was infertile. The land in that county was essentially prairie, though there were groves in certain places, especially near creeks. Land there sold first. The Averills settled close to the Argyle Ford. To prove how well watered that was, consider that it has long since been dammed to form Argyle Lake. Their farm bordered on Hillsgrove (later called Tennessee) through which Crooked Creek (later called Lamoine) flowed and sometimes overflowed. Norman, a devout young man, soon made fast friends with the folks of that community. The county history says,

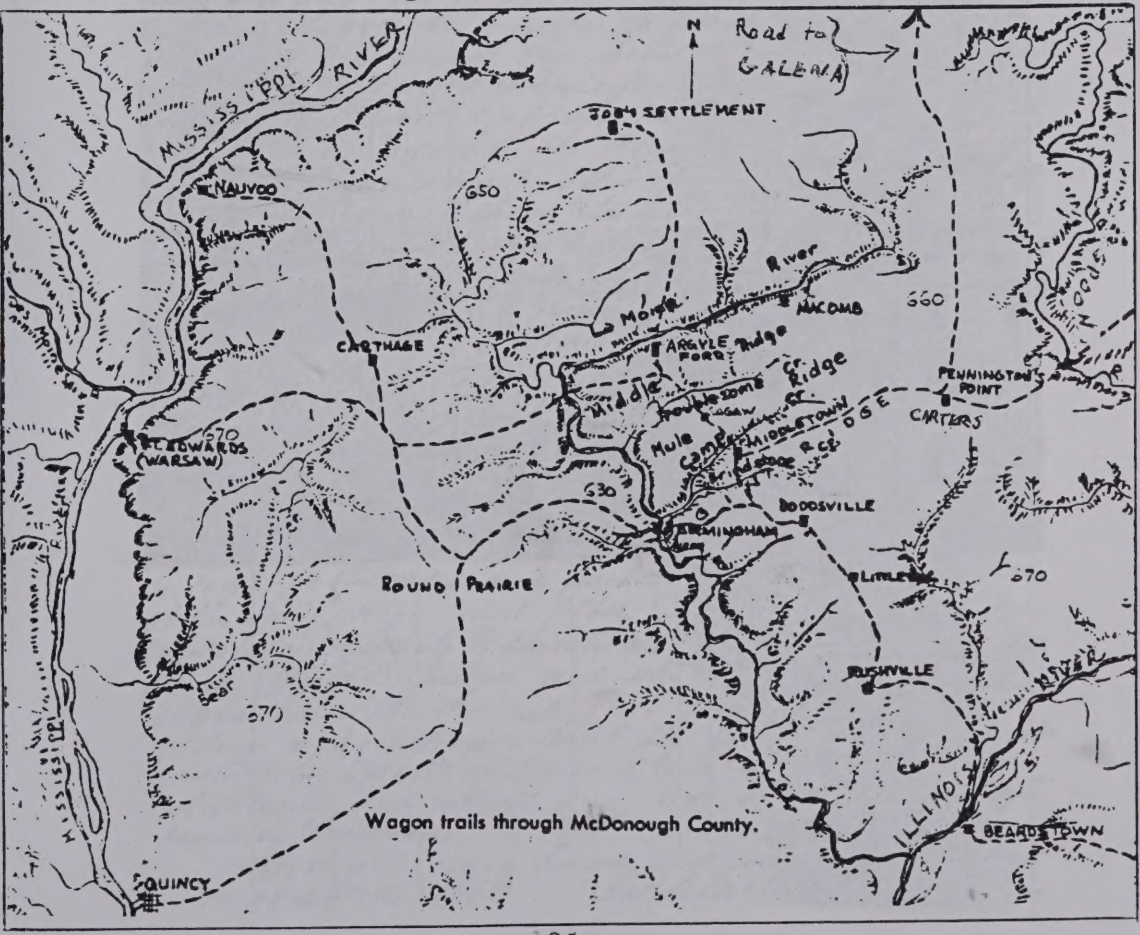
> "Hillsgrove is frequently called the old Methodist stamping ground as here this body of people early secured a foothold and many adherents. Most of the old pioneer preachers of this denomination held forth in the cabins of the early settlers. Thomas Fulkerson has yet (in 1878) a cabin standing on his place where Peter Cartwright, the old Methodist apostle, preached to the hardy men and women of the neighborhood the unsearchable riches of Christ. The first sermon was preached by Rev. Valentine Wilson, a Methodist preacher in 1833, at the house of James Fulkerson."
> (The Fulkersons being so devout, one may assume they held prayer vigils even before that.) (Cartwright's picture is on page 152.)

Norman Chancellor Averill joined the Methodist Episcopal Church here in 1834, age 19 years old. One assumes he was baptized at Fulkerson's home ora nearby creek, for a church building was not erected until a great many years later. I would love to know the exact date and place, plus the name of the minister who performed the ceremony. Was it Wilson or a circuit-riding minister, or even the apostle Peter Cartwright, which would have been special?

AVERILL FAMILY

We get the year from Clara Avery who, due to the scope of her work, did not have space to report every small detail, though it would be nice to know whether the event was before or after Norman's first purchase of land. We may never know how he managed to acquire a nice little nest egg at such a young age. It might be that he did so much more than his share in setting up the family homestead that his parents paid him, or that he hired out to other men in Sangamon or McDonough County; but we do know that he had accumulated $80.00 by the time he was nineteen, otherwise the following information would have been recorded in a mortgage book rather than a deed book.

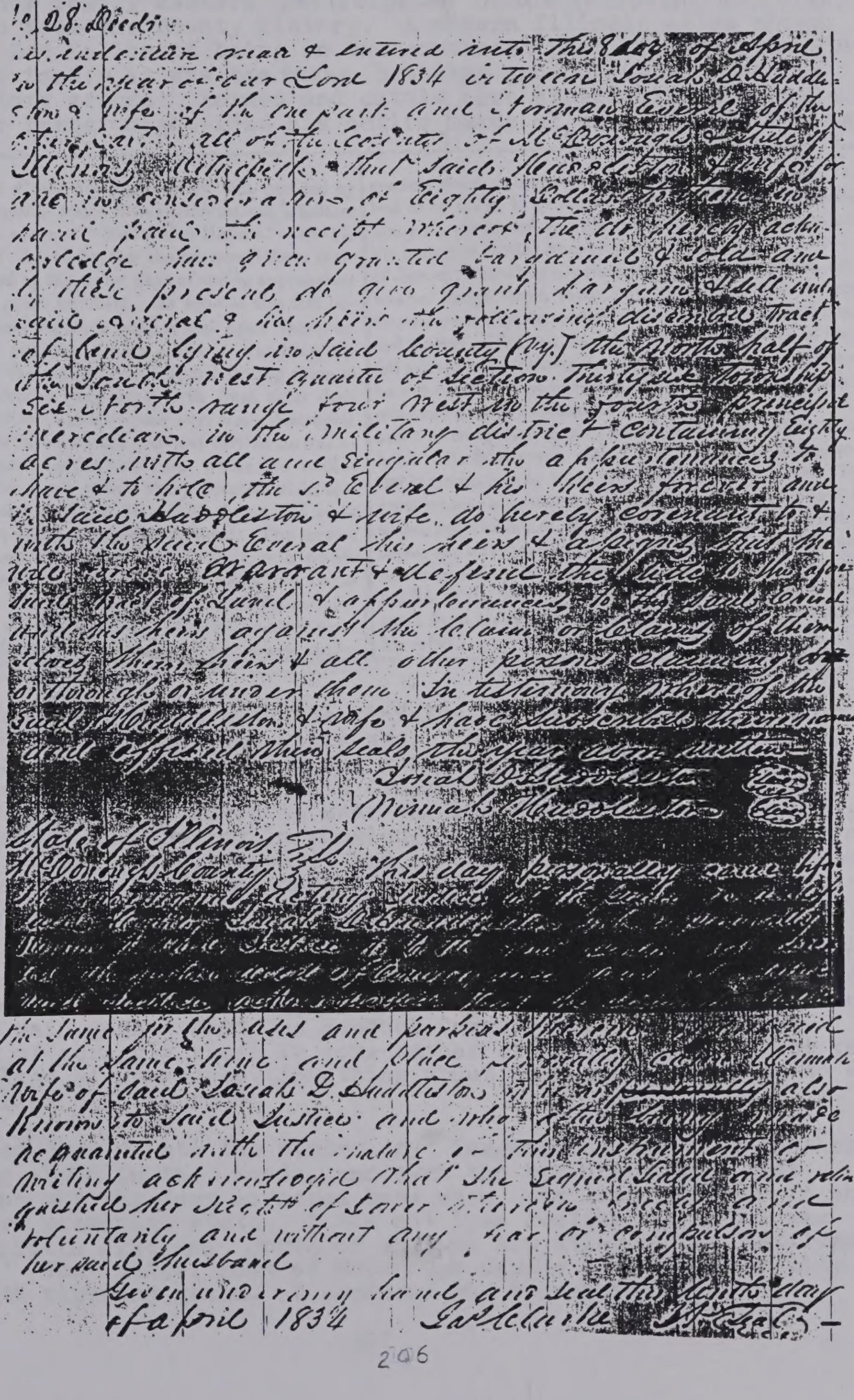
McDonough Co. IL Deed Book A, pages 216-7, shows that on 08 Apr 1834, Josiah Huddleston and wife sold to Norman "Everel" for $80.00, the No ½ of the SW¼ Sec 36, TWP 6, Range 4W in the Military District, 80 acres of land and appertenances. This land bordered that of his parents, on the north side. Argyle Ford of LaMoine River (Crooked Creek) is the approximate location of their farmland. Going by the sketch, the Averill family must have moved there from Sangamon Co. via the road that crossed the Illinois River at Beardstown. It was the only road through the county for many years. It continued north toward Galena at Pennington's Point.


N
Road to GALENA
MISSISSIPPI RIVER
JOB'S SETTLEMENT
NAUVOO
650
River
Moine
MACOMB
660
CARTHAGE
ARGYLE FORD
Ridge
Middle
Troublesome Cr.
Ridge
PENNINGTON'S POINT
CARTERS
MIDDLETOWN
Mule
670
FT. EDWARDS (WARSAW)
630
BIRMINGHAM
DOODSVILLE
ROUND PRAIRIE
LITTLETON
670
RUSHVILLE
Bear
670
MISSISSIPPI
ILLINOIS RIVER
BEARDSTOWN
QUINCY

Wagon trails through McDonough County.

AVERILL FAMILY

McDonough Co. IL DEED BOOK A:216-7 Land Sale
Josiah & Minnah Huddleston to Norman Averill ("Everal") 80 acres of land for $80. 14 April 1834.



No 28 Deed

This indenture made & entered into this 8 day of April in the year of our Lord 1834 between Josiah D. Huddleston & wife of the one part and Norman Everal of the other part all of the County of McDonough & State of Illinois Witnesseth that said Huddleston & wife for and in consideration of Eighty Dollars to them in hand paid the receipt whereof they do hereby acknowledge have given granted bargained & sold and by these presents do give grant bargain & sell unto said Everal & his heirs the following described tract of land lying in said County (viz.) the North half of the South West quarter of Section Thirty six Township Six North range four West in the fourth principal meridian in the military district containing Eighty acres with all and singular the appurtenances to have & to hold the sd Everal & his heirs forever and the said Huddleston & wife do hereby covenant to & with the said Everal his heirs & assigns that they will forever warrant & defend the title to the aforesaid tract of land & appurtenances to the said Everal and his heirs against the claim or claims of themselves their heirs & all other persons claiming by or through or under them In testimony whereof the said Huddleston & wife & have subscribed their names and affixed their seals the year above written

Josiah D. Huddleston (seal)
Minnah Huddleston (seal)

State of Illinois } ss
McDonough County } This day personally came before [illegible] Justice [illegible] Josiah D. Huddleston [illegible] personally [illegible]

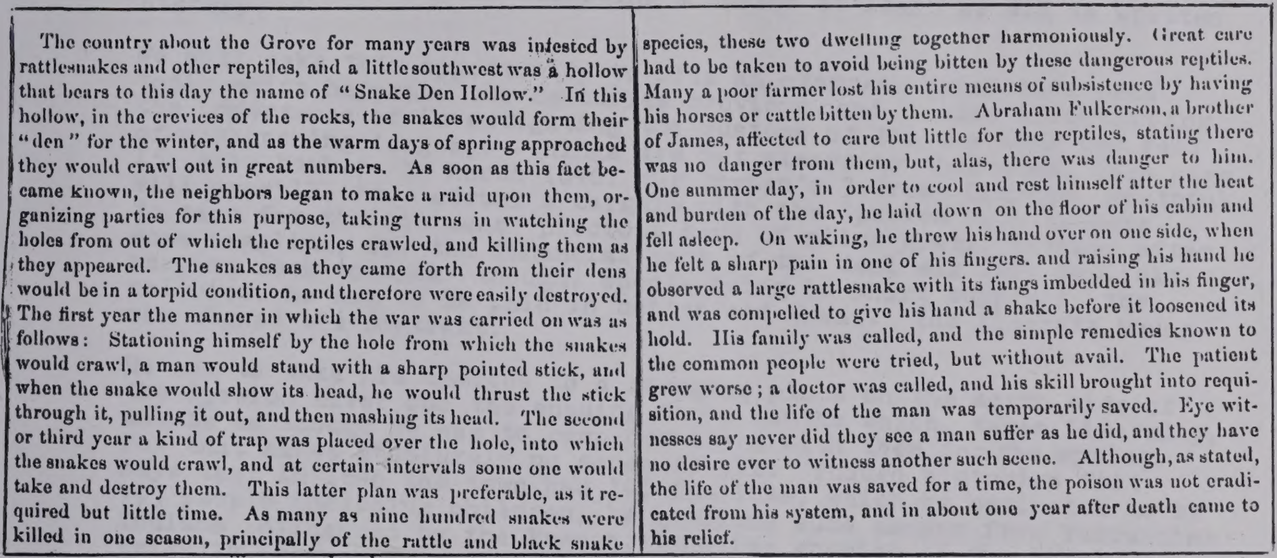
[illegible]

the same for the uses and purposes therein [illegible] and at the same time and place personally came Minnah wife of said Josiah D. Huddleston [illegible] personally also known to said Justice and who after being made acquainted with the nature of this instrument of writing acknowledged that she signed sealed and relinquished her right of dower therein freely and voluntarily and without any fear or compulsion of her said husband

Given under my hand and seal this ninth day of April 1834 [illegible] J.P. (seal)

AVERILL FAMILY

Being so involved with the Fulkersons, one wonders whether Norman or other family members participated in the following activity, copied from the county history. A modern Illinois atlas shows Snake Den Hollow as being in the northwest part of Tennessee TWP, but obviously it was the snake- breeding ground for much of the territory around. Horses and cattle were especially vulnerable. A poor farmer might lose his entire means of subsistence that way.



The country about the Grove for many years was infested by rattlesnakes and other reptiles, and a little southwest was a hollow that bears to this day the name of "Snake Den Hollow." In this hollow, in the crevices of the rocks, the snakes would form their "den" for the winter, and as the warm days of spring approached they would crawl out in great numbers. As soon as this fact became known, the neighbors began to make a raid upon them, organizing parties for this purpose, taking turns in watching the holes from out of which the reptiles crawled, and killing them as they appeared. The snakes as they came forth from their dens would be in a torpid condition, and therefore were easily destroyed. The first year the manner in which the war was carried on was as follows: Stationing himself by the hole from which the snakes would crawl, a man would stand with a sharp pointed stick, and when the snake would show its head, he would thrust the stick through it, pulling it out, and then mashing its head. The second or third year a kind of trap was placed over the hole, into which the snakes would crawl, and at certain intervals some one would take and destroy them. This latter plan was preferable, as it required but little time. As many as nine hundred snakes were killed in one season, principally of the rattle and black snake species, these two dwelling together harmoniously. Great care had to be taken to avoid being bitten by these dangerous reptiles. Many a poor farmer lost his entire means of subsistence by having his horses or cattle bitten by them. Abraham Fulkerson, a brother of James, affected to care but little for the reptiles, stating there was no danger from them, but, alas, there was danger to him. One summer day, in order to cool and rest himself after the heat and burden of the day, he laid down on the floor of his cabin and fell asleep. On waking, he threw his hand over on one side, when he felt a sharp pain in one of his fingers, and raising his hand he observed a large rattlesnake with its fangs imbedded in his finger, and was compelled to give his hand a shake before it loosened its hold. His family was called, and the simple remedies known to the common people were tried, but without avail. The patient grew worse; a doctor was called, and his skill brought into requisition, and the life of the man was temporarily saved. Eye witnesses say never did they see a man suffer as he did, and they have no desire ever to witness another such scene. Although, as stated, the life of the man was saved for a time, the poison was not eradicated from his system, and in about one year after death came to his relief.

At the end of a visit with the kinfolks in Kingston, Missouri, on a sunny Sunday morning many years ago, I announced to Mama, Billie, and James that on the way home I was going to scout around and try to find the areas where the Averill and Clayton families had lived. They seemed enthused and asked to hear the results. I was still very green at genealogy and lacking in knowledge of how to interpret survey maps (which I didn't have, anyway) and it being a Sunday, all I got out of it was a few roadside snapshots and general impressions from the highway. But even that little helped.

Once across the Mississippi and going east on Route 136, many signs direct one to the jail at Carthage where Joseph Smith was murdered; but time was too short to go inside and look around and still accomplish my main goal. Past the Hancock County line, there was a stretch of scraggly brush in some rather broken land before one reaches the village of Tennessee. Something about that caused my mind to wander so I pulled off the road.

Gazing southward into the timber, my imagination saw wild panthers prowling about in the woods, and even the big black bear that Fulkerson and the dogs cornered back when the land had been in an even more primitive state. I did not then realize it, but I was only a little distance north of what my new atlas calls "Rattlesnake Hollow." That aside, most of McDonough County seemed rather tidy and lush with ripening grain. I wondered why Norman left.

This next incident is about yet another of those Tennessee Methodists, longtime Fulkerson family friend James Vest who lived two farms over from ours. In 1838 he took time out from his busy day to go over to the County Clerk's office in Macomb to record his cattle mark. James Vest is special to us, for he became an extended Averill family member when his niece married Norman a few years later. (He is my 3-Great Uncle.) Uncle James was following a custom at least as old as written history.

We will take this opportunity to cite an example, using this same topic which happened two centuries previous, and also illustrating the importance of investigating the customs of the day when you read of a happening long ago--things are not always as they seem. (See page 15, this book.) In March 1646, our Norman's 3-Great Grandpa, youthful Will Averill, Jr., struck a bargain with the Ipswich City fathers to care for the citizens' precious herd of milch goats, perhaps after some haggling, for the financial part of the deal was very explicit, varying week-to-week though, specie being in short supply in the colonies, he was to be paid in butter and wheat. The literate young man signed the contract.

He was to take his charges to a foraging place on the north side of the Ipswich River for the ensuing three months which, taken literally, sounds as though he was to camp out there with them for the spring. But that makes absolutely no sense at all! Though historian Felt says that in 1646 the town had 146 families, which he estimates to be 793 people including children, he mentions some danger from Tarrantine Indians influenced by the French, longtime enemies of the local friendly Aggawamese and the English colonies. They resided in adjacent territory "down east." But worst of all was an overabundance of wild animals, particularly ravenous wolves, constantly on the prowl for livestock or unattended small children, then and for many decades later. Though doubtlessly accompanied by several large mastiffs, Will couldn't stay awake night and day. Part of the butter he was paid with may have used goats' milk, but in those days only women did milking. Some kids would have been born in spring. The key to all this is how farming was then being done in old England, a holdover from Medieval times.

Felt does give us a clue, though. He does not mention goats or goat herds in his book, but he says "As long as wolves and other beasts of prey infested the woods, the inhabitants had certain persons to take constant care of their cattle and sheep while (they themselves were) out at pasture." He mentions a later man, Haniel Bosworth, who was to keep the herd of cows on the north side of the river. "He is to go out with them half an hour after sunrise and bring them home a little after sunset." Apparently he picked them up at the meetinghouse green.* Haniel was also paid in butter and grain. You may be positive that each animal had a mark similar to those of Uncle James and his neighbors.

---

*History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, Massachusetts, page 44 by Joseph B. Felt (1834)

Whether in Ipswich or in England,,farmers lived in little villages built around churches, manors, and village greens. Their houselots contained little gardens and outbuildings to shelter livestock, henhouses, etc. as needed. Each morning they left to go plow their own long, scattered strips in fields held in common. Colonists soon devised a better system, but that was much after 1646. Women and girls milked goats by dawn, before the goatherd made his rounds to gather his long string of animals, traversing through town and across a little bridge toward the pasturage. In the evening the process reversed itself, back home where the animals, their udders full, were glad to see their owners for relief.

It is good Will was literate. He probably had a long list of cattlemarks. He would have been in trouble if any had gone to the wrong family. Each registered its mark with the court. You would be amazed at number of ways those long, floppy ears could be cropped. This same system was carried down over the centuries all over America, especially useful on frontiers, or where wood was in short supply. It was cheaper to fence in cropland and gardens than to restrain cattle, which might also browse in woodlands, as Uncle James's cattle probably did. And the Averills', we suppose.

Though Uncle James and our Claytons are called Tennesseeans, Vests and Claytons and Fulkersons came before that from around Abingdon, VA, though he married Susan Simpson in Carter Co. TN. During the War, Uncle James set out for a 3-month tour of duty on 12 Oct. 1813 under Captain Jacob Hartsel's Co., part of the regiment of Col. William Lilliard, to fight Creek Indians allied with British troops, in Alabama. They marched south through mountainous Cherokee towns, and sympathized with the helpful but very impoverished Cherokees. Near the end of duty they served under General Andrew Jackson. These particular men did not much care for that haughty person whom they deemed as unreasonable and declined to re-enlist. Hartsel, a very creative speller, kept a diary in which he seldom mentioned his men by name, but he did show James Vest in an alphabetical list of his "Ridgment." *

Norman Averill's in-laws lived in east, not middle Tennessee,but a listing of cattle marks used by first-settlers on the Cumberland in 1779-80, includes:

> "There were underkeils, overkeils, crops, holes, squares, swallow forks, overbits, underbits, under slopes, smooth crops, and the half penny--known as the 'rouges' mark' because it was easily changed to an underbit or overbit. Marking was usually done by shears; an expert could fold the ear and with one clip come up with whatever was desired...neatly as a woman cutting quilt pieces, but, lacking shears, a man could use his pocketknife." **

This was offered as but a sample, not including branding. On 23 November 1838, James Vest "records his mark as follows: a crop off of each ear and a slit in the right." Other samples were listed too.***

---

*East Tennessee Hist. Soc Publ XI:93-112 "The J. Hartsel Memora: The Journal of a TN Captain in the War of 1812. Ed. Mary Hardin McCown

**Flowering of the Cumberland, Harriette Simpson Arnow,(1963) pg 227

***History of McDonough Co IL, S. J. Clarke (1878) pp 244-5